



CASTLE OF BLACK IRON

BOOK 07

Drunk Tiger

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Castle of Black Iron

(黑铁之堡)

by

Drunken Tiger

(醉虎)

Synopsis

After the Catastrophe, every rule in the world was rewritten.

In the Age of Black Iron, steel, iron, steam engines and fighting force became the crux in which human beings depended on to survive.

A commoner boy by the name Zhang Tie was selected by the gods of fortune and was gifted a small tree which could constantly produce various marvelous fruits. At the same time, Zhang Tie was thrown into the flames of war, a three-hundred-year war between the humans and monsters on the vacant continent. Using crystals to tap into the potentials of the human body, one must cultivate to become stronger.

The thrilling legends of mysterious clans, secrets of Oriental fantasies, numerous treasures and legacies in the underground world — All in the Castle of Black Iron!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by the WQL @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation edits by DarkGem / Geoffrey @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 601: Knights' World

"What's that?" Zhang Tie asked Ford.

"Based on our intelligence and the analysis of demons' biologists, it might be an evolutionary form of the parent puppet worm!" Ford told Zhang Tie with a solemn look.

"This is a parent puppet worm?" After hearing this answer, Zhang Tie, who had learned parent puppet worm before became so amazed that his mouth could even hold some chicken eggs. In Zhang Tie's imagination, although the parent puppet worm was very terrifying, it was as weak as a grub. However, this one was like a hill. What a sharp difference!

"Are you kidding me? This object is so huge, you tell me it's a parent puppet worm?" Zhang Tie couldn't even believe that the object was a living being, not to mention a parent puppet worm.

"In order to obtain this intelligence, we've already sacrificed a lot of people; however, our intelligence is incomplete. What we can confirm is that this object could turn alive humans into demonized puppets at a very fast speed. Have you seen these dense honeycombs?"

Major General Ford pointed at those honeycombs as he explained, "We don't know what's inside them, but If the alive people entered them, they would be bound in the honeycombs and immersed in some fluid. Only after half a month, those people would turn into demonized puppets when they come out of those honeycombs."

"Half a month?" Zhang Tie drew in a mouth of breath.

"Yes, this object could turn a normal alive person into a demonized puppet in only half a month!"

"It's like demons' arsenal!"

"This metaphor is very proper. This object could produce 20-30

thousands of demonized puppets in one month."

"If this object is the parent puppet worm, all the demonized puppets that it produces will not stay far away from it. This object cannot move, right?"

"The alliance command has already inquired many experts about this question. Those experts reached a very consistent conclusion, if this object is an evolutionary form of puppet worms, the demonized puppets that it produces would be greatly different than those demonized puppets produced by common parent puppet worms. Demonized puppets of the average puppet worms would fight near their parent puppet worms; their moving distance was limited even though they could leave their parent puppet worms. Basically, demonized puppets would always follow those parent puppet worms."

"However, those demonized puppets created by that object might be able to fight alone even if they were far away from this object. They might not even rely on that object at all. We don't know about the details; but we can confirm that demons would not produce a pile of demonized puppets which could only move in a limited zone. "

Major General Ford explained.

Zhang Tie became silent for a few seconds before asking, "What does the alliance command want me to do?"

"The alliance command wants to confirm whether there are a lot of such objects in the north of Titanic Douchy and the number of demonized puppets corps that had been produced by such objects. This intelligence would pose a greater influence on the war situation across Selnes Theater of Operations." Major General Ford explained very solemnly.

"Where did you take this photo from?"

"The object in the photo comes from a city of Virginia Federation

in the north of the zone occupied by demons. That city is adjacent to the sea. We gained some incomplete intelligence nearby the sea after sacrificing a lot of people. Now, it's very hard to gain intelligence about the zone occupied by demons. We need to sacrifice a lot of scouts and intelligence agents for a small piece of intelligence."

Major General Ford then lowered his voice, "In order to gain the relevant intelligence about the north of Titanic Douchy, we've already dispatched over 30 airships there for an investigation. They have already deepened into the zone occupied by demons. However, as airships could be easily noticed, none of them returned. Those on the airships were all elite boys. We've also dispatched there ground squads of scouts and intelligence agents composed of powerhouses above LV 9; however, none of them came back after entering the zone occupied by demons. This intelligence and relevant information are very important; therefore..."

Due to the special status of Zhang Tie, he didn't need to follow anyone's guidance in Selnes Theater of Operations; therefore, the alliance command could only negotiate it with Zhang Tie, instead of sending an order.

"I accept this task!" after thinking for a few seconds, Zhang Tie put it straightforwardly.

Major General Ford looked relaxed at once, "Do you have any requirements?"

"Yes, of course, I have!" Zhang Tie revealed a smile towards Lan Yunxi. After realizing something, Lan Yunxi glared at him.

"What's that?"

"I only have one requirement. Please give me at least a viscount-level secret cultivation knowledge!" Zhang Tie said frankly.

Major General Ford had not imagined that Zhang Tie could pose

such a requirement. After being silent for a few seconds, he threw a glance at Lan Yunxi. After that, he thought for a while before slowly nodding, "I cannot promise you, but I can report your requirement to the superior. As the viscount-level secret knowledge is a rarity, can you tell me the purpose of that secret knowledge?"

"Of course, it's used for cultivation. I'm just LV 9, due to some reason, I could not gain the secret cultivation knowledge in Huaiyuan Palace. However, the battle grows fiercer now. Therefore, I urgently crave for a secret knowledge so that I can continue to improve my fighting strength! It's my lowest requirement." Zhang Tie put it straightforwardly.

After planting the golden seed of 'King Roc Sutra' in the Shrine, Zhang Tie really wanted a complete secret cultivation knowledge so as to cover the method that he was cultivating. He could still hide it now; however, after he promoted to LV 11, he could not tell others that he was cultivating an emperor-level secret cultivation knowledge. Therefore, of course, Zhang Tie would seize this opportunity to obtain a complete secret cultivation knowledge. After that, his constant promotion would not arouse any doubt from others.

Now, the Blackson Humans Corridor was in a chaos. In such a chaotic situation, the high-end secret cultivation knowledge could even be found in illegal demon hunters' market. Actually, it was not difficult for the alliance command to fetch a viscount-level secret knowledge for him.

After gaining Zhang Tie's reply, Major General Ford left by a car under the gaze of Zhang Tie and Lan Yunxi.

Seeing Major General Ford's car disappearing into the distance, Lan Yunxi turned around and watched Zhang Tie, "Have you long expected to wait for someone to bring you the secret knowledge?"

Zhang Tie instantly complained, "Don't think of me as a sinister,

I almost lost my life for that secret knowledge!"

"You deserve that!" Lan Yunxi scolded Zhang Tie in a low voice.

Given her look, Zhang Tie knew that Lan Yunxi was joking with him. Zhang Tie didn't want to talk about the danger that he had encountered in the illegal demon hunters market. He thought that it was unnecessary to show off the frustrations and misfortunes that he had met before.

"Yes, Is the situation really that severe in the demon zone?" Zhang Tie transferred the topic. He knew that Lan Yunxi must know more than him about the demon zone based on her current status and her background as the princess of Huaiyuan Palace.

"Yes!" Lan Yunxi slightly frowned, "Recently, that squad of elite demons decreased their frequency of appearance in Selnes Theater of Operations. Instead, more and more demonized puppets appeared there. That's not a good hint."

"Are demons consuming the strength of the allied human forces using demonized puppets?" Zhang Tie realized it right away, "Don't we have powerful knights? Why not dispatch some knights over there?"

"How do you know that human knights have not been dispatched there?" Lan Yunxi watched Zhang Tie with a special, solemn look.

Zhang Tie was stunned, "Ah? You mean human knights have already attended the battle?"

Lan Yunxi became silent for a few seconds, "From January, we've lost two human knights across Selnes Theater of Operations. Without knights, the Selnes Theater of Operations would be in another situation."

Lan Yunxi's reply shocked Zhang Tie a lot, "That's a major event. But why don't I know about it? Nobody talked about it at all!"

"You won't understand the world and battlefield of knights!" Lan Yunxi said gloomily.

...

"What is knights' world?"

As Lan Yunxi was busy, after talking with Zhang Tie for a while, she left. Zhang Tie just stared at Lan Yunxi's back frankly...

...

As he had already posed a requirement for a secret cultivation knowledge, Zhang Tie didn't enter Castle of Black Iron to light his invisible surging points using leakless fruits. As long as he started to light those invisible surging points except for those on his spine and headed for LV 10, some powerhouses could sense it. They might have a doubt, 'Didn't you want a secret cultivation knowledge after LV 9? How did you start to cultivate it before you got that?'

In order to avoid such a conflict, Zhang Tie waited for two days, during which period, he gradually relaxed himself. Meanwhile, he was preparing for the dangerous task arranged by the alliance command.

In the preparation, what Zhang Tie was interested in most was a wholly-new glider designed and manufactured by the Hoorn Republic...

That was an unprecedented glider that nobody could make before the Catastrophe. It was both a glider and a private plane which was customized for Zhang Tie with propeller as the driving force...

...

Chapter 602: The Man-Powered Plane

Since Zhang Tie was chased by wing demons and had to dive into the water to escape last time, the engineers of the Glider Base of Hoorn Republic had been busy producing a new glider for Zhang Tie.

In order to produce a new glider for Zhang Tie, Halson, the chief commission officer of the Glider Base of Hoorn Republic even contacted with the side of the Hoorn Republic. The Hoorn Republic finally dispatched a team of experts to Selnes with some carriages of equipment and tools.

Before Zhang Tie knew that news, the experts' team of Hoorn Republic had already arrived. Zhang Tie felt a bit embarrassed. After listening to Colonel Halson's explanation, Zhang Tie knew that he had been pretty famous across the Hoorn Republic.

After his heroic event with this Glider Base was spread in the Hoorn Republic, through the propaganda of the media of Hoorn Republic, almost every citizen of Hoorn Republic knew that there was a brave air cavalry called Selnes Eagle who fought lots of wing demons and scared them away by the glider produced in the Hoorn Republic.

At this moment, Zhang Tie was an idol in the Hoorn Republic for sure.

Therefore, after knowing that Zhang Tie's second glider collapsed, the side of Hoorn Republic dispatched a very powerful experts team to Selnes with equipment and machines to build a wholly new glider for Zhang Tie so as to maintain the honor of the country.

In the words of Colonel Halson, it was the honor of the entire Hoorn Republic for the Selnes Eagle to drive the glider of Hoorn Republic to fight wing demons for the sake of humans.

When the experts' team arrived in Selnes, they met Zhang Tie twice and communicated with him. As it was in the rainy season, gliders would always lose the driving force brought by elevating thermal air flow; additionally, the rainy day was a great test to this unpowered aircraft. When those experts asked Zhang Tie what sort of glider did he want, Zhang Tie told them the following words:

"I could already make full use of wind power and airflow. I think you can barely make any breakthrough in this aspect. However, the situation on the battlefield is very complex. Sometimes, like the past two months, because of the heavy rain, I could not use these natural conditions, which made me very passive. It would be very dangerous to drive a glider in bad weathers. If possible, I hope to have another driving force so that I don't have to rely on airflow and wind power. I expect to fly freely in the sky by glider like riding a bicycle."

When Zhang Tie said this, he didn't imagine whether the experts' team from the Hoorn Republic could make it. He just told them about his need. Even If they couldn't make it, it wouldn't cause any loss to Zhang Tie at least; however, if they could, that would be a great surprise for Zhang Tie. It indicated that Zhang Tie would have a greater freedom in the sky.

In a few days after Zhang Tie posed his requirement, the experts' team of the Hoorn Republic invited Zhang Tie to do all-round physical fitness tests twice.

Zhang Tie didn't understand the relationship between driving a glider and his physical fitness. Whereas, he still went there. In the process of physical fitness tests, Zhang Tie remembered that all the members of the experts' team from the Hoorn Republic were staring at him with gleaming eyes...

Since then, the experts' team rarely contacted Zhang Tie in the glider base. Until recently, Zhang Tie was informed that a new glider had been produced. They wanted him to take a look.

On October 7th, the Glider Base of Hoorn Republic...

Zhang Tie reappeared in a glider warehouse of the base, where he saw a wholly new glider which had taken dozens of professional engineers of the Hoorn Republic over 1 month.

That glider looked a bit similar to WindTalker II; however, the sharp difference between the entire glider and WindTalker II was that this one had a double-wing propeller on its head.

When Zhang Tie entered the cockpit, he found that the layout and devices had been totally changed. The steering pedal under his feet had been replaced by an actuator like bicycle's foot pedal. There were also some changes on the elevator. Previously the elevator could only be pulled up or pressed down; however, Zhang Tie found it could now be rotated 90 degrees to the left and the right. There was one more pushing rod below the elevator whose function was unclear.

Except for all these changes, the glider still maintained features of Zhang Clan, namely the seat was foldable; there were still two concave handles on the left and the right of the cockpit which could be lifted by hand; additionally, the cover of the bottom of the cockpit was still slideable.

Zhang Tie looked around in the cockpit. He couldn't wait to step on the pair of foot pedals. He wanted to see the effect.

It was very hard for commoners to move that pair of foot pedals; those weak ones could only move the pedals a few times. However, for Zhang Tie, it was as easy as how commoners stepped on the pedals of bicycles.

The moment the pedals were moved, the two propellers at the head of the glider had started to rotate, causing a wuthering sound. Zhang Tie gradually accelerated while the propellers sped up. Zhang Tie then found the entire glider started to slide forward.

When the glider was running in the warehouse, a whim flashed

across Zhang Tie's mind. Zhang Tie moved the rudder rightward, causing the glider slide towards the right; Zhang Tie moved the rudder leftward, causing the glider slide towards the left.

Zhang Tie became very excited. He finally understood how did those experts think. Now that he could push glider forward on the ground, he could also have it driven forward by the propellers in the sky.

Zhang Tie jumped out of the cockpit with a happy look, "How did you make it?"

"What you told us brought us a great enlightenment and inspiration. After thinking carefully, we borrowed the designing ideas of the plane before the Catastrophe. We used a set of speed transforming gear and a chain to pass the power being produced by stepping the pedals to the propellers at the head of the glider so that this glider could have the ability of early human planes before the Catastrophe. It could gain an extra driving force when it couldn't make use of elevating airflow and wind power."

"Thank you, you're really great!"

"This glider is especially designed and produced for you. Such a design doesn't work for common glider drivers as they might not have enough strength to maintain a long time flight like you. Do you remember the physical fitness tests that we've made for you. We find your legs are very powerful. Additionally, your physical strength and endurance are excellent. If your legs' strength is converted into machine's power, your legs might be equal to an engine of 20 horsepower. This reminds us of this design."

"Ah? My feet could work like an engine of 20 horsepower, what does that mean?"

"Commoners who have not lit surging points could only produce 1 horsepower per minute. Within 10 minutes, commoners could only explode about half a horsepower at most. 20 horsepower is like you lie down with your feet lifting a 1500 kg object 1 m high in

1 second. Additionally, you could repeat this process. It is not a simultaneous explosiveness, it is a constant and repetitive strength. Speaking of explosiveness, many people could easily lift 1500 kg object 1 m high in 1 second with feet. However, few people could repeat this process in half an hour or one hour."

"Wuh, I see!" Zhang Tie understood it at once. He had not imagined that his feet could match an engine of 20 horsepower. It made him proud of himself as it was a special ability.

"Can I directly fly into the sky by stepping on this pair of pedals?"

"Although we've set the aided function to run the glider by stepping on the pedals, it poses a high requirement on your strength. However, when you fly in the sky, it will be different. As long as you have enough strength to keep the propellers running at least 800 turns a minute, you can have the pedals provide the constant driving force for this glider. It grants a very excellent flight and manipulative performance to this glider without relying on climates. We feel that this glider should be called man-powered plane, instead of a glider!"

"Man-powered plane, it sounds very interesting!" Zhang Tie smiled. When he recalled the Hit-Plane Brotherhood, he felt that he really had a great predestined affinity with planes. He had not imagined that he could really drive a plane now.

"Can I have a try now?"

"Of course!"

"I have one last question. What's this pushing rod below the elevator used for? I see data 50, 30,15,5, air and ground. What does that mean?"

"This is a variable transmission rod. It could adjust the reduction ratio between the pedals and the propeller and the outputting direction of the driving force from your pedals. It has two outputting directions and four gears. The highest gear represents

that you could have this man-powered plane's propeller rotate 50 turns by stepping on the pedals one loop. Similarly, the lower gear represents that you could have this man-powered plane's propeller rotate 30 turns by stepping on the pedals one loop. The higher the reduction ratio is, the more strength you will need to step on the pedals one loop. It could adjust itself based on your physical strength. The words 'air' and 'ground' respectively represent the outputting direction of the driving force provided by the pedals, 'air' refers that by stepping on the pedals you could provide a driving force to the propeller while the word 'ground' refers that by stepping on the pedals you could provide a driving force to the ground wheels and keep it running on the ground like riding a bicycle..."

...

After a few minutes, when Zhang Tie completely figured out how this man-powered plane was manipulated, this man-powered plane was pushed onto the runway.

When Zhang Tie returned to the cockpit, he instantly pushed the variable transmission rod and had it point at the word "ground". After that, he started to step on the pedals forcefully...

Without the traction of a tractor, this time, Zhang Tie just rode pedals like riding a bicycle, causing the glider run faster and faster on the runway. Finally, it left the runway and flew into the sky.

After flying into the sky, Zhang Tie had the gear point at the data 50. After that, he started to step on the pedals rapidly, causing the propellers run very fast...

Finally, without the help of wind power and elevating air flow, Zhang Tie had that man-powered glider fly in the air like a plane by his foot.

...

It was really hard to describe the feeling of driving this man-

powered plane in the air. If he was driving a common glider, he had to pay attention to the wind power and direction of airflow; however, by driving this man-powered plane, Zhang Tie felt like becoming really free.

Zhang Tie felt that this was more like a bicycle in the air. As long as he had strength, he only needed to keep stepping on the pedals to fly freely in the sky.

When in free flight, Zhang Tie could drive it like driving a glider in an elevating airflow so that he could take a rest and recover his physical strength. However, when there was no airflow to use, Zhang Tie could drive it at his will by stepping on the pedals, regardless of weather.

If Zhang Tie could step on the pedals to run the propeller in airflow, Zhang Tie found that he could increase his flight speed by at least 20-30%.

With this man-powered plane in hand, Zhang Tie became more confident about completing that task...

...

Chapter 603: Five-Element Ground-look Sutra

When Zhang Tie steadily landed the man-powered plane, a lot of people swarmed up at once.

As citizens of Hoorn Republic, these engineers felt pretty happy when they witness so many marvels concerning gliders in such a short period.

Several months ago, Zhang Tie created a marvel in this base by foot. However, today, he created another marvel by only sitting in a glider. Compared to the first marvel, the second one was more inspiring.

"Can we make it lighter?" soon after Zhang Tie got off the man-powered plane had he asked those experts from the Hoorn Republic.

"We used a very expensive light alloy to make this man-powered plane. Although its shape looks like that of WindTalker, its internal and external structures and raw materials had been greatly optimized. Therefore, although we added a set of variable transmission gears and some actuators inside this man-powered plane, we decreased its weight to 670 kg. It's the best we can do." An expert explained to Zhang Tie.

After hearing this expert's explanation, Zhang Tie knew that someone had already posed the concept of manufacturing man-powered plane a long time ago in the Hoorn Republic, which was crazy about flight. Many people in the Hoorn Republic had fantasized about providing a driving force to a glider to make it a real man-powered plan with stepping pedals like riding a bicycle.

Actually, all those who had posed similar thoughts had failed. There were mainly two reasons for failure. Firstly, the man-powered plan was too heavy, which could almost not be driven by

a human. Secondly, even though they could barely produce a very light man-powered plane, its performances could not even match that of common gliders. Nobody in the Hoorn Republic thought that could be qualified as a plane.

Many years ago, the Hoorn Republic had already made a man-powered plane using canvas and some light alloy. They controlled the weight of the man-powered plane within 150 kg. However, its best achievement in trial flight was 37 km's distance within 5 m in height.

After that light man-powered plane failed its trial flight, the engineers and glider fans in the Hoorn Republic reached a conclusion, in this age, the man-powered plane had to be designed with an excellent structure featured with an optimal lift-drag ratio and aerodynamic configuration. However, if a glider satisfied these conditions, it would weigh at least 700 kg. This posed a very high requirement to its driver. Besides being a top glider driver, he should have unrivaled strength and endurance.

It could be said that the man-powered plane was waiting for the right man.

The Hoorn Republic was a mini country, whose total population could not even match that of Blackhot City. Therefore, it was very rare to have powerhouses above LV 10 in this country.

Zhang Tie's advantage could be described as follows: those who had greater strength and endurance than him could not pilot gliders better than him while those who could pilot gliders didn't have greater strength and endurance than him.

In many powerhouses' eyes, glider sports was a very low-end and populist. Most of those who liked this sports were commoners. Few people above strong fighters would fly gliders when they were free. In commoners' eyes, glider sports were interesting. However, in powerhouses' eyes, it was as boring as playing mahjong. When they were free, they preferred to cultivate so as to promote to a

new level or advance to knights.

Given the combined factors, Zhang Tie finally became the first person who could drive a man-powered plane to fly into the sky by foot.

After having crew members carry 1000 vials of all-purpose medicament off the Idiots and gift them to the Glider Base of Hoorn Republic as his gratitude, Zhang Tie left the Glider Base.

This time, the experts and engineers of the Hoorn Republic produced three man-powered planes for Zhang Tie in total. However, one of them was a prototype which could fly but had faults. Therefore, the prototype was left in the base. Zhang Tie carried away the other two man-powered gliders, a pile of detailed manufacturing blueprints and parts which were used for replacement and maintenance.

When driving a man-powered plane, Zhang Tie needed only to pay attention to the set of variable transmission gears. However, that set of gears had to be maintained with lubricating oil. According to those experts and engineers from the Hoorn Republic, even Zhang Tie stepped pedals of man-powered plane 10 hours a day, the set of gears would have no problem in a decade. Because the set of gears were top industrial products in the Eastern Continent, whose durability and precision could even match that of gears in different machines.

After staying in the Glider Base of the Hoorn Republic for a few hours, it was already dusk. When Zhang Tie returned to the Crystal Battle Fortress using the Idiots, there were already two bright moons in the sky.

Major General Ford had already waited 4 hours for Zhang Tie in the Crystal Battle Fortress. Soon after Zhang Tie returned to the base of the Crystal Battle Fortress had Major General Ford boarded on the Idiots.

...

Zhang Tie met Ford in the command module of Idiots once again.

"Major General Ford, it seems that you've got a gift for me?" at the sight of Major General Ford, Zhang Tie had already focused on the metal box in Ford's hand. A metal chain linked the box with Ford's right wrist. It looked very valuable.

After throwing a glance at Zhang Tie, Major General Ford placed that box on the table. He then input the code and opened it. After that, he took out of a piece of diamond crystal being covered with a silvery metal and passed it to Zhang Tie.

Soon after Zhang Tie took it had he injected a strand of spiritual energy into it. In a split second, Zhang Tie saw some Chinese characters——"五行地像经(Five-element Ground-look Sutra)" in his mind.

...

Chapter 604: Falling into the Lion's Den

Zhang Tie skimmed it over and found the cultivation process of this secret knowledge started from lighting surging points on one's heart, livers, spleen, kidneys and lungs. Based on the interactions between the five human organs and five elements, namely gold, wood, water, fire and soil, it could constantly trigger one's potential and advance it to the utmost.

Zhang Tie felt this cultivation method was fair and progressive. It was fantastic. Starting from LV 12, the cultivator would have one more strand of the strength of the five elements respectively after each level he promoted. This strand of strength was unusual, with the rising level of the cultivator, in the later phase, when the cultivator collected all the five elements in his battle qi, his battle qi would grow more powerful.

"What's its level? Where did you get it from?" Zhang Tie asked Major General Ford.

"This viscount-level secret knowledge comes from the exile imperial household of the Dutin Kingdom which had been destroyed by demons in the north. Through the coordination of the alliance command and out of their respect and approval to you, the exile imperial household of Dutin Kingdom agreed to present this secret knowledge to you. Their only requirement is that you should not reveal the contents of this secret knowledge to others without their consent."

"Don't worry. I promise to not reveal it to anyone else. However, it is not my business if someone gets it through other channels." Zhang Tie replied solemnly.

As the old saying went, a Phoenix that lost its feathers could not even match a chicken. Zhang Tie really wondered what other cards could they play as the exiled imperial household who had already lost their privileges and territory. It might be a secret knowledge in

the imperial household of the Dutin Kingdom in the past, however, only after coordinating with the exiled imperial household and promising some virtual conditions to them, the alliance command had already obtained their secret knowledge. Therefore, that exiled imperial household must be in an embarrassing situation. Additionally, before he got this secret knowledge, Zhang Tie was not sure whether it had been read or copied by others.

Major General Ford understood Zhang Tie's meaning. However, he didn't know what to say. Instead, he just nodded and asked straightforwardly, "The alliance command has already satisfied your requirement, may you tell me when to set off?"

"I will set off tomorrow!" Zhang Tie replied rapidly. To a certain degree, this task was a trade. Now that he had already gained what he needed, Zhang Tie didn't want to put on airs and waste time.

"Good!" Major General Ford nodded. "This task is very important. According to our judgment, you will probably find valuable intelligence in Tokei City, the capital of the northernmost part of the Titanic Duchy. Tokei City is the most populated city and the largest city in the Titanic Duchy. If demons have a lot of evolutionary forms of parent puppet worms, those objects would exert their role to the utmost in Tokei City. After all the citizens across Tokei City were transformed, they could provide millions of demonized puppets for demons. Those demonized puppets could never be completely covered in Tokei City."

"I will take a look in Tokei City."

"Good luck!" Major General Ford picked himself up from the seat. The two people then shook hands with each other.

...

When Major General Ford left, Zhang Tie toyed with that secret knowledge for a while before slightly smiling and throwing it into Castle of Black Iron. Perhaps a complete viscount-level secret

cultivation knowledge was already very precious, however, for Zhang Tie, now that he could cultivate the "King Roc Sutra", all the other secret knowledge below emperor level would lose their attraction to him.

With the viscount-level secret knowledge as a disguise, Zhang Tie would have no obstacles on the way of cultivating the "King Roc Sutra".

...

On the second day, the Idiots kept flying southward since it set off from the base of Crystal Battle Fortress. After leaving Crystal Battle Fortress for half an hour by airship, Zhang Tie had already driven his man-powered plane away from Idiots.

It was a nice weather. Only after a short while, Zhang Tie had already found an elevating thermal airflow. He then started to climb up in spiral manner as he kept moving southward.

After coming to the top of a huge mountain range in the south, with the help of the powerful elevating airflow brought by the mountain range, Zhang Tie entered the stratosphere once again. After that, he changed his direction and started to fly northward towards Titanic Duchy.

In the stratosphere, Zhang Tie stepped on the pedals to make the propellers rotate faster. With the terrifying power, the speed of propeller could almost reach above 3000 r/m. Benefited from such a high speed, the man-powered plane could maintain a steady flight state in stratosphere in fast speed without having to lower its height, during which period, Zhang Tie could experience the perfect manipulative performance of the plane.

When he left the Crystal Battle Fortress, Zhang Tie didn't even bid a farewell to Lan Yunxi. Although this was an important task and he might meet dangers, he would encounter dangers each time he executed the task. Since he came to Selnes Theatre of Operations, he had already executed a lot of dangerous tasks like

this one, if he had to bid a farewell to Lan Yunxi each time before he was going to execute a task, he would feel very boring, not to mention Lan Yunxi.

Wars might change a lot of things. Previously, Zhang Tie thought it was bragging and exaggerating to forget life or death when on the battlefield. How could a person not care about his own life. However, when he was really in such an environment, he finally understood that it was not exaggerating, it was very real. When you became numb, you would feel boring to think about many things. Of course, you would ignore your life or death.

Zhang Tie realized that when one considered life or death on the battlefield, it was like concerning about whether that person in front of you would break wind or not. Such a boring risk always existed, which you had to face. However, it was actually not under your control in most cases. It was not worth you wasting time.

At this moment, Zhang Tie didn't feel that this task would change him a lot. After gaining the man-powered plane, Zhang Tie even felt that he would face fewer dangers. He started to be more confident about accomplishing the tasks.

Before entering the air territory of the Titanic Duchy, Zhang Tie was always thinking about that scene, the old man whose limbs had been chopped off watched demonized puppets gnawing his limbs. If he didn't enter the underground space that day, that old man might also die in the end. However, he would not die that miserably in front of Zhang Tie. Therefore, Zhang Tie felt guilty about that old man. At the same time, he hated the Senel Clan very much.

Zhang Tie was thinking that after accomplishing this task and promoting to LV 10, he would change his look and seek a chance to sneak into the territory of the Senel Clan. He had to make the Senel Clan restless. Perhaps he was not able to exterminate the Senel Clan at this moment but he could at least make some troubles for them and make them restless.

After entering the airspace of the Titanic Duchy, Zhang Tie recovered his composure as he paid high attention to this task. As it was a major task, Zhang Tie dared not make any mistakes.

As it was in the stratosphere, Zhang Tie could better hide his man-powered plane. This height could not be reached by any LV 9 and LV 10 wing demons. The plane could not even be easily observed by naked eyes on the ground. For a better hidden effect, Zhang Tie had the crew members of Idiots paint the lower part of this plane into allure, which was as same as that of the sky. Benefiting from this, his man-powered plane could fully hide in the sky.

On the way passing by the Selnes Plain, Zhang Tie didn't encounter any wing demons but he didn't become relaxed. After entering the airspace the of Titanic Duchy, Zhang Tie selected a route which had been well planned. He attempted to avoid the sensitive regions and whether he might encounter wing demons in his imaginations; he chose a relatively remote route to head for Tokei City, the capital of the Titanic Duchy.

After coming to the Selnes Theater of Operations several months ago, Zhang Tie became less interested in the landscape below his eyes.

After flying for 3 hours, when he reached the hinterland of the Titanic Duchy, Zhang Tie met a team of wing demons. They were flying thousands of meters below Zhang Tie in rows of black points.

Thankfully, they didn't find Zhang Tie. Those wing demons hadn't imagined that human aircraft could fly in the stratosphere, causing a fly-over.

Zhang Tie kept changing his directions. When it was past 3 pm, after flying for over 2,000 km, Zhang Tie finally reached the airspace of Tokei City, the northernmost capital of Titanic Duchy.

In the distance, Zhang Tie had already seen the rising objects

outside Tokei City. As they were so high, Zhang Tie was not sure what they were. In order to see it clearly, Zhang Tie took out of his telescope and looked below.

He saw dozens of pyramid-sized flesh hills being covered with honeycombs outside Tokei City.

However, before Zhang Tie could see it clearly, a sudden sense of crisis had made his heart race. Zhang Tie moved his eyes away from the telescope as he saw a dark purple wing demons who was accelerating towards him with a grim look.

'Dark purple? LV 12? Being able to fly in the stratosphere?' Goosebumps covered Zhang Tie's scalp at once.

Chapter 605: The Eagle Broke Its Wing

The crisis came so abruptly. The wing demon had already been 100 m away from Zhang Tie when Zhang Tie caught sight of it.

Zhang Tie released two palm bolts and changed the direction almost at the same time.

Although palm bolts caused sonic booms, they were useless to LV 12 wing demons. They could only slightly slow down the wing demon's flying speed before being dodged away by the wing demon.

In a split second, Zhang Tie had already exerted his utmost effort to step on the pedals as fast as possible. Meanwhile, he had the man-powered plane cut into a downward strand of cold air flow on his left and dive towards the ground.

Zhang Tie understood that he could never defeat a LV 12 wing demon in the sky. Last time, he was embarrassed by a LV 11 wing demon, not to mention a LV 12 wing demon.

The wing demon chased after him as it uttered a weird, frightening sound. When Zhang Tie started to dive towards the ground by the man-powered plane, that wing demon had already been less than 80 m from him. Sitting in the cockpit, Zhang Tie inclined his body as he cast another palm bolt backwards. The wing demon blocked it away with an odd-looking fork. However, In such a delay, Zhang Tie was pushed 10 meters away.

At the critical moment, Zhang Tie recovered his composure at once as the terrain of the Tokei City, the capital of Titanic Duchy appeared in his mind immediately...

Zhang Tie knew that he could only use three aspects to escape; mountain, water and his man-powered plane.

There were undulating hills in the east of Tokei City. Much elevating wavy air flows formed above the hills due to the terrain.

In the elevating wavy airflows, Zhang Tie could use a unique flying skill to gain a speed which was far greater than that could be gained in normal conditions.

After flying over those hills, there was a huge lake more than 300 km away in the east of the hills. The lake was about 200 km in both length and width. It was called Star Leaves Lake. It was the biggest freshwater lake in the Titanic Duchy. As long as he arrived there, he would have a greater chance to escape even at the cost of one man-powered plane.

Although Zhang Tie could not defeat a LV 12 wing demon in the sky, he was unrivaled in water.

In a split second, Zhang Tie had dived from 10,000 m to 3,000-4,000 m in height. Through sharp frictions with air flows, the rapidly running propeller uttered a weird wuthering and deafening sound.

Zhang Tie then released some more palm bolts to further slow down the speed of the wing demon. However, during this process, that wing demon narrowed the distance to 60 m.

If it was the former glider that Zhang Tie drove, Zhang Tie might have been caught up by that wing demon. This time, the extra driving force provided by the propeller of man-powered plane postponed the time of being caught up by the wing demon for Zhang Tie.

Facing chilly wind, hearing weird, wuthering sound from the propeller, Zhang Tie could see the objects on the ground below him more and more clearly. Zhang Tie found that the dense military camps and demonized puppets on the ground became more terrifying; however, he didn't have time to observe them at all; instead, he only thought about how to escape.

When the contour of hills entered Zhang Tie's vision, what Zhang Tie was most concerned about happened. Two more purple black points were accelerating towards him from the front and on

the left.

"Three LV 12 wing demons? What the hell?"

"F*ck!"

Zhang Tie instantly picked off a standard javelin from the weapon rack hanging on one side of the glider and threw it towards that wing demon behind him.

Standard javelin's power could never be matched by palm bolts. Almost in a wink, it had flew over 50 m and arrived in front of that LV 12 wing demon. The LV 12 wing demon instantly blocked it away with its fork, causing a huge sound. However, that wing demon was also sent flying backward over 10 m while its body quivered.

In this way, the distance between Zhang Tie and the LV 12 wing demon was expanded to over 100 m at once. The LV 12 wing demon uttered a weird sound in the air, which sounded being extremely furious and warned the other two wing demons about this trick.

When the javelins on both sides of the cockpit were almost used up, Zhang Tie finally cut into the air territory above the hills. Three LV 12 wing demons accomplished their encirclement above the hills. Each of the 3 LV 12 wing demons was less than 100 m away from Zhang Tie.

In this distance, nobody could escape out of 3 LV 12 wing demons' encirclement, no matter what he drove, the man-powered plane or a glider.

Without those undulating hills, Zhang Tie felt that he could never escape. Even those who were watching this wonderful air chase from the ground in the distance felt that the result was already fixed.

However, at this moment, Zhang Tie's man-powered plane finally entered the air territory above the hills.

Undulating hills could produce wavy airflows. Based on his acute

senses, Zhang Tie started to penetrate through those elevating airflows like a butterfly. Zhang Tie's plane suddenly accelerated, expanding the distance between him and the LV 12 wing demon behind him.

This was an exclusive flying skill that Zhang Tie developed based on the traits of the glider. Zhang Tie named it dynamic soaring.

Dynamic soaring could only be applied in the air territory above the undulating hills. Such area bred very special elevating airflows and a strong sense of space hierarchy. The airflows were sharply different in speed. By constantly making curvilinear motion among these airflows, Zhang Tie would accelerate its glider each time he made a turn.

In the mother nature, this glider's driving skill was very similar to that of seagulls' flight principle among waves. The undulating hills were like undulating waves as they could produce undulating airflows in different speeds. This was the principle of dynamic soaring.

In such a flight, the space velocity lost in each turn would be smaller than the increasing speed brought by different air flows. In this way, speed and energy could be constantly accumulated. When the air stopped flowing or the glider entered high-speed airflows from the low-speed area after a great turn, the glider's moving speed decreased compared to that of airflows; however, it increased compared to the ground. After another sharp turn, a part of increasing speed was lost. After entering high-speed airflow, it gained a momentum once again. Similarly, through the circulation of decreased airspeed — increased ground velocity—ground velocity turning into space velocity, the glider reached the highest speed.

Zhang Tie had not shown off this flying skill in front of others. It was almost impossible for other glider drivers to sense the changes and layers of air flow at hundreds of meters in height when in high-speed flight; not to mention that they had to frequently bear

the terrifying overload caused by the large-angle turn of the glider. In the process, if the glider was poor, it might break into parts when turning, not to mention humans.

Such a flying skill was completely an unimaginable "marvelous skill" of the glider drivers that they could never master.

Last time, Zhang Tie dived in water to escape a LV 11 wing demon at the cost of a glider because he had no terrain to make use of within hundreds of miles when he encountered that wing demon. As a result, he could not apply his dynamic soaring skill.

However, this time, it was a different situation. He could make use of the vast, undulating hills and expose his special skill. There was always a way out!

The driving force provided by the propeller could mend up the losing speed when he moved out of the high-speed airflows, allowing him to cut in high-speed air flows at a faster speed. Benefited from this, he could gain a higher speed. After accelerating a few times, the speed of Zhang Tie's man-powered plane had already surpassed 600 km, expanding the distances between him and the other three wing demons at once.

Although wing demons could do some gliding motions using airflows by flapping their wings, they could not meet the requirements of aerodynamics. They could never match some birds on the application of air flows, even human gliders. Therefore, even in the same environment, they could not catch up with Zhang Tie.

At this moment, Zhang Tie heard furious roars behind him. When he thought that he had already dodged from their chase, a powerful qi rose from the ground.

When Zhang Tie sensed this qi, before he made any response had the right wing of his man-powered plane been broken into pieces by a strength.

Soon after that, Zhang Tie heard a terrifying air-torn explosion.

"What a sonic boom!"

The moment this whim flashed across Zhang Tie's mind had his man-powered plane swiveled and lost its control as it dived towards the ground...

Chapter 606: A Terrifying Trap

In the process of applying dynamic soaring, Zhang Tie was in a low height but at a very fast speed; after such an attack, the man-powered plane was only a bit higher than 100 m in a few seconds.

It kept swiveling and plunging, making Zhang Tie a bit dizzy. However, he recovered his composure very soon. When the man-powered plane was dozens of meters away from the ground, Zhang Tie rapidly picked a rotachute out of his coat and pressed its button at once.

The moment he pressed the button had the two leaves of the rotachute started to rotate. With a powerful buffering, Zhang Tie was instantly drawn out of the man-powered plane's cockpit.

...

Several seconds later...

"Boom..." the man-powered plane crashed into pieces 200 m away, scattering all its parts everywhere. When Zhang Tie was still about 10 m away from the ground, he had put away the rotachute and had his body fall down faster.

After buffering the plunging inertia by rolling on the ground for a while, Zhang Tie hurriedly sprung up. When he was going to dart towards the east, a man stood in front of him.

At the sight of that man, Zhang Tie stopped at once.

That man was wearing a dusky golden armor with a hooknose. His qi was even greater than that of Master Aryan. He was just watching Zhang Tie with a calm, faintly icy look. Zhang Tie felt like a frog being gazed at by a poisonous snake as goosebumps covered his back.

It was this man who shot down Zhang Tie's man-powered plane just now. If that man targeted at his cockpit, Zhang Tie was not sure whether he would be able to stand up now.

After fighting Abyan many times, Zhang Tie clearly knew the fighting strength on that level. Therefore, since this man stood in front of him, Zhang Tie had given up his plan to escape. Due to such a sharp difference in level and fighting strength, Zhang Tie knew it clearly that it was just like seeking for trouble if he tried to escape.

"Who are you?" Zhang Tie asked that man as he felt that he had seen that hooknose before. Meanwhile, a bad whim flashed across his mind, "After encountering three LV 12 wing demons in the air, I was finally shot down by a powerhouse. Is this a coincidence?"

"I'm Koz!" The man opened his mouth as Zhang Tie's heart raced. The bad whim became clearer, "How could I meet a member of Senel Clan here?"

That man kept gazing at Zhang Tie's face. Even Zhang Tie's most trivial mental changes could not escape from his eyes. After telling Zhang Tie about his name, Koz found that Zhang Tie faintly narrowed his pupils. He then let out a sigh, "It seems that you're that person who destroyed the good plan of Senel Clan in Misty Moon Woods in June. You killed my son Cambo, right?"

"I don't know what you're talking about." Clearly knowing that in war there was no objection to deceit, of course, Zhang Tie would not expose the truth. After hearing Koz's words, Zhang Tie felt chilly as falling into a terrifying trap being especially set for him.

"You don't need to think too much about that. I'm especially waiting for you here. I've not imagined that you, a tiny LV 9 fighter who has been rewarded with the honor Selnes Eagle, really have a talent. You almost escaped from the encirclement of three LV 12 wing demons. It seems that you are waiting for me to kill you." That man revealed an icy smile.

When the man said these words, the 3 wing demons had already arrived here. After seeing the man's hand gesture, they then left.

"Right, I am Zhang Tie, the Selnes Eagle. I admit that you're more

powerful than me. However, don't dream about getting any intelligence from me!" Zhang Tie watched that man with a calm look.

That man burst out laughing before watching Zhang Tie with a sinister smile, "Hahahaha, do I need to get any intelligence from you? You really think that we are afraid of the allied human forces? Who has dispatched you here? Have you started to cultivate the 'Five-element Ground Look Sutra' these days?"

"What are you talking about?" Zhang Tie finally changed his look.

"I'm just leaving you a chance to see clearly who will be the winner of this war!"

In a few seconds, Zhang Tie heard another air-breaking sound as some more people appeared, surrounding him right away.

Those people were young elites of Senel Clan whom Zhang Tie had seen in the underground space of Misty Moon Woods.

At the sight of Zhang Tie, they were like how timber wolves stared at little white rabbits with a cruel and aggressive look. Zhang Tie looked around and found that he could not escape this time. Therefore, he became silent and wanted to see what trick did these members of Senel Clan want to play.

"Take him back!" Koz said as he pointed at Zhang Tie with a finger, as a glittering battle qi flashed towards Zhang Tie. As Zhang Tie was only 10 m away from Koz, he didn't have time to dodge away. With a headache, he passed out and fell down the ground at once.

"Dad, why not kill him for Cambo's death?" Rouben moved one step forward as he licked his lips and watched Zhang Tie who was lying on the ground. At the same time, a shrewd light flashed across his eyes.

"Keep him alive. He's still useful to Senel Clan. We would deal

with him when he was useless. Are you afraid of him escaping at this moment?" Koz said icily as all the other young elites of Senel Clan exchanged glances with each other and nodded.

Koz waved his hand. Scala then walked forward and lifted Zhang Tie by one hand. After that, a group of people darted towards Tokei City.

...

Zhang Tie didn't how long had he been in the coma. When he woke up, he only felt warm and comfortable all over like bathing in hot water.

He opened his eyes and found himself lying on a huge, cozy bed. What in front of his eyes was a golden, noble mosquito curtain with long fringes. The bed had a faint rosemary flavor.

"Am I still alive?" after remembering the last scene before he lost his consciousness, Zhang Tie instantly sat up on the bed. However, everything in front of him made Zhang Tie confused...

He was in a brilliant, noble bedroom.

"Master, you woke up..." Some beautiful women instantly swarmed up when Zhang Tie sat up.

Chapter 607: Allure

"This was really a dreamland. Haven't I been captured by Senel Clan? I should be a prisoner. But why do they treat me in this way?"

Zhang Tie would not feel strange if he was in a dark cell. However, this brilliant bedroom slightly shocked him.

Those women had been changing clothes for him.

Zhang Tie ignored them with a calm look as he hurriedly checked his physical conditions. His battle qi had been sealed as he could not apply them at all. In that comfortable state, he could not use too much strength. He felt a bit sleepy temporarily like how he felt soon after making love with women. Additionally, in the mind sea, his spiritual energy became stagnated like a puddle of water being frozen. He could not use his spiritual energy at all.

In a conclusion, Zhang Tie found he had completely become an average person. Even a LV 3-LV 4 warrior could defeat him.

What Zhang Tie was reassured was that the marvelous arch door of Castle of Black Iron was still in his mind. It seemed that the strength that restricted his spiritual energy was unable to find that arch door. Zhang Tie remembered that the arch door might be able to hide itself in some special situations.

"Heller, can you hear that?" Zhang Tie attempted to touch Heller in his mind.

"Here I am, Castle Lord!" Heller's voice sounded in Zhang Tie's mind. Zhang Tie then let out a deep sigh. After these years, Zhang Tie had already been relying on Heller and Castle of Black Iron. As long as he could touch Heller, Zhang Tie would recover his composure very soon no matter what danger was he in.

In a few seconds, Zhang Tie had almost been naked, except a pair of underwear. With a big smile, those women were appreciating

Zhang Tie's powerful and coordinated frame as they helped him put on a pair of wholly new clothes.

Zhang Tie coordinated with them to put on the new clothes. No matter what, he had to wear clothes. In this situation, he didn't need to express his integrity at the risk of his life. Even if he was in bare butts, he could still not cause any harm to the members of Senel Clan.

"What's the matter with my body?" Zhang Tie asked Heller as he coordinated with those beauties.

"Castle Lord, your spiritual and material strength have been sealed by a secret method!"

"F*ck, it's the second time. Last time was in Ice and Snow Wilderness." Zhang Tie knew that the current situation must be much riskier than that he encountered in Ice and Snow Wilderness last time. Last time, the opponent was O'Laura; however, this time, the opponent was the b*stards of Three-eye Association. As long as he recalled the piles of bones in the underground space, he would know how terrifying and cruel is Senel Clan. Now that he fell in the hand of these scumbags, he would not have a good result.

"How severe is it this time? Can I cope with it?"

"They were two different secret methods. Last time, the bone-exploding needle was the unique skill of priests in Ice and Snow Wilderness. Its main energy comes from the spiritual energy of the priests. Bone-exploding needles could seal your abilities physically and mentally; besides, the executor could also sense your situation. However, this time, the secret method's main energy carried the attributes of battle qi. It is a powerful battle qi of Koz, a LV 16 battle spirit. That energy could seal all the surging points that you've lit. Therefore, you will feel that you've not lit any surging point at all. The latter method is more direct and aggressive than the former one. However, Koz could not sense your body's

situation."

After hearing Heller's words, Zhang Tie lit up his hope once again, "You mean I can defuse the current situation?"

"Of course!"

"How should I do then?"

"Nothing!"

"Nothing?" Zhang Tie became amazed.

"Yes. Actually, you could not alter the battle qi seal at all; you could only wait for its strength to weaken. When you could apply your spiritual energy, you could accelerate this process."

"How could Koz allow this battle qi seal to defuse and weaken itself?"

"Koz didn't know that the battle qi seal on your body could defuse and weaken itself!"

"Ah? But why?"

"Because he doesn't know that you're cultivating 'King Roc Sutra', an emperor-level secret knowledge. The power of emperor-level secret knowledge could not be completely sealed or bound. You can be killed; however, your power could not be killed. Even though throne-level secret knowledge might be sealed. This is the dignity of emperor-level secret knowledge!"

"Although you have only mastered a weak power of 'King Roc Sutra' after planting the golden seed in the Shrine, the strand of power in your body still remains supreme. It is superior to all the battle qi below emperor level. It could never be completely bound by low-end battle qi. When in the weak state, it would be temporarily suppressed; however, it could not be suppressed forever. Because it has the ability to get rid of bound and seal! It would take you at most 1 week to digest the sealing power over your Shrine surging point. By then, you could recover a bit ability.

You could apply your spiritual energy once again. At least, you could enter Castle of Black Iron at any time. Besides, you could use your god's rune."

Zhang Tie had not imagined that what brought him a bit hope in the impasse was the power that he gained after planting the golden seed of 'King Roc Sutra' in his Shrine. From then on, he realized the power of emperor-level secret knowledge.

This task was completely a trap targeting at Zhang Tie from the beginning. It was pushed by Senel Clan using the power of Three-eye Association. After realizing that the Three-eye Association could set a trap for him through the alliance command, Zhang Tie felt pretty chilly inside as he became disappointed about the future of allied human forces in Waii Sub-continent.

Zhang Tie didn't know how many people of the alliance command had been involved in this plot. However, he realized that the power behind it must be very terrifying. Someone in the management of the alliance command must be involved in it, perhaps more than one.

"Three-eye Association's power is really shocking. If not clean Three-eye Association's lackeys out of the allied human forces, the human defense line in Selnes Theater of Operations would collapse sooner or later. But how can I do that?" Zhang Tie forced a bitter smile. If it was possible, they had long been cleaned.

Through this encounter, besides realizing that he was in a dilemma, Zhang Tie also lost his confidence in the management of the allied human forces.

However, what counted most at this moment was to survive himself and escape out of here.

When Zhang Tie figured out his physical and mental situations and the current situation, he had already put on a new pair of clothes.

Standing in front of the mirror, Zhang Tie watched the person who was wearing a suit of noble and proper clothes and smiled calmly, "Selnes Clan must be using me. I'd like to see what tricks do they play."

"Where am I?" Zhang Tie asked those women.

"Master, you're in your residence, a manor nearby the Sunshine Avenue in Tokei City..." before those women opened their mouths, a male had replied when he walked in.

Zhang Tie found those female servants were scared about that man and were saluting him with formal bows, two of them even dared not raise their heads as their bodies were slightly shaking.

That old guy in a suit of black swallowtail looked 50-60 years old. He seemed to be a steward. However, he looked very gloomy. At the sight of him, Zhang Tie remembered an old jackal who had started to lose its fur yet still liked to eat human flesh.

"There's still water on the floor. What did I teach you before?" The moment he entered the room had the old guy complained as he glared at those female servants. When they helped Zhang Tie cleanse his body just now, some water was sprayed on the floor. They had not cleaned it yet.

"We...we're going to clean it right now..."

When a woman was going to clean it with a piece of towel, she was slapped in the face by that old guy and fell down. She wanted to cry; however, she didn't and hurriedly stood up.

With his eyes on those women, the old guy slowly walked towards them and slapped their faces ferociously one after another. At the same time, he taught them, "Don't forget about your current status. You're not fair ladies in big clans anymore; instead, you're the female slaves here. You have to treasure this opportunity and do your best in case of my concern. Think about how those women becoming bloody slaves or entering gravehills.

Then you will know how to do..."

Being so scared, those women didn't even dare raise their heads; neither dared they utter a voice.

Zhang Tie watched this old guy's performance with a cold look. He knew that this old man was scolding him, instead of those women.

'However, this method only works for commoners. You've found a wrong spectator today. This father has chopped off tens of thousands' demons' heads. Of course, I'm not afraid of you.'

"Who are you?" Zhang Tie asked him when the old guy finished his performance.

"Master, I'm Navas, your steward..." the old guy bowed towards Zhang Tie with a respectful yet presumptuous look. He was watching Zhang Tie like watching a subordinate with a bit joking and contemptuous look, which made Zhang Tie very uncomfortable.

"What did you call me?" under the old guy's presumptuous look, Zhang Tie grew calmer.

"Master!"

"You're my steward?"

"Yes!"

"Who's the boss here?"

"Of course you, master!"

"A bit closer! I cannot hear it clearly..." Zhang Tie waved his hand towards the old scumbag.

He moved one step forward...

Zhang Tie suddenly sprung up and slapped his face ferociously, causing a loud sound, "Pah...".

Those women in the room became so scared that they hurriedly

lowered their heads and watched their own insteps.

The old guy looked like an idiot as a palm print appeared on his face. After that, he glared at Zhang Tie like that he was going to eat him. At the same time, his qi grew aggressive...

Zhang Tie drew in a cold breath as he swung his arm and watched this old guy like watching an old dog. He didn't mind Navas' look at all, "I've not imagined that your old scumbag's face is so hard. I don't like how you looked at me just now. Therefore, I slapped you to remind you of your current status. You must figure out why Senel Clan dispatched you here. Am I clear?"

Soon after hearing the words 'Senel Clan' had the old guy lost his dignity like a deflated balloon. He lowered his head as he became docile at once, "You're right, master, it was my fault just now!"

"Do you know about your mistake?"

"Yes, I know!"

"Raise your head!"

The moment the old man raised his head and wanted to force a smile had he been slapped by Zhang Tie once again.

With another "Pah...", a palm print appeared on the other cheek of the old guy. At the same time, a wisp of blood appeared on the old guy's mouth corner at once.

"I felt that you were still complaining about me, how about now?" Zhang Tie watched Navas with a smile.

Navas almost gritted his teeth, "No!"

"You're not sincere at all. Look at the mirror, you're gritting teeth like that you're going to swallow me!" after saying this, Zhang Tie slapped Navas' face once again.

"You..." Navas was driven extremely infuriated.

"What? Do you want to fight me? Come on. I feel you're at least a LV 6 fighter. You must have already gathered your battle qi. I can

not defeat you now. What are you afraid of?" with a sneer, Zhang Tie directly kicked Navas' lower abdomen, causing him move several steps back. As a result, he almost fell down.

Although Zhang Tie's battle qi and surging points had been sealed, he was still as strong as a 20-odd healthy youngster. The steward must feel very painful. If a common LV 6 fighter didn't fight back, he might be wounded, even be killed by Zhang Tie.

"Come here..." Zhang Tie waved his hand towards Navas once again.

The old guy walked towards Zhang Tie with furious eyes as Zhang Tie slapped him once again.

This time, Zhang Tie's wrist was tightly clenched by the old scumbag.

Zhang Tie didn't struggle. After smiling at Navas, Zhang Tie uttered a miserable shriek, "Ah, my hand, my hand is almost broken by Navas...help, Navas is going to kill me..."

After hearing Zhang Tie's miserable shriek, Navas' face turned pale at once. Like grabbing a red-hot iron stick, he hurriedly let off Zhang Tie's hand.

Zhang Tie stopped shrieking as he slapped Navas' face ferociously once again with another hand...

Only after half a minute, Navas' face had been swollen like a pig's head. Watching Zhang Tie's icy and mocking eyes, Navas finally had a bit fear in his eyes. He finally knew that a lion was always a lion. Even If it was locked, it could still not be teased by jackals.

...

After beating up Navas for a while, Zhang Tie finally let him roll out of here. After taking a walk around the house, Zhang Tie finally understood his current situation—he was put under house arrest by Senel Clan.

In the manor where he was confined, he saw nobody but some women, Navas and a team of guards with icy look and powerful fighting strength. Needless to say, those guards and Navas were monitoring and controlling him here.

As long as he didn't want to leave this manor, Zhang Tie found that his behaviors were not restricted. Just like the real master here, he had brilliant clothes, good food and so many beauties. Almost all of his demands could be satisfied. Besides, there was a study room in the manor where he could enjoy reading.

"According to an old Chinese saying, if a person shows his courtesy to you, he must need your help. I'm already under the control of Senel Clan, but they still treat me so well. It means that they must want something from me. The more they want from me, the more they could bear me from doing excessive things here. As I'm still alive, I must be useful to them."

"What do the Senel Clan want from me?"

Zhang Tie knew that he would soon get the answer from Senel Clan.

Zhang Tie was right. 3 hours after he woke up, a major figure of Senel Clan had already arrived at his manor.

——Scala.

Although they were in two hostile camps, Zhang Tie felt that Scala was visiting an old friend. He looked pretty relaxed. In the parlor of the manor, Scala was alone in a suit of casual clothes.

"How's going here? Are you used to this place?" Scala smiled, "We have arranged some measures for the sake of your safety. After all, Tokei City is the capital. Can you understand me?"

If not having witnessed how Senel Clan and this person treated humans cruelly and mercilessly, Zhang Tie might have been cheated by this scene.

"If there's no war, this is indeed a good place. That's almost what

I want." Zhang Tie replied calmly.

"This war will not continue forever. This land will welcome the order of a new world."

"I agree. Demons and Senel Clan would be exterminated sooner or later. I really expect for that world and order." Zhang Tie smiled.

Scala watched Zhang Tie with a solemn look. However, he didn't lose his temper; instead, he responded with a smile, "Would you like to take a look with me at the outside of the city?"

"Look what?"

"Look at what you to see in Tokei City. Perhaps after visiting those objects, you would change your mind; and we will lay a foundation for further cooperation!"

"Wuh? Is that real? I really want to take a look! I cannot wait..." Zhang Tie smiled.

Scala revealed a smile too, "Fine, let's go there right now!"

At this moment, the two people were both smiling, which caused icy and silent war flames...

...

After a few minutes, Zhang Tie walked out of the manor and got on Scala's car. The car then drove out of the Tokei City.

Sitting in the car, Zhang Tie was glancing at this city being occupied by demons out of curiosity like unveiling an icy and mysterious yashmak...

Chapter 608: Order of Three-eye Association

If not observe carefully, it was hard to imagine that Tokei City had been occupied by demons.

As the capital of Titanic Duchy before, of course Tokei City was very prosperous. At least in Zhang Tie's eyes, this city was much more prosperous than Blackhot City. The city streets were very broad; additionally, the buildings on both sides of the streets were very tidy and distinctive. Sculptures could be seen everywhere in the city.

It was about 3 pm, the most boisterous time in this city. Both sides of the city streets were crowded with people like that in other human cities.

The scene in front of his eyes shocked Zhang Tie very much for a second; however, Zhang Tie instantly found that this city was abnormal. Although there were many people on the streets, they were too quiet. Besides footsteps of passers-by on the streets, Zhang Tie, in the car, almost could not hear any other sound. Zhang Tie found that those passers-by even tried their best to tread softly. The quiet scene formed a sharp contrast with the bustling crowd, making Zhang Tie feel terrifying.

Besides being quiet, Zhang Tie even found that above 90% of passers-by on both sides of the streets were walking on the leftmost side of the sidewalk. He could barely see anybody go in a direction not allowed by traffic regulations. Even some places on the sidewalks and the roads were spacious, everyone was still walking on the leftmost side, although it was already too crowded.

In the crowd on the leftmost side of roads, Zhang Tie saw a yellow symbol like armband or breastplate on their arms. There was a yellow three-eye image on that symbol.

However, a few people who could walk freely on the right side of sidewalk were also wearing a symbol on their arms. There was a blue three-eye image on the symbol.

Those who wore blue symbols were all walking with a proud look. Some of them were even followed by a team of fully-armored soldiers. It seemed that they were patrolling on the streets.

There were very few vehicles on the roads, carriages or cars, making the roads very spacious. In some crosses or intersections, at the sight of Zhang Tie's car, those passers-by would stop on the roadsides. They didn't continue until the vehicle was dozens of meters away after passing the crosses or intersections.

The roads were too clean. After over 10 minutes' travel in the car, Zhang Tie didn't see anyone clean the roads at all. However, he didn't see any waste on the roads, even litters or wasted packages. That was amazing.

"What do you think about this city compared to those human cities?" Scala asked Zhang Tie.

As Zhang Tie's physical and spiritual abilities had been sealed, Scala was not worried that Zhang Tie would make any trouble on the road. Therefore, he just sat in the same car with Zhang Tie.

"It's a bit out of imagination!" Zhang Tie replied honestly, "The streets here are very clean. The passers-by have a strong sense of order!"

Scala revealed a proud smile, "This is the new world order that we're pursuing. In such a new order, humans will not be exterminated. Everyone is carrying their own responsibilities. Everything is running perfectly. We will help humans correct their shortcomings and castrate the evil traits in their personalities. Don't you think the current Tokei City is nice? Have you seen any human city cleaner, tidier and more orderly than this city across Blackson Humans Corridor? There's no waste, no thief, no traffic police in this city. Don't you think it's more civilized than other

human cities?"

"It's indeed very clean and tidy here. However, I find it is as icy and lifeless as gears. I want to know how a person would be punished if he threw a piece of litter on the street?" Zhang Tie asked calmly.

Scala glittered his eyes, "If someone throws litter on the street or doesn't follow traffic rules, we will turn that person into a demonized puppet. After that, he will know what is order."

"People would die miserably just because of dropping a litter or going the wrong way?" Zhang Tie stared at Scala with a scrupulous look, "This is how you help humans correct their shortcomings and castrate the evil traits in their nature?"

"Right!" Scala confessed frankly, "Humans are born to succumb to fear and power. We turn them into civilized ones and have them abandon the evil and ugly traits in their nature through threat and power. Is there any problem? Although it sounds brutal, as long as habits are formed, such a social structure will have an extremely high efficiency. Additionally, it could exterminate unfairness to the utmost. Isn't this what most of the people pursue for?"

"Do you think they are still humans in this system? Is there any difference between them and animals or machines?"

"That's where humans' suffering comes from. They are always pursuing what doesn't belong to them. If one day, all the cities in the world are like Tokei City; if everyone is educated to be docile since they are born and worships us like worshiping the God, if everyone treats it gloriously, happily and honorably to be slaves by sacrificing themselves for us, don't you think it is nice?" Scala smiled, "After we win this war, we only need 50-100 years, namely 2-3 generations, to accomplish brainwashing for all the humans. We will have them forget their own history and everything about humans' past and live as how we design for them full of gratitude. They will even desire for maintaining this system. This is actually

not hard to make. On how to rule humans, we're more experienced than humans!"

"Can you do that? Compared to other continents, Blackson Humans Corridor is just a tidy, remote place. Do you think that you're qualified to be proud only after conquering some human countries here?" Zhang Tie sniggered.

"You will see it very soon!" Scala didn't want to make any explanation. Instead, he moved his eyes to the place before the car. Following his eyes, Zhang Tie saw a pyramid-sized flesh mountain which was covered with honeycombs...

The car soon arrived outside Tokei City and was close to those terrifying, huge pyramid-sized monsters.

In Tokei City, Zhang Tie felt a brutal order; however, outside the city, Zhang Tie felt as terrifying as in the hell.

He saw a large area of concentration camps being surrounded with wires on both sides of the roads outside the city, where gathered numerous humans. Great batches of demonized puppets were wandering nearby the wires. Most of the wires had been tinted weird dark brown with fresh blood. Many humans' skulls were hanging on the wires, making it more terrifying...

When they passed by a concentration camp, Zhang Tie saw some people climbing out of the wires although a lot of wounds had been caused. With fresh blood all over, he was screaming loudly because of fear. However, in a split second, before the car rushed over there, a team of demonized puppets had already arrived there and pressed him on the roadsides as they started to gnaw him like wild beasts.

After a few seconds, Zhang Tie saw a large area of fresh blood and that person's scattered body parts over the ground. Some demonized puppets who were chewing something with bloody mouths even turned around and stared at Zhang Tie with grim looks as they uttered muffled roars twice.

After passing by large areas of concentration camps, Zhang Tie saw an endless military camp of demonized puppets in the wild. He was really shocked by the population of demonized puppets. They were everywhere in the military camp. Only after a glance, Zhang Tie estimated that there were at least 2 million demonized puppets over there. There were many more that he could not see...

The car parked. There was a pyramid-sized flesh mountain hundreds of meters ahead of the car. Within dozens of kilometers behind the flesh mountain, there were another dozens of flesh mountains...

Needless to say, Zhang Tie opened the door and got off the car.

The moment he got off the car had he smelled a stimulative stink, which came from the flesh mountain ahead of him. It smelt like a dead fish being dried in the sunshine, almost causing Zhang Tie vomit.

As it was daytime and he was so near, Zhang Tie finally saw clearly this object in front of him.

Under the sunlight, the flesh mountain in front of Zhang Tie was shining smooth luster, which told Zhang Tie that object was very wet on its surface. It was like a catfish being scooped out of the water. As it was too huge, Zhang Tie had to raise his head.

Zhang Tie saw a thin layer outside the honeycombs constantly breaking while some red-brown fluid kept running out of the cavities. Before all the fluid ran out of the cavities, demonized puppets being covered with maroon liquid mucus had already drilled out of those cavities naked one after another as they uttered shrill roars...

However, after some thin layers were broken, what drilled out of cavities along with those maroon liquid were rotten, twisted corpses which didn't make any response at all. The moment those corpses slid out of those cavities like wastes being dumped, the flesh mountain had already stretched out some disgusting huge

mouth-parts which were like sausages and sucked them back.

There was a huge wiggly, bloody mouth which looked like the entrance of grave below the flesh mountain. Numerous people were queuing up and crying as they were thrown into the hell-like huge mouth by a lot of demonized puppets...

When a new demonized puppet was produced in a honeycomb-sized cavity on the flesh mountain, a person would be thrown into the wiggly, huge mouth.

This flesh mountain was more like a living being arsenal being used to produce demonized puppets by demons.

Zhang Tie's soul was shocked as he saw those people struggling to resist from being thrown into the huge, wiggly mouth with heart-wrenching cries. Some of them could only watch their relatives being swallowed by that flesh mountain. Zhang Tie's eyes turned red as he dropped off tears.

"This is the evolutionary form of the parent puppet worm. We named it gravetower demon. Compared to parent puppet worm, it could not move; however, it had a great productivity. After entering it, a person would be turned into a demonized puppet which could fight alone after 12 days. A mature gravetower demon has over 16,000 cavities. It could produce over 1,000 demonized puppets a day on average and provide us with demonized puppets constantly. Now, we've already produced over 10 million demonized puppets. Additionally, we are producing over 30,000 demonized puppets a day. Soon, we will be able to break the human defense line in Selnes using the demonized puppets corps. It won't work no matter how many alchemists' bombs do the allied human forces have. This object could exterminate humans at the cost of humans. Do you still think that the allied human forces could win?" Scala asked Zhang Tie with a proud look.

"F*ck you!" Zhang Tie roared as he stabbed towards Scala at once.

It was a silver knife which was used to open envelops from the

study room of the manor. Its blade was only as long as 8 cm which was not sharp. However, this was the most powerful weapon that Zhang Tie had at this moment.

Zhang Tie really could not stand it anymore. If not his battle strength was sealed, even if he was almost dead, Zhang Tie would also struggle to bite off a mouth of flesh from this b*stard of Three-eye Association.

"Although I might be killed, so what? I have to fight for humans! You b*stard!"

Zhang Tie showed his dauntless personality at once. He rapidly stabbed towards Scala's throat regardless of defense at all.

A knife was useful only when it attacked the fatal place.

Scala just stared at Zhang Tie with a contemptuous look. Before he defended, a guard on his side had already stretched out his hand and boomed Zhang Tie over 10 m away...

Chapter 609: The Trick of Senel Clan

Spitting out blood, Zhang Tie picked himself up from the ground. After that, he grabbed that knife and rushed towards Scala once again; however, he was sent flying backward for the second time...

After repeating this process four times, even Scala became moved. After beating down Zhang Tie for the fourth time, Scala came to Zhang Tie's side. After squatting down, he easily grabbed away the knife from Zhang Tie's hand.

"You are really strike-resistant. I admire about your braveness. However, it is not worth it for you to do that only for those pariahs. I've not imagined that Selnes Eagle is a hot-blood youth, ho...ho..." Scala rubbed the knife into silver powders with his hand and have them fall down and blown away by the wind.

Panting, Zhang Tie watched Scala who was squatting in front of him. With the azure sky as the background, Scala looked a bit blurry. Zhang Tie could not identify whether he was happy or furious.

After being struck heavily a few times, although it was not fatal, Zhang Tie still felt that all of his bones were going to collapse. He didn't even have the strength to pick himself up from the ground.

The guard beside Scala was also a LV 10 strong fighter, who clearly knew how to abolish one's ability to fight on the premise of keeping him alive. It was already out of their imaginations that Zhang Tie could repeat the same process four times.

"No matter what you want from me, I could only tell you, don't dream about that, motherf*cker, peh..." Although being in a dilemma, lying on the ground, Zhang Tie still remained a defiant ridicule. He then spat a mouth of bloody saliva on Scala's face, "This father has chopped off numerous demons' heads. I'm not afraid of death at all. I've not done anything regretful since I was born. If you want to kill me, just do it."

After moping off the bloody saliva from his face, Scala stood up without losing his temper. Instead, he just watched Zhang Tie, "I thought you were a smart guy; I've not imagined that you're as same as those pariahs. I brought you here to let you know that humans have no bright future. Our gravetower demons have covered all the countries in the farther places in the north. Our demonized puppets corps are expanding at an unimaginable speed every day. After a few days, demonized puppets corps will swallow all the human troops like the swarm of locusts. If you stand on our side, you will also be the owner of a new world in the future!"

Zhang Tie struggled to sit up before picking himself up from the ground in a groggy way. After moping off the blood stains from his mouth corners, Zhang Tie kept his shoulder square and watched Scala, "Demonized puppets could only consume the low-end power of humans. Even if you have enough demonized puppets, you only have a temporary advantage. Additionally, as humans are strengthening their defenses and clearing their fields, you could have fewer demonized puppets. Even though you have collapsed this continent, it doesn't indicate anything. Because it's just a beginning. It will not be able to determine the result of this war. Don't forget about the powerful Chinese Clan and Taixia Country which is composed of powerful Chinese in the Eastern Continent..."

"You're right. It indeed is just a beginning. However, a good beginning indicates a half success. Chinese and Taixia Country are indeed powerful; however, do you think that we're displaying all of our power here? In a few years, the war flames will reach Eastern Continent. By then, you will see who's the most powerful."

Zhang Tie burst out into laughter, "Hahaha, will I still be alive at that moment? Do you think that I will believe in the words of Senel Clan. You can use such words to cheat kids, but not me."

"As long as you submit in the recipe of all-purpose medicament, we could keep you alive. In the future, you can get everything you

want, regardless of wealth, social status, women or power. You can become the owner of the new world in the future together with us. If you agree, the animosity between you and Senel Clan would be cleared off." Scala finally revealed his purpose.

Zhang Tie sneered...

Zhang Tie didn't feel amazed about Scala's words. When he woke up this morning, Zhang Tie had been thinking about why would Senel Clan treat him so well. He finally got two answers, all-purpose medicament and his status as Selnes Eagle.

"Zhen Clan have already known that I could produce all-purpose medicament. Perhaps, these b*stards of Three-eye Association knew this information through their own channels. It's not weird at all. Additionally, after so many years, it's hard to say whether these false messages that Huaiyuan Palace had released so as to cover his status as the producer of all-purpose medicament are still effective. Furthermore, whether can I survive on if I submit in the recipe of all-purpose medicament? Although Scala tries to imply me that they will promise me a nice life if I tell them the recipe, if I really believed so, I would be an idiot."

Scala's trick had long been used by Donder, that cunning fattie. It's a very smart communicative skill. Before tossing out the real topic, the opponent would mislead you to the direction that he hoped. From the beginning, Scala, or the entire Senel Clan had misled Zhang Tie that if he agreed to cooperate with them, he would survive on. They expected to crack down Zhang Tie's will to resist and have Zhang Tie submit in what they wanted.

Zhang Tie was sure that he would die for sure as long as Senel Clan got the recipe of all-purpose medicament. Three-eye Association's credit was only effective to its own members. They had been used to reach their targets in terms of cheats and threats. This had long been proved in the history.

Therefore, for public benefits or selfish reasons, Zhang Tie would

never submit the recipe of all-purpose medicament. Additionally, the recipe of all-purpose medicament really contained too many secrets. Therefore, Zhang Tie would never reveal it to these b*stards of Three-eye Association.

Seeing Zhang Tie being so decisive, Scala didn't say anything; he just waved his hand and had a guard take Zhang Tie away, "Perhaps, you will realize that it's the wisest way to cooperate with us in a few days!"

Gritting his teeth tightly, Zhang Tie didn't say anything...

...

Zhang Tie was then put under the house arrest of that manor for two days, during which period, nobody came here to ask about his opinion. Zhang Tie didn't know what trick those b*stards of Senel Clan played until the 3rd day...

Chapter 610: Being Framed

What was in front of Zhang Tie was a colorful dodger. On the top of that dodger was a shocking title—"Zhang Tie, Selnes Eagle Surrenders to the Holy Clan and persuades the allied human forces to give up resistance".

Below that shocking title was the introduction of Zhang Tie's event on surrendering to the demons along with some photos.

The introduction was wholly bullshit; however, the photos were real.

In the first photo, Zhang Tie was wearing a suit of brilliant clothes and sat in the same car with Scala.

In the second photo, Zhang Tie was standing on Scala's side and pointing at the distance.

The third photo was the distribution diagram of the allied human forces' defense line in Selnes Theater of Operations.

In the first two photos, Zhang Tie didn't look like being forced at all due to the angle of the photographer. On the contrary, he looked intimate to Scala. Especially in the 2nd photo, standing together with Scala, Zhang Tie was watching the gravetower demons. The blurry background of the 3rd photo was that those human captives were queuing up to be swallowed by the gravetower demons in a miserable way. That photo reminded readers that Zhang Tie was like a leader of demons like Scala, which formed a sharp contrast with those miserable human captives.

To be honest, although Zhang Tie had stayed in Selnes Theater of Operations for such a long time, he had not seen the distribution diagram of the allied human forces' defense line so far; because it was classified. However, there was such a line "This distribution diagram of the allied human forces' defense line is what Zhang Tie

gifts to the Holy Clan." in the remark of the third photo.

As Zhang Tie's battle strength was sealed and his ring of consciousness had already been taken away by Senel Clan, Zhang Tie didn't know that someone was stealthily taking photos of him using the telephoto lens from afar. The photo was real; however, under the fake background and introduction, it would easily arouse misunderstanding to others.

"What's that for?" Zhang Tie asked Scala icily.

"Yesterday, our wing demons troop had already distributed 300,000 dodgers like this across the Selnes Theater of Operations. Now, almost all the human soldiers in the entire Selnes Theater of Operations have already known that you've surrendered to us!" Scala explained casually with a smile, "Therefore, you're not their idol anymore; instead, you've become a traitor being sworn by every human!"

Eyes turning red, Zhang Tie wanted to spring up; however, he was pressed forcefully back onto the chair and couldn't move at all.

Zhang Tie understood that Senel Clan had been planning this trick since the beginning. Both the recipe of all-purpose medicament and his status as Selnes Eagle were useful for Senel Clan. These b*stards had been thinking about making full use of Zhang Tie since they caught him.

—Needless to say, besides the first two photos, the diagram must be stolen away from the allied human forces by Three-eye Association's lackeys. However, Senel Clan used it to frame him. Zhang Tie didn't even have a chance to explain it at this moment.

Zhang Tie could imagine how those average soldiers in the defense zone of the allied human forces would respond when they saw these dodgers. The morale of the entire allied human forces would be severely weakened. When their idol and hero betrayed them in the most unacceptable manner, they would be disappointed, furious, frustrated and fully pessimistic about the

future. They would further doubt the meaning of staying in Selnes Theater of Operations, even shake their battle will.

This was indeed a vicious trick, which both prevented him from returning to the allied human forces and gave a heavy blow to the allied human forces.

"Your trick will not come true. Such an insidious pattern could not cheat everyone!" Zhang Tie glared at Scala.

"Ha...ha..." Scala burst out into laughter, "Why would we have to cheat everyone. We only need half, one-third, even one-fourth of those average soldiers among the allied human forces to believe in it. If some people believed in it, and some people did not, they would have utterly different opinions and attitudes; thus, they would have conflicts and arguments with each other; the morale of the allied human forces would be weakened. As a result, they would not unite with each other tightly. That's what we want!"

Zhang Tie knew that these b*stards of Three-eye Association had been using these methods to alienate and estrange humans from thousands of years. Although the fact was unacceptable, Zhang Tie had to admit that these sc*mbags were really good at playing tricks.

Knowing that it was useless no matter how much he argued at this moment, Zhang Tie directly kept his mouth closed.

Scala watched Zhang Tie as he seemed knowing what Zhang Tie was thinking about. He then revealed a smile, "Even if you could return to the camp and base of the allied human forces, do you know what's waiting for you? You're facing the cruelest interrogation. Based on the experiences in the former two holy wars, as long as you encounter such an interrogation, your future on humans' side would come to an end, no matter what the result of the interrogation was. You would have to hide yourself forever or prove that you're loyal to humans on the battlefield at the cost of your life. Which would you rather choose?"

"Are you saying that I have no other choices but to surrender to you?" Zhang Tie asked icily.

"Right. That's our intention. After figuring out your current situation, I think you will make a wiser choice!" Scala put it straightforwardly, "You're just 20 years old. It's a very young age. You have not started your real social life yet. Wealth, power and beauties are all waiting for you. Are you going to give up all of these? The winner of this war is going to be us. As long as you surrender to us, you could even join Three-eye Association and become one of us. After this war, you can also be an owner of this new world. Don't you think it's good?"

Zhang Tie suddenly burst out into laughter, "I have to admit that you're really great. Your tricks are indeed impossible to guard against. However, you missed one point. You don't know what I want and care about at all. Do you think that I care about losing the honor of Selnes Eagle? Forget about that. That honor is nothing serious to me. As long as those people who care about me don't believe in your words, I don't care what other people think about me. This father is not the God, I don't need to concern about so many things."

"The honor of Selnes Eagle won't influence me at all. What you've framed me will not wound me either. I only need to follow my heart. As to my future, I don't need to follow others' order even in Huaiyuan Palace, not to mention other places; if I could really leave out of here, do you think that I would care about that motherf*cking future being rewarded by you or hide myself? Do you think that I will fall into your trap once again by attending the motherf*cking interrogation? By doing this, even if you completely separate me from the allied human forces, you will not cause any mental burden to me at all. Later on, I will still do whatever I want. Even if I recover my freedom, I won't prepare to go back to the allied human forces; neither would I worry about being framed by those b*stards in the allied human forces."

Just like how Zhang Tie had not imagined how they played those tricks, it was also out of Scala's imagination that Zhang Tie, at the age of only 20 could have such a transcendental thought.

In the eyes of Senel Clan, Zhang Tie was qualified as an elite with such a great honor at such a young age. People at such age would usually care most about honor, power and social status. However, Zhang Tie didn't care about that at all.

Actually, Zhang Tie was not transcendental; instead, he could be easily satisfied. When he was a teenager, he only dreamed of enjoying life while lying on gold coins, being accompanied by some beauties. He pursued for power; however, he was not immersed in it. If Zhang Tie was fascinated by power and social status, he should be in Ice and Snow Wilderness, instead of Selnes Theater of Operations.

Therefore, Scala's lure didn't affect Zhang Tie at all. "After all, I would not lack money by selling all-purpose medicament if I could leave out of here. As Linda, Beverly and Fiona had been pregnant, they would follow me for the rest of their lives. Perhaps, I could marry some more in the future. With enough beauties on my side, even if I have a very bad luck in the future, I would go to Eastern Continent and enjoy my life. Like what they always say, I would survive and die together with the other humans there. That life is rightly what I dream for. I don't care about motherf*cking future and social status at all."

"As I'm innocent, I don't care how destructive was Senel Clan's trick to the allied human forces. This is a war, a holy war between humans and demons. Both parties are doing their best to destroy the opponent; I don't need to feel guilty for the opponent's deeds. Additionally, I am a victim of the trick and have already made all my efforts for the allied human forces. Finally, I'm even framed by those b*stards of Three-eye Association in the management of the allied human forces. I don't have any moral burden at all..."

"If the allied human forces were defeated, it'd have nothing to do

with me. In the words of Donder, it's the 'common undertaking' of the allied human forces."

After thinking through it, Zhang Tie became relaxed, instead of being angry anymore. He then stared at Scala like watching an idiot.

This is a real wrestle between him and Senel Clan. Zhang Tie knew that if he wanted to survive on, he could not be negative; instead, he had to take the priority. Although it was out of blades and blood, it was testing his will, intelligence, decisiveness and courage. If he was defeated on any of the above 4 aspects, he would die.

After hearing Zhang Tie's words and seeing Zhang Tie's strange smile, Scala's look gradually turned icy...

Chapter 611: Tenacious Bones

Zhang Tie sensed Scala's fury from his icy eyes. However, he became more relaxed.

"Do you think that we dare not kill you?" Scala threatened Zhang Tie.

"Do you think that I expect to survive here?" Zhang Tie glared at Scala, "The only purpose for you to keep me alive is that you still want something from me; you want to use me to weaken the morale of the allied human forces. Will you keep me alive when you reach your target?"

"It seems that you understand everything!"

"I've witnessed many life and death situations; everyone will die, including me!" Zhang Tie replied calmly.

"How do you feel about your current life?" Scala changed his tone.

"Not bad. I have food and drinks here. I also have servants. Very few captives could enjoy such a special treatment!"

"Yup. Precisely, you're the first captive who could enjoy such a special treatment. At this moment, such a life in Tokei City is almost like living in paradise. It seems that good living conditions couldn't move you. Meanwhile, you have some misunderstandings about Senel Clan as you start to doubt our abilities. Usually, we will use another set of methods to open the mouth of the captives and make them docile to us. Do you want a try?" Scala revealed a frightening look.

"Pleasure!" Zhang Tie stared at Scala with crossed arms as he raised his mouth corners, revealing a sarcastic look.

Scala suddenly launched an attack as fast as a lightning bolt. Although they were 2 m away from each other, Scala instantly pointed at Zhang Tie's left chest with one finger.

Even If Zhang Tie's battle strength was not sealed, he still could not easily dodge away from such a super powerhouse's attack in such a short distance.

In a split second, Zhang Tie had sensed that the icy battle qi of Scala stabbed in his body through his left chest. Soon after that, the battle qi started to shoot around in his body like disordered icy blades...

Zhang Tie's face turned pale. In a minute, Zhang Tie's face had been covered with a thin layer of frost while blood ran out of his nostrils, being surrounded by icy, white vapor.

Scala watched Zhang Tie with a cruel look as his finger still rested on Zhang Tie's body, "How do you feel now?"

"Cool...very cool...like...like eating ice cream..." Due to the great pain, Zhang Tie's body quivered as he forced a smile on his face which was covered with a layer of white frost, "That's all you Senel...Clan could do?"

Scala frowned as Zhang Tie's tenacity was out of his imagination. At this moment, Zhang Tie's suffering was very clear. The Icestar battle qi of Senel Clan could cause a LV 12 pain in one's body. It was almost as painful as delivering a baby. He could never imagine that Zhang Tie could bear it.

"Do you want something sharper? Fine, I will show you!"

As Scala said this, his eyes revealed cold lights. Meanwhile, the battle qi that raged in his body shrunk into a bundle of needles which were as fine as ox's hair and ferociously stabbed into Zhang Tie's heart.

"...cool..." Zhang Tie squeezed out this word as he glared at Scala with bloodshot eyes. His face then turned red. In less than 10 seconds, he sprouted out of a mouth of blood. Closely after that, he fell backward and passed out.

Some of Zhang Tie's blood fell on the table; some on Scala's

clothes. Reeking cold vapor, they froze very soon.

After standing up, Scala shook those ice dregs off his clothes. After that, he threw a cold glance at Zhang Tie who was lying on the ground as he clapped his hands.

After hearing the clapping sound, Navas, the steward of this manor instantly drilled in the door like an old jackal who had a sensitive smell. At the sight of Zhang Tie lying on the ground, Navas looked very happy as he bowed towards Scala respectfully, "Young master."

"This person's honeymoon in Tokei City has come to an end. He's yours. Keep him alive. You know I want from him!"

Licking his lips, Navas threw another vicious glance at Zhang Tie, "The recipe of all-purpose medicament, I know it. Erm...some methods are very effective. However, they might cause severe damages to his body, erm..."

"I've told you. Just keep him alive. Don't let him lose his hope for living. This man is very tenacious. He's very important. As he killed a member of Senel Clan, he could only be executed by Senel Clan. Am I clear?"

"Clear!"

"We cannot stay here anymore. In the evening, I will dispatch someone to escort him together with you to Ironedge Castle. It's much safer over there!"

"Ah, young master, do you mean someone would come here to save him?"

"There's a message from the allied human forces. The alliance command has already been discussing the plan to save him. Although they've not passed the plan, we have to strengthen protective measures. As this person is a hero of the allied human forces, they would come here to save him for sure. After escorting him away, make some arrangements here, keep everything

running as normal as usual like he is still here. We should set a trap here. If some people really came here to save him, we would capture them all!"

"Young master, don't worry. If he really exposes something about the recipe, I will tell you right away. Without your consent, I would never expose any secret to anybody, even Ruben. " After hearing that Scala's order, Navas immediately expressed his loyalty.

Scala nodded satisfactorily as he praised inside, "What a shrewd old man!"

"Hmm, he's yours!"

"Navas will never disappoint you, young master!"

"Hope so..."

...

After Scala left, Navas watched Zhang Tie who was in a deep coma on the ground as he couldn't stand to grin hideously. He squatted down and patted Zhang Tie's icy face, "Brat, I will treat you well!"

...

Zhang Tie didn't remember when he was in the coma like this the last time. Neither did he know how long he had been in the coma. With a sharp icy sense, Zhang Tie quivered as he opened his eyes once again.

This time, he didn't see that luxurious bedroom and those beautiful female servants who called him master anymore; instead, he saw a furnace about 8 m away in front of him.

That furnace was about 1 m in height. The coals inside the furnace were glowing, making its surroundings red. In the beating flames, Zhang Tie saw all sorts of grim instruments of torture, because of which, the entire room was filled with a gloomy qi.

At this moment, water flew off Zhang Tie's hair one drop after another. Zhang Tie knew that he was awakened by water. He found that he was fixed on a hob. As a result, he could not move his limbs. He was a bit weaker as he was stripped to the waist.

The icy water flew onto the ground along Zhang Tie's feet, making Zhang Tie quiver once again; meanwhile, he remembered the aggressive battle qi of Scala in his body. Until then, Zhang Tie's heart still ached, "F*ck, hope it could bring me an iron-body fruit."

After realizing his current situation, Zhang Tie forced a bitter smile, "It seems that the Senel Clan finally revealed their inner true side. Are they going to execute penalty on me? Is this the psycho war of those b*stards? What a sharp difference in treatment!"

"Brat, you are awake?" Navas walked in front of Zhang Tie with a gloomy face as he looked pleasant and ferocious, "You finally fell in my hand". With a kurbash in hand, he supported Zhang Tie's chin with the handle of the kurbash.

"I planned to sleep for a long while, but you woke me up!" Zhang Tie revealed a smile, "What? Have you changed the room for me? The method that you used to wake me up is really special. Is there also a new room service? Hmm, very special morning call..."

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Navas' eye corners jumped a couple of times. After that, he gave Zhang Tie a sharp smack, "Brat, you're still tenacious, hope you can stick to it after a short while!"

"Your massage skill is really harsh!" Zhang Tie twisted his neck as he turned his face back. At the same time, he swam his tongue towards one cheek inside his oral cavity. Soon after that, he spat out a mouth of bloody saliva before smiling like nothing had happened, "Actually, the most tenacious part of me is not my mouth, but my bones. After a while, you can give me a good massage service on my bones. If you do it well, I might reward you some copper coins!"

"Wuh, really?" Navas turned around with an insidious smile. He took out of a triangle-headed hot-red brand iron from the furnace. When the brand iron was still over 10 cm away from Zhang Tie, Zhang Tie had already felt the hot waves, "I'm sorry to make you wet just now. I'm afraid that you're a bit cold; how about warming you up..."

"It seems that the room service is really well-matched, I can have a free warm-up!" Zhang Tie replied with a smile...

Navas revealed an insidious smile as the hot-red brand iron was pressed onto Zhang Tie's chest forcefully.

With a scorching smell, Navas forcefully pressed the handle of the brand iron as he stared at Zhang Tie's look...

Zhang Tie quivered all over as the veins on his forehead bulged. He gritted his teeth silently while his sweat rolled off his forehead like water drops...

1 minute later, when the color of the brand iron became fully dark, Navas took the brand iron away from Zhang Tie, "How about it, brat, what else do you want to say?"

Lowering his head, Zhang Tie watched that scorched skin as he raised his head and revealed a faint smile, "I've...not imagined that...this room...could also provide tattoo service...can...can you give me a try...on my right side? Symmetric triangle patterns...would look better..."

Navas' pleasant look froze at once...

Chapter 612: Soul-based Animal Controlling Skill

Zhang Tie was locked in a narrow cell alone. The prison cell was close to the torture chamber. Zhang Tie could only judge time through the sunlight penetrating through the fist-sized windows on the shared wall of the prison cell and the torture chamber.

Besides Zhang Tie, there were only Navas and some jailers who were responsible for torturing him everyday in the two rooms. Zhang Tie didn't know exactly where he was. He only knew that this place ought to be nearby Tokei City.

Only after 3 days, Zhang Tie had been tortured too much. He would be in the coma several times a day. Besides, 3 fingers were broken, 4 toenails were pulled out; furthermore, the bones on his left shin was broken into many pieces by an instrument called grinding rod.

Anybody else, if being tortured in this way, had long been collapsed, except for Zhang Tie.

Senel Clan wanted the recipe of all-purpose medicament. Zhang Tie knew that he was doomed to die as long as he exposed his secret.

...

On the 4th day, Navas inserted hot-red steel needles into Zhang Tie's ten fingernails, causing Zhang Tie quiver all over. Due to extreme pain, Zhang Tie uttered a shriek before passing out.

Before passing out, Zhang Tie remembered that some sunlight penetrated through an air vent on the wall of the torture chamber. When he was woken up by a basin of water, he saw no sunlight from the same air vent anymore.

Zhang Tie didn't know how long had he been in the coma. He only knew that it ought to be dark outside. His 10 fingers were too

painful that it even became numb. He felt that those fingers were not his.

"You really have tenacious bones!" Navas sneered as he walked in front of Zhang Tie. In front of the glow of the furnace, his face became as grim as that of the ghost. He clutched Zhang Tie's hair brutally, "How about that? What else do you want to say? We've got something more funny for you!"

"F*ck..you!" Zhang Tie said weakly as he opened his eyes. At this moment, Navas' look had become blurry and trembling in Zhang Tie's eyes.

Navas replied with a sneer. After putting down Zhang Tie's hair, he turned around and looked at a jailer who was immersing kurbash into the water, "Have you added salt?"

"Not yet..."

"Idiot. His wounds are just going to form scars, if we add some salt to the water and dip it with kurbash, it would have a better effect. He would feel getting burned all over. Nobody could stand that, hurry!"

The jailer then went away to take salt. He came back very soon with a bag of salt. After pouring it into the bucket, he started to mix it with kurbash.

After a few minutes, the jailer kept slashing Zhang Tie so forcefully that he even sweated profusely, causing Zhang Tie's blood and flesh to fly in all directions. However, Zhang Tie remained silent. In the end, even the jailer was too tired to move. Navas then ordered the jailer to check Zhang Tie's physical situation. He told the jailer to pour some saline water and medicament into Zhang Tie's mouth and throw Zhang Tie back into the cell. One set of alloy shackles were added to Zhang Tie's neck. In order to restrict Zhang Tie's ability to move, an iron chain on the shackles was fixed onto a wall of the cell.

"Let's call it an end today. We will continue tomorrow. This brat is really strike-resistant. It's been 4 days. I really have not seen a guy who could bear being beaten for above 3 days." Navas grumbled to the jailer.

With a sound 'bang', the door of the cell was locked from outside. Closely after that, the door of the torture chamber was also locked, leaving Zhang Tie alone in the cell.

After a long while, Zhang Tie, lying on the ground, opened his eyes as he felt being gradually recovering.

In the evening, the preliminary recovery body started to take effect. As a result, Zhang Tie could recover in a faster speed. This was also the main reason that Zhang Tie could stand these days' torture. Senel Clan sealed his surging points; however, they could not seal his preliminary recovery body. Because preliminary recovery body had become his instinct.

Lying on the ground, facing down, Zhang Tie was too weak to pick himself up. He could only wait until he gradually recovered a bit aura value. In order to keep his ability to recover or prevent him from being starved to death, Navas would pour some saline water and low-end nutrients into his mouth after each torture. Sometimes, he would throw some pieces of bread to him.

Face touching the icy ground, Zhang Tie suddenly saw a rat in front of him. It sniffed and shook its beard. It seemed that it was going to check Zhang Tie' situation. Perhaps it found that Zhang Tie was not eatable or sensed the existence of All-spirits Pagoda, it didn't bite Zhang Tie. Instead, it started to wander around the cell. Finally, it found breadcrumbs in a corner and started to enjoy it.

When the mouse was eating its supper, Zhang Tie suddenly felt the Shrine surging point gradually warming up. Only after 10 more minutes, the Shrine surging point seemingly had already broken a bind while an eccentric and relaxed feeling spread over Zhang Tie's body.

Zhang Tie knew that his Shrine surging point had already broken through the bind on him applied by the Senel Clan.

After breaking through the bind, the Shrine surging point brought a wholly new energy to Zhang Tie's body, making Zhang Tie feel like lighting his Shrine surging point and becoming a LV 1 newbie soldier from a commoner once again.

Although being a newbie soldier, the new ability was also very important to Zhang Tie.

The moment Zhang Tie wanted to support himself and pick himself up with his hands had his face turned pale. Due to the sharp pain from the 10 fingers, his forehead oozed sweat all over at once. As a result, he almost knelt down once again. Gritting his teeth, he supported his upper part of the body using his elbows and struggled to pick himself up. Finally, he threw his butts on the ground. The moment he leaned against the cold wall, the wounds on his back made him quiver all over. He then hurriedly kept his back away from the wall...

Zhang Tie painted the dirty air in the cell a few minutes. After the pains on his hands, shoulders and back relieved a bit, he closed his eyes as he started to check his conditions.

The Shrine surging point remained unchanged. In that surging point, the stick of spiritual feather being incarnated by the king roc's golden seed was still shining brilliantly, showing the supreme dignity of the emperor-level secret knowledge. It seemed not being influenced at all. The Shrine surging point was like a warm flame. When it emitted warm light in Zhang Tie's cold body, it brought limitless warmth and hope to Zhang Tie.

After the Shrine surging point broke through the bind, Zhang Tie found that the spiritual energy that had been frozen in his mind sea also became dynamic. Even the god's rune and the All-spirits Pagoda in his mind sea became more sensitive.

Zhang Tie ran his spiritual energy and instantly poured a lot of

all-purpose medicament into his mouth. After engulfing about four vials of all-purpose medicament, he finally stopped...

The moment the all-purpose medicament entered his stomach had its powerful effect started to exert.

The sense of hunger and cold gradually faded away. His pains also relieved greatly. The 10 fingers which had been heavily wounded also started to recover gradually like being soaked in a thermos flask.

Zhang Tie picked himself up once again. Although it was a bit difficult, he finally succeeded. He then touched that metal shackles over his neck and stretched the thick iron chain being linked to the shackles. After that, he tried to turn his head to the left and right.

"Heller, can I enter Castle of Black Iron now?" Zhang Tie asked Heller.

"No, that set of shackles and chain are like your clothes. They are closely linked to your body. If you want to enter Castle of Black Iron, you have to drag them in too. However, as they were fixed onto the wall, when you enter Castle of Black Iron, your neck would be broken!"

"D*mn it", Zhang Tie swore inside, "Those sc*mbags of Senel Clan. This father has been as same as commoners, they're still restricting my movement in the cell."

"Is there any method?"

"You could only open it by key or open it with a saw."

Zhang Tie ran his spiritual energy and had one small saw appear in his hand. After looking around, he found nobody was paying attention to him. Therefore, he nipped that saw with his hands and started to saw the chain on a hidden location while bearing the huge pains and discomfort.

However, the moment he started to saw it had he found the chain was made of a special alloy. It was far firmer than that he could

imagine. After over 10 minutes' work, he could not leave a mark on it. As his hands had just been heavily wounded, although he had drunk so much all-purpose medicament, the wounds could not recover so fast. As a result, Zhang Tie was covered with sweat all over as his face turned pale. Finally, his hands quivered uncontrollably. The saw dropped onto the ground, causing a light sound in the cell...

The rat who was eating breadcrumbs was startled greatly. It instantly sneaked into a dark corner, where there was a narrow entrance of a sewer.

After hearing the light sound, Zhang Tie realized that it would bring him a trouble. He hurriedly squatted down as he teleported that saw into Castle of Black Iron. Meanwhile, he pretended to lie on the ground due to heavy wounds.

As he had predicted, after a few seconds, the iron door of the torture chamber was opened from the outside. After hearing the footsteps, Zhang Tie knew that a jailer was entering. He seemed to check what happened inside after hearing the sound...

Zhang Tie pretended to twist his body painfully on the ground, causing a light sound using the chain.

"Jeff, what's wrong?" Someone shouted ambiguously outside the torture chamber as he was chewing something.

"Nothing, the brat moved, causing a sound of friction between the chain and the ground!" the person who had entered the cell replied.

"Don't make a fuss about that. The brat is under our eyes. He could never escape away from here. Hurry, come back. If the drinks and dishes were cold, it would not taste good!"

After mumbling some words, the guy called Jeff locked the door and left.

Zhang Tie judged that the person had walked away based on his

footsteps. Finally, he heard a bunch of keys being dropped on the table...

Right then, when the keys were dropped on the table, Zhang Tie suddenly became vacant as a whim occurred to his mind.

Zhang Tie became thrilled as he realized that it was his only chance to escape.

In such a situation, such a method deserved his attempt.

After a few minutes, Zhang Tie crossed his legs and sat down once again. After inhaling deeply, he kept his eyes focused on where the rat had disappeared as he made a hand gesture and started to mumble.

After a short while, the rat drilled out of the sewer in the dark corner and sneaked all the way to the front of Zhang Tie. Sitting still on the ground, it watched Zhang Tie in a cute way.

"Alright, so let it be a rat. Hope the secret skill of the Great Wilderness School could work."

Zhang Tie forced a bitter smile as he ran the All-spirits Pagoda in his mind sea. When he touched the rat's head, a Great Wildness Seal which represented the most powerful and effective contents of Great Wilderness Sutra and could control all the living beings below LV 1 fell on the rat's body.

In a split second, Zhang Tie felt something flying onto that rat from his body.

In the next second, Zhang Tie was so scared as he sprung up from the ground and uttered a sound, "zi..." Because, his soul had already left his own body.

In front of Zhang Tie was that extremely tall guy who was sitting still on the ground with crossed legs while being covered with wounds.

Even though Zhang Tie had looked into the mirror so many

times, he was still shocked by such an experience from such a visual angle.

"Am I dead?" Zhang Tie asked himself.

The moment he posed such a question had Zhang Tie realized that he was not dead; instead, he turned into that rat; precisely, his awareness and senses were transferred to that rat. At this moment, he could control the rat's thoughts and movements.

This was soul-based animal controlling skill, the most mysterious method of humans in the far-ancient times. The Great Wilderness School became prosperous and died in the Eastern Continent because of this skill. After understanding the principle, Zhang Tie became thrilled at once.

At this moment, if Zhang Tie could see the look of that rat, he would find that the rat was also surprised and shocked...

Chapter 613: Escape

In the world of rats, everything was full of curiosity for Zhang Tie. Everything became huge in Zhang Tie's eyes.

Zhang Tie realized that he could see clearly about 10 m. At this moment, he finally understood what was shortsighted. Comparatively, his smell and auditory sense became sharper. He could easily identify various odors and became sensitive to distant sounds. Additionally, Zhang Tie could sense that he had very sharp teeth and excellent climbing skills. He might even understand how rats communicate with each other.

Zhang Tie ran around his former body for a short while and glanced at his own body from all directions. That felt pretty odd. After being adapted to the incarnated body, Zhang Tie drilled out of the cell and ran towards the outside of the torture chamber.

The doors of the cell and the torture chamber were both composed of arm-thick steel bars. The gaps between steel bars could only hold one fist. However, the gaps were still too large for a rat to pass by.

When he passed by the gap on a door of the cell, Zhang Tie raised his head and felt that he was passing by a huge gateway.

After passing through two doors, Zhang Tie soon sneaked into the passageway outside the torture chamber.

Honestly, this was Zhang Tie's first time to enter that exclusive 'VIP suite'.

It seemed like being in a castle. The passageway was dim. The walls on both sides of the passageway were made of large blocks of rocks. There was only one dim kerosene lamp on one wall of the 5-6 m long passageway. There was a corner in front of the passageway, beside which was a room, which was a bit brighter. Although it was several meters away, Zhang Tie had already smelt

alcohol and cooked-meat and heard two people smacking their lips.

Zhang Tie ran over there along the high wall. When he came to the corner, he looked inside.

Two people were eating and drinking at a table 7-8 m away. As lackeys of Senel Clan, they had tortured Zhang Tie a lot these days.

Zhang Tie looked around this room and saw another table and two benches behind them. Additionally, there was a key hook on the wall, beside which were their hats and waistbands.

Although Zhang Tie could not see what was on the table, after combining with what he heard just now, he was sure that the keys were lying on the table at this moment.

Zhang Tie then waited there silently. After 20 minutes later, a guy finally burped and picked himself up as he staggered, "Jeff, you stay here till midnight. I will take a rest in the bedroom. Don't forget to wake me up after midnight. By the way, prepare some midnight snack for me..."

"Don't sleep like a dead pig like you were yesterday!"

"Don't worry. I drank less today. That brat is really strike-resistant. It's already 4 days; however, we still haven't got any information we need. D*mn it..."

"When we finish this job, we can play some bloody slaves. It was said there were a lot of female bloody slaves, many of which were young ladies and madams of former rich families. They would do everything to survive themselves. Even slaves are better than bloody slaves, heh...heh...if only we surrendered to Senel Clan earlier, we could at least have a better position and select bloody slaves for free..."

"Ha...ha..."

After uttering an evil laughter, that guy, who stood up, patted on Jeff's shoulder as he burped and left the room from another door. Jeff ate and drunk alone for a while. After emptying all the bottles

on the table, Jeff rocked the last bottle and mumbled a short while. After that, he bent over the table and started to snore.

Realizing that Jeff had fallen asleep, Zhang Tie rapidly rushed out of the corner and jumped onto that chair. After that, he easily climbed onto the highest point of the chair's back, from where he saw clearly the keys on the table.

The chair's back was about 30-40 cm away from the table. Zhang Tie accelerated on the chair's back and flew onto the table. He soon came to the side of the keys.

There were three keys, which matched the two doors and Zhang Tie's shackles.

Zhang Tie tightly bit the keys. Meanwhile, he adjusted his gestures by pressing the keys with his front paws. After confirming that he had bitten them firmly and wouldn't make any sound, Zhang Tie rapidly rushed to the end of the table and directly jumped onto the chair. After that, he jumped from the chair to the ground. Finally, he hurriedly rushed towards the cell. Before leaving here, he even turned around and watched Jeff who had been like a dead pig.

As the keys were lying horizontally in his mouth, they were blocked by the iron rails of the iron door of the torture chamber. Zhang Tie put down the keys. After that, he bit the keys vertically and dragged them in slightly. Finally, he came to the side of his own body and placed the keys on the ground.

Zhang Tie then opened his eyes as his consciousness returned to his own body.

He smiled as he touched that rat beside him. After that, he picked up those keys and inserted one of them into the keyhole of the shackles over his neck. With a cracking sound, the shackles were opened.

Zhang Tie put the shackles on the ground slightly before picking

himself up from the ground once again. After that, he walked to the door of the cell. Stretching his hand out of the gap on the cell's door, Zhang Tie opened the cell's door slightly and came into the torture chamber.

After opening three locks constantly, Zhang Tie came to the passageway outside the torture chamber.

With barefoot and upper body, Zhang Tie supported the walls using two hands as he dragged his broken foot towards the room at the corner, followed by that docile rat.

After entering the room, Zhang Tie immediately took out a dagger from Castle of Black Iron and came to the back of the guy who was sleeping like a dead pig on the table. Covering his mouth, Zhang Tie instantly stabbed into the b*stard's heart.

After twitching his body for a while, that b*stard was dead...

Zhang Tie loosened his grip and drew his dagger out of that b*stard's body. After wiping off the blade's blood on the guy's dead body, he limped towards the exit of this room...

There was a dim upward corridor outside this room. However, with the effect of Zhang Tie's dark vision, the dim corridor was as bright as daylight. It was over 30 m in length, on both sides of which were all dim kerosene lamps. There was another iron door at the end of the corridor, which was fully closed. It seemed like a huge steel plate. There was no gap on it. Whereas, there was a room in the middle of this corridor. The wooden door of the room was half covered while snoring sounds drifted out of the room.

Zhang Tie pushed open the wooden door and limped inside. After 20 seconds, he came out of the room with some fresh blood on the tip of his blade. However, no snoring sound drifted out of the room anymore.

Of course, Zhang Tie would not treat politely those lackeys who had surrendered to demons and tortured him these days. The only

thing that made Zhang Tie feel pitiful was that Navas was not inside.

Zhang Tie kept limping towards the end of the corridor. When he arrived at the iron door, he knew that Senel Clan really paid special attention to him; because this iron door could only be opened from outside.

Based on Zhang Tie's senses, there were 2 guards outside the iron door. As it was too late, most of the people had already fallen asleep, it was very quiet outside the iron door. Zhang Tie sensed that the two guards were both below LV 6.

Zhang Tie sensed that this door led to another passageway in the castle. This cell seemed to be in a hidden place in the castle. Besides himself, it seemed that nobody else was locked inside this castle.

Zhang Tie didn't hear any other prisoners' sounds these days. From the chat of the two jailers, Zhang Tie judged that this place might be outside the Tokei City. It was not a standard prison; instead, it was a castle, a real estate of Senel Clan. It was indeed a secret place to lock him up.

After coming to the side of the iron door, Zhang Tie knocked it. After a few seconds, he knocked it for the second time, which sounded a bit more urgent than that last time...

"Who's that?" a muffled sound drifted from outside.

Zhang Tie patted the door for the third time impatiently; meanwhile, his voice turned hoarse as he imitated that obscure drunken sound, "I want to see whether there's something to eat in the kitchen."

"Jeff and Benari? Foodie!" With this sound, the iron door was opened from outside. The moment the door was opened had the two guys been struck by Zhang Tie's binding chains.

Zhang Tie opened the door and walked out of that narrow passageway. It was indeed much spacious outside. This place led to

a tower in the castle. At this moment, there was nobody in the tower anymore. Zhang Tie could see the huge windows of the tower and Tokei City outside the windows.

He immediately killed the two guards...

"Now, I could easily enter Castle of Black Iron. Even though Senel members could come in here, they would find no trace at all. This is much better than disappearing in the cell. Additionally, they would not find my secret at all."

"The only problem at the moment is whether to kill Navas or enter Castle of Black Iron to recover my wounds."

After being hesitated for a short while, Zhang Tie watched his broken leg...

Right then, he heard loud explosions and saw bright flames from Tokei City in the far. As a result, this castle was shocked while many pitch-dark rooms turned bright.

Zhang Tie threw a glance at the flames in Tokei City. It might come from the manor where he was put under arrest several days ago. Zhang Tie's heart raced, "Who's that?"

At this moment, he heard footsteps from below the tower.

Zhang Tie gritted his teeth. Facing such an urgent event, he could not hesitate anymore. After having the rat jump onto his hand, Zhang Tie disappeared...

...

Two minutes later, Navas and a group of people arrived at where Zhang Tie disappeared. At the sight of the open iron door and the two dead guards lying on the ground, Navas changed his face at once as he hurriedly rushed inside with people.

Benari was dead on the bed; Jeff was dead at the table. All the door locks were in good condition. Given this clue, they knew they were all opened by keys.

"Hurry, report to young master Scala. Zhang Tie was robbed away from the Iron-edge Castle by a powerhouse of the allied human forces..." Navas roared anxiously.

In Navas' opinion, the powerhouse must be sneaking inside the castle from outside. After killing the two guards, he broke in and saved Zhang Tie out of here. Given such strict protective measures in Iron-edge Castle, Navas knew that the one who robbed Zhang Tie away must be a top powerhouse.

The moment he thought about the two corpses in the cell had Navas felt chilly inside, "If I were inside, I must have been killed by that human powerhouse like slaughtering a poultry."

...

At this moment, the neighborhood of the Sun Avenue in Tokei City had long become a fire sea and battlefield. Thousands of demonized puppets swarmed over there from all directions. When those demonized puppets crowded the Sun Avenue, a rainbow bolt penetrated through the flesh wall of demonized puppets, causing them explode like a bloody rain...

With this bolt, a 200-m long road was cleared.

With a furious look, Lan Yunxi held a portable small bow as she took out another small bolt.

"Yunxi, Zhang Tie is not in here. This is a trap. We have to go now. If not, we could not leave out of here anymore. There were two powerful qi, one from the north and another from the south. They will arrive here in a few minutes. By then, if you were wounded, I wouldn't know how to explain it to Zhang Clan and Lan Clan..." Standing on Lan Yunxi's side calmly, Lan elder casually waved his hand like sweeping pedals off the table, causing over 100 demonized puppets' heads explode...

Senel Clan planned to fish here; however, they had never imagined that they could attract here a tigress and a prehistorical

crocodile. After seeing that Lan elder easily exterminated a detachment of powerful bowmen nearby this place by casually waving his arm, nobody of Senel Clan dared come out at this moment.

For those members of Senel Clan, it was already a victory if they could drag on the two figures here until the arrival of demon fighters.

Biting her lips, Lan Yunxi shot out another rainbow bolt, causing numerous demonized puppets into a bloody rain.

After throwing a glance at Lan Yunxi who attempted to shoot another bolt regardless of her life, Lan elder sighed inside, "Love is really marvelous." If not being requested by Lan Yunxi, he didn't know that Lan Yunxi had fallen in love with Zhang Tie. "This is the last excessive thing that he could do for Lan Yunxi. After this time, no side would allow her to risk such a danger, Zhang Clan, Lan Clan or demons..."

"Let's go..." Lan elder put one hand on Lan Yunxi's shoulder.

After throwing another glance at the battlefield and recalling Zhang Tie's fatigued smile in front of her, Lan Yunxi dropped off a tear...

...

After a few minutes, three meteors arrived from the north and south along with a terrifying momentum. After reaching above the Sun Avenue in Tokei City, they suspended there for a few seconds before heading for the east...

...

2 days later, because of Zhang Tie's event, Major General Ford who was receiving the interrogation of the alliance command suddenly died in Selnes Theater of Operations. This news aroused a great shock. There were two presumptions on his death reason. The first one was that Major General Ford was a lackey of Three-

eye Association. He set up Zhang Tie this time. Therefore, he committed a suicide while afraid of being blamed. There was another presumption that he was involved in the event that Zhang Tie surrendered to demons. After being treated brutally, he committed a suicide due to fury in order to maintain the dignity of a commission officer.

No matter which presumption was real, the final outcome was that the human troops in Selnes front lines started to doubt the capability and authority of the alliance command...

Among the presumptions, a piece of news almost shocked everyone in the Crystal Battle Fortress although few people across the Selnes Theater of Operations knew it——Lan Yunxi, the commission officer of the airship troop of Jinyun Country was dispatched back to Jinyun Country. With the 'protection' of a Zhang elder, she silently left Selnes Theater of Operations.

Jinyun Country and Huaiyuan Palace didn't make any explanation to the outside about this order.

It soon came to November. From the beginning of this month, endless demonized puppets had appeared in the north of Selnes Theater of Operations and started to launch attacks to human defense line constantly, causing the ground battle in Selnes Theater of Operations to enter white-hot stage...

Chapter 614: My Immortal Territory

After eating a full plate of fruits and drinking some vials of all-purpose medicament, Zhang Tie had a nice noontime-snooze on a lounge beside grassland with a warm blanket over his body while listening to the agile gurgles of the brook.

When he felt his leg numb, Zhang Tie woke up. Actually, he wanted to snap for a long while; however, he felt numerous ants climbing in his shin. Whereas, he could not scratch it. Therefore, he could only wake up.

The feeling indicated that his broken bones were healing. If it were others, after being tortured that way, they would lose their leg or it would take them at least 5-6 months to heal. However, Zhang Tie's healing speed was really amazing. Only after returning to Castle of Black Iron for one month, his leg had almost healed.

Besides his broken leg, even those wounds all over his body had healed and scarred. After the scars fell off, his skin became as fresh as boiled eggs being peeled off shells.

This was the longest, laziest and most pleasant time that he had stayed in Castle of Black Iron since he slept 3 years here last time.

Over the past 1 month, Zhang Tie's main task was to recuperate himself. Besides eating and drinking, the only cultivation that Zhang Tie could carry out when he was free was to repeat the contents and secret knowledge of the 'Great Wilderness Sutra'.

What shocked Zhang Tie most through this narrow escape was that he indeed recognized the terror and power of the 'Great Wilderness Sutra. Compared to the soul-based animal controlling method in the Great Wilderness Sutra, all the other animal controlling skills became dwarfed. Therefore, Zhang Tie understood why the Great Wilderness School was exterminated by other schools. Because the soul-based animal controlling method really made people jealous.

Over the past one month, Zhang Tie had activated the 3rd floor of the All-spirits Pagoda in his mind sea. Additionally, he repeated the Great Wilderness endless true words on the 4th floor over 300,000 times. He still needed to repeat them about 1 million times to activate this floor.

When the 3rd floor of All-spirits Pagoda was activated, it meant that he could use LV 2 animals as his incarnation. As soon as he thought about having an incarnation had Zhang Tie become excited.

However, he could not be too excited as he had to recover his wounds.

In more than 1 month, all of his wounds had been recovered, even his broken leg had almost healed. With the great power of "King Roc Sutra", 31 surging points on his spine had broken through the bind of Senel Clan and recovered their fighting strength.

...

"Ah, master, you're awake..." Seeing Zhang Tie sat up in the lounge, Edward trotted all the way here as he placed a plate of golden pies in front of Zhang Tie which smelt pretty good, "Master, have a try, I've just made them for you!"

Zhang Tie sniffed them forcefully as he had a great appetite. He picked one of them and put it in his mouth. After a bite, he tasted the tender, sweet fluid and the special aroma of honey. It was so delicious that Zhang Tie even wanted to swallow his tongue. Zhang Tie instantly ate 4-5 pies.

When Zhang Tie ate the pies, Edward kept watching Zhang Tie with an intoxicating and proud look. He looked like receiving Zhang Tie's highest reward.

"Ah, so good, you made them?" Zhang Tie asked 'politely' based on these days of 'experience'.

After hearing Zhang Tie's question, Edward instantly raised his chest, "Yes, sir, it's my great honor!"

"How did you make it?" Zhang Tie continued.

"I used 17 fruits and grains in Castle of Black Iron, plus our specialty—honey..."

Edward kept talking about the process of making pies for 2 minutes. After that, Edward drew in a deep mouth of breath as he revealed an intoxicating look, "The above are all the procedures required to make these pies!"

"Not bad!" Zhang Tie listened to it patiently. After enjoying his life here over 1 month, Zhang Tie found that the best reward to Edward, Agan and Aziz was to listen to them introducing the manufacturing procedures besides enjoying various services provided by them. They all treated this reward as their greatest enjoyment and personal achievements.

According to Heller, if Zhang Tie could listen to and praise the services of Edward, Agan and Aziz. their souls would upgrade and grow. This was their happiest moment. Therefore, as long as there was a chance, Zhang Tie would spend a few minutes to listen to the three servants' introduction about their services.

Zhang Tie felt that he should respect and reward his servants who were so loyal to him. Therefore, he always listened to their introduction politely. Gradually, he found that he could learn a lot from Edward, Agan and Aziz. The three servants were masters in their own line for sure.

Agan was a carpenter and stonemason, who were good at building houses.

Aziz was a master in agriculture. He was excel at anything concerning agricultural production. Additionally, Aziz was excel at brewing all sorts of alcohol. Honestly, Zhang Tie was not good at brewing alcohol. After Aziz was responsible for producing all-

purpose medicament, the effect of all-purpose medicament was 30% greater than that made by Zhang Tie himself. Zhang Tie was really shocked by this.

Edward was good at using fire. He could both cook yummy food and produce tools using fire.

Previously, although Zhang Tie knew about the three people's talents, he didn't pay attention to that. After Zhang Tie teleported a lot of slaves into Castle of Black Iron from the underground space in Misty Moon Woods, the three guys got rid of the low-end farming work. From then on, they gradually showed their great talents. Zhang Tie also started to sense the unusual aspects of the three people.

"Where are Agan and Aziz?" Zhang Tie asked Edward.

"They went to instruct those newcomers to build houses and do farming work!" Edward replied with a rich admiration, "Those newcomers called them the God's messengers."

Zhang Tie smiled as he threw a glance at Edward, "Do you also want to go downhill?"

"Master, if you produce some metal mines in Castle of Black Iron, I can make anything you want for sure!" Edward said full of confidence.

"Hehe, we will have such a day!" Zhang Tie smiled as he stood up. Edward hurriedly wanted to support him with his hand. However, Zhang Tie prevented him by waving his hand, "It's okay, I'm much better these days. I want to take a walk!"

Edward bowed and left.

Besides having enough rest, he also needed to do some proper movements so as to recover fast.

There was a mountain as high as 300 m in the center of Castle of Black Iron, within 1 km of the small tree. Zhang Tie was wandering on the top of the mountain.

Nothing had changed, the small tree, the spring or those houses, except for the terrain of Castle of Black Iron.

After teleporting those miserable human captives into Castle of Black Iron from Misty Moon Woods, Heller had innovated the terrain of Castle of Black Iron. After the innovation, the location of the small tree and the place where Zhang Tie was standing became more unique. This mountain was the achievement of this innovation.

Zhang Tie came to one edge of the top of the mountain as he started to glance over Castle of Black Iron.

There was a flight of natural, golden stone stages from the top of the mountain all the way to its foot. The tidy and broad stages looked pretty magnificent.

The foot of the mountain was surrounded by a black abyss. After innovation, the former Pool of Chaos turned into a moat. The Pool of Chaos became the River of Chaos.

There was a spring originated from the top of the mountain. After passing by the halfway of the mountain, it turned into a fine waterfall and finally fell into the River of Chaos. This formed a complete circulation of energy and materials.

Right above the River of Chaos was a natural, golden bridge being linked to the golden stages. It was the only tunnel from the outside to the top of the mountain. In Heller's words, without Zhang Tie's consent, nobody could pass by the River of Chaos through that bridge in Castle of Black Iron. Anybody who wanted to pass through that bridge would be rejected by the basic principles in Castle of Black Iron; they would fall into the River of Chaos and be decomposed into the most basic energy particles.

"Nobody could pass by?" At the sight of the River of Chaos, Zhang Tie asked Heller.

"Nobody!" Heller nodded firmly.

"Including my master, Zhao Yuan?"

"That person is indeed very powerful in the outside world; however, he's nothing different than commoners in front of the dimension and space rules of Castle of Black Iron. Therefore, even if your master wants to pass by the bridge without your consent, he would also fall into the River of Chaos for sure."

Time inside Castle of Black Iron was synchronous with that in the outside world. At this moment, the colorful clouds were changing their shapes and radiating a layer of halo. The entire space was bathing in a dusky light, making the inside of Castle of Black Iron more mysterious.

On a plain about 3-4 mile away from this mountain was a human town which was gradually coming into being. Those living in the town were the first batch of residents in Castle of Black Iron.

Standing at the top of the mountain, as long as it was completely dark, Zhang Tie could always see a lot of people busy doing their works these days. Some were chopping trees in the surrounding mountainous region; some were sawing logs while some others were building simple wooden houses using the logs that had been well sawn.

Most of the wooden houses were relatively narrow and rough. However, there was a complete stone building in the town, which looked more magnificent. As he had not been to the town, Zhang Tie didn't know what was that building used for.

Beside the town were large areas of farmland being reclaimed. Women were busy sowing seeds in the farmland and picking various berries and fruits in the wild.

For those people who came from the underground hell, Castle of Black Iron was definitely the paradise that only existed in their imaginations.

The soil here was very fertile. Any seed, once being buried in the

soil, would start to grow sturdily.

The river and lake here tasted very sweet and was full of aura. The wildland was full of eccentric, yummy fruits. Some of those fruits could not even be identified.

Among those which could be identified, the most impressive fruits were potatoes and sunflower seeds.

Being different from those they could see before, most of the potatoes here were as large as kids' heads. Besides, after being roasted, those potatoes tasted very yummy.

Similarly, all the sunflowers were as big as golden sieves. After growing ripe, each sunflower seed would be as large as a peanut, which also tasted yummy.

Most of those fruits were new species that formed in Castle of Black Iron during the 3 years that he slept in Castle of Black Iron. Take potatoes as an instance, they were new products after the 2nd round of mutation and evolution. They were more eccentric than those Zhang Tie left in Ice and Snow Wilderness.

As Zhang Tie watched them growing up, he had been used to or numb about those mutated species. However, for those who entered Castle of Black Iron for the first time, at the sight of everything in Castle of Black Iron, it occurred to them that this was an immortal territory. Due to their piety and persistence in the dilemma, they had been taken into this immortal territory from the hell by the God.

Everybody entering this territory would kneel down, cry and pray out of gratitude.

Undoubtedly, Zhang Tie was that God who saved them out of the hell. This immortal territory was the God's home.

...

Chapter 615: Introspection

During these days, Zhang Tie would stand on the top of the mountain and watch those people in the town busy doing their own works and starting their new lives everyday. After experiencing so many things, Zhang Tie found that he had recovered his composure completely when he saw those commoners living a happy life. Meanwhile, he would introspect and think about too many things.

After experiencing a life or death test, Zhang Tie instinctively started to think about many things.

'What's the meaning of coming to the Selnes Theater of Operations?'

'Why would I be framed by Three-eye Association once again?'

'What's the reason for me this time to survive on?'

Many questions flashed across Zhang Tie's mind...

Although these questions seemed to be simple, after reconsidering them and facing his inner heart, Zhang Tie realized that he was still confused about many of them.

Whether he was here to improve his fighting strength, for the sake of Lan Yunxi, or out of his responsibility and honor as a human fighter, Zhang Tie had never been regretful about coming to Selnes Theater of Operations.

What made Zhang Tie start to introspect and review himself was his new recognition about this world.

Neither had he seen through himself nor his opponent. That was why he fell into the hands of Senel Clan.

After being rewarded with the honor of Selnes Eagle, although he looked calm, even unsatisfied, but actually, he was pleased about having such an honor. This honor made him feel being different

than others and being able to do more things. Because of this honor, he started to lose himself and finally entered the dilemma.

'To the final analysis, when I was rewarded with this honor, I forgot that I was not the same poor teenager in Blackhot City who would like to be the human flesh bag for a few silver coins a day anymore.'

'I am already not that teenager anymore on any aspect. That lifestyle has been far away from me. I would never return to that lifestyle. However, the deep-rooted memory and life experience in Blackhot City over 10 years ago deeply impressed me with a mindset. Being influenced by that mindset, I would always try to recognize and observe this world through a special "window".'

'When I see outside through that window, I feel the honor of Selnes Eagle is ground-breaking and deserve being defended!'

'When I see inside through that window, I feel a LV 9 fighter who has formed an iron-blood battle qi is unrivaled.'

'That's really ridiculous!'

'Because of the first recognition, I entered the huge and complex den of the allied human forces which must have contained a lot of dark forces and was finally framed by Three-eye Association so easily.'

'Because of the second recognition, I always had a fluke mind and didn't prioritize improving my fighting strength and level; instead, I always had a thought of "let it be". Because of this fluke mind, I lost my advantage in front of opponents above LV 11 and lost my ability to resist the conspiracy of Senel Clan.'

'After being rewarded with the honor of Selnes Eagle and scaring away the pursuers of Lan Yunxi, if I tried my best to improve my fighting strength and became a bit low-key, even though I would have to leave Selnes Theater of Operations temporarily and get a secret cultivation knowledge to breakthrough LV 11 or LV 12 before

coming back, I would not have entered the dilemma.'

'If a low-end secret knowledge could be bought in the illegal demon hunters' market in Selnes Theater of Operations, of course, I could get one from other places. As long as I would like to trade a "Robust Ox Skill" with 100,000 vials of all-purpose medicament when I come back to Jinyun Country or Ice and Snow Wilderness, even in Norman Empire, someone would put it in my hand soon after I released the news.'

'Why didn't I do that?'

'To be honest, I didn't put this thing in the first place. I had too many fluke minds and excuses. Subconsciously, I became a bit pleasant about owning the fighting strength as a LV 9 fighter.'

'The cruel fact was that I had to pay a great price for my own mistakes.'

'Besides not having figured out my advantages and essence of problems, I even lacked alertness to Three-eye Association. I'm really stupid!'

'The assassination in Dragon Cave, moles of Three-eye Association in Huaiyuan Palace, disaster in Ice and Snow Wilderness, bomb assassination in Mocco City and Three-eye Association killers' lurk in illegal demon hunters' market. Three-eye Association has already shown its great penetrating and controlling the ability to human society from all aspects based on demon's organizations and its hidden huge resources. As I have been assassinated by Three-eye Association 3 times, how could I not doubt it when I accepted the task from the alliance command? That's unforgivable!'

'In Waii Sub-continent, Three-eye Association's force had penetrated in human countries and organizations so much. The bomb assassination happened when the alliance command was going to reward me with the honor of Selnes Eagle. However, the alliance command which was responsible for investigating this

case didn't figure out the culprit at all. This should have reminded me that someone in the alliance command might be the moles of the Three-eye Association. However, I didn't become alert about the alliance command at that moment.'

'If I was a bit smarter, I should have ended up the relationship between me and the alliance command at that moment and ignore all the orders and requests of the alliance command. Pitifully, I didn't. To the final analysis, I was viewing the alliance command as a huge body which was full of authority and sense of justice from the viewpoint of a small figure and instinctively refused to believe that a place that represented the hope of Waii Sub-continent could hide the moles of Three-eye Association.'

'Small figures always craved for the authoritative and righteous place. They always believed that the more superior the place was, the righteous it would be. How innocent small figures! However, Three-eye Association was excelled at hiding in the sunniest place to do the darkest things. They labeled evil as holiness and disguised ugliness as justice.'

'I made the same mistakes that all the other small figures would make.'

'The crisis in the illegal demon hunters market indicates that the force of Three-eye Association might have exceeded too much in Selnes Theater of Operations. Therefore, they could arrange a timely attack. That was a life-or-death crisis, which exposed many problems in Selnes Theater of Operations and implied me that a LV 9 fighter was not safe over there. Pitifully, after obtaining the "King Roc Sutra", I was too excited to consider the warning of that crisis.

'After I drove a glider into the water so as to escape from a LV 11 wing demon's chase, Lan Yunxi had already suggested me to return to Huaiyuan Prefecture and not come back until I become LV 10. Pitifully, I didn't follow her suggestion; instead, I stayed.'

'After recovering my composure, I realized that my reason and logic at that time was really ridiculous—as a LV 9 fighter, I should be able to stay here. I could rarely meet a LV 11 wing demon in the sky.'

'It's enough for others to be LV 9 and kill a LV 10 strong fighter with the javelin as a LV 9 fighter. However, it's far from enough for me. Because I'm not a commoner or a small figure anymore. I'm already a key person, whose choice could influence a lot of things. The problems and difficulties that I meet are much more tricky than that small figures faces. This requires me to have a greater fighting strength.'

Finally, Zhang Tie understood this. As a result, he reviewed himself and many events that he had encountered.

'Your enemy might understand their value better than you could understand yourself.'

When Zhang Tie fell in the hand of Senel Clan, it was neither Castle of Black Iron nor 'Great Wilderness Sutra' that survived Zhang Tie at the critical moment; instead, it was the all-purpose medicament.

'Actually, since I invented all-purpose medicament and made it a strategic material of many countries, I was already not a commoner or a small figure anymore.'

'In order to catch me, Three-eye Association spent almost all the relationships and resources that they had. Such treatment could never be enjoyed by a small figure.'

After experiencing so many tortures from Senel Clan, Zhang Tie had another chance to identify himself and the world that he was going to face.

Zhang Tie realized that his biggest mistake was the inconsistency between his viewpoint as a commoner and his real influence and the difficulties that he was going to face. He could neither figure

out his advantage nor the most urgent problem and the largest crisis that he was going to face. As a result, he fell into the enemy's traps one time after another and almost lost his life.

This inconsistency was also like an invisible rope and bind which made it possible for people to frame him and determine his fate and the direction of his life.

Over the past one month, Zhang Tie's body had been gradually recovering while his mind further improved. If a man didn't experience frustrations and strikes, he would not grow mature.

Through such a review and introspection, that 15-year old teenager who lacked confidence deep in bones from Blackhot City was replaced by a wholly-new man, a more confident and wiser Zhang Tie who had a clearer and deeper recognition about himself

'As the honor of Selnes Eagle was rewarded by others, it would be taken away in the end. At the critical moment, only I could save myself.'

'As for me who joined this war between humans and demons, life is my most precious thing; fighting strength is my most reliable partner while freedom is my biggest advantage. With freedom, I could create numerous possibilities. Perhaps, I'm not unrivaled, even weak in front of real powerhouses; however, I'm able to create numerous possibilities...'

'The numerous possibilities comes from Castle of Black Iron, from the small tree and from the "Great Wilderness Sutra" and myself who is growing mature constantly...

...

The colorful clouds in the sky of Castle of Black Iron were like an intelligence colorful lamp of humans before Catastrophe in the legends. As time went by, the inside of Castle of Black Iron gradually became dark while the colorful clouds looked like the bleak and smooth moon.

Zhang Tie found more and more bonfires were lit in the town. Those human captives who were teleported inside by him might be holding a grand ceremony as all of them were surrounding the highest and the most magnificent building in the town.

As he couldn't hear clearly what they were talking about, after a yawn, Zhang Tie turned around in a sluggish way and walked into the house. The moment he thought about Edward's yummy food had Zhang Tie's mouth filled with saliva.

...

At this moment, in the most magnificent and highest building in the town, after some noble elders pulled off layers of veils which took hundreds of women more than half a month to wave with quivering hands, exposing a tall stony statue on an immortal altar in front of them.

The moment they saw that stony statue had they knelt down in the square and the building piously.

"Great and benign God, please accept your men's humble piety and sacrifice. It's you who took us into your immortal territory from the hell; it's you who relieved us from the sea of bitterness; it's you who sprayed the holy brilliance to warm up and cleanse our body and soul. We'd like to give everything we have to you..."

Some elders knelt in front of the crowd and prayed. After that, some virgins in beautiful crowns and linen clothes slowly walked out from aside and served high-quality fruits and grains onto the altar in the most pious manner, namely at the foot of the stony statue...

If Zhang Tie was here, he must be shocked at the sight of the stony statue. Because the stony statue was carved according to his own look, which looked almost as same as him.

The entire stony statue must be a priceless, holy masterpiece which would be praised by numerous sculptures if it was taken out

of Castle of Black Iron.

The stony statue was supporting a vigorous small tree by one hand while holding a javelin in another hand. He was standing in the hell full of burning flames while a holy, brilliant arc door was opened at his foot. Hopeless people were pouring towards that arc door. Each one's look was very vivid. That stony statue was wearing a holy crown, above which were patterns like sun, moons, stars and various birds, insects and beasts...

This stony statue was carved by Agan.

...

Closely after supper, Zhang Tie felt his broken shin growing more numb. Zhang Tie became restless. He wanted to scratch it; however, he couldn't. If this feeling could disappear after he slashed towards his shin, Zhang Tie didn't mind having a try.

"Hmm, Castle Lord, the wound on your shin would recover in a few more days. As it's dark, your preliminary recovery body would start to exert its effect fully as your wound is recovering faster than that in the daytime; therefore, you are having such a feeling!"

Zhang Tie signed helplessly, "I know, but I've not imagined that the healing process is so torturing with the effect of preliminary recovery body!"

"After this strike and torture, when your body completely heals, you can eat some iron-body fruits which were produced in this torturing process. After that, you will grow stronger. It's hard for you to suffer such a heavy wound!" Heller comforted Zhang Tie.

"Hope so!"

"Those people whom you took in Castle of Black Iron had established a shrine in the town. They are worshiping your stony statue over there. They've already taken you as the God!" Heller briefed.

"They've made my statue?" Zhang Tie became slightly stunned.

Soon after that, he felt relieved as he asked Heller, "Erm, will this reduce my longevity?'

"Reduce your longevity?" Heller watched Zhang Tie with a dubious look. After that, he understood that Zhang Tie referred to a Chinese custom—if an alive young person was worshiped by others, especially seniors, the young person might reduce his or her longevity. Heller then revealed a smile, "Don't worry, it won't!"

"Oh, alright!" Having pretended to be a holy priest many times, Zhang Tie waved his hand as he didn't think too much about that, "They can do whatever they want, as long as they don't pose any bad influence to me!"

Heller also lowered his eyes and didn't mention it anymore. Zhang Tie even ignored this event.

...

After recuperating another 3 more days, although the wound on Zhang Tie's shin had not fully healed, the last surging point on his spine had broken through the bind. As a result, Zhang Tie's fighting strength as a LV 9 fighter completely recovered. He could cultivate and light new surging points once again...

'This time, I will never leave Castle of Black Iron until I eat up all the leakless fruits that have been accumulated 3-4 years and improve my fighting strength and level greatly.'

Zhang Tie made his determination.

Chapter 616: Cultivation under the Small Tree

From the ferocious battle between Zhang Tie and Abyan in Abyan's castle to the 3-year deep sleep in Castle of Black Iron all the way to now, the manjusaka karma fruit tree had not stopped producing leakless fruits. It had been 3 years and about 10 months in total. With so many leakless fruits, the small tree looked fruitful.

One leakless fruit per week, 52 ones each year, 156 ones in 3 years. Plus 42 ripe ones and 1 unripe one in 10 months, there were totally 199 leakless fruits over the small tree.

Therefore, standing in front of the small tree, Zhang Tie felt having a heavy, pleasant, bumper harvest.

"What's the date today?" Zhang Tie asked Heller in front of the small tree.

After recuperating over 1 month idly in Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie didn't even know the current time. Before lighting his new surging points officially after 4 years' suspension, Zhang Tie thought this date was memorable.

"November 21, the 894th year of Black Iron Calendar..." Standing under the small tree, Heller watched Zhang Tie as he added, "Castle Lord, before lighting the new surging points, you'd better confirm the order of lighting those surging points from LV 9 to LV 10. As it's an emperor-level secret knowledge, If you made any mistake in cultivation steps, you might become nothing but a strand of smoke at once."

Zhang Tie nodded. As he recalled the order of lighting those surging points daily these days, he had been very familiar with the order. However, after hearing Heller's suggestion, he closed his eyes and recalled the order once more. After confirming that he

would not make any mistake, Zhang Tie picked off one leakless fruit from the small tree and sat down below the small tree with crossed legs.

When he took the familiar ripe leakless fruit once more, Zhang Tie became pretty tranquil inside. After slightly closing his eyes for a few seconds, he put the leakless fruit into his mouth.

Like before, soon after he swallowed the leakless fruit had he felt the great energy of the fruit gathering between his chest and abdomen and turning into an energetic fire dragon.

Under Zhang Tie's manipulation, that fire dragon didn't rush towards those invisible surging points which had manifested in Zhang Tie's body.

Instead, it rushed into his Shrine surging point and charged at the stick of spiritual feather incarnated by the seed rune of the 'King Roc Sutra'. After that, the stick of spiritual feather started to glow the entire Shrine surging point.

At the sight of this scene, the Shrine surging point turned into a forge used by refiners. Like a rarity being refined by fiery in the forge, the stick of spiritual feather was constantly absorbing the energy of the fire dragon of the leakless fruit as it changed its color. The whole process was completely mysterious.

Of course, the process of cultivating an emperor-level secret knowledge might be different from that applied by Zhang Tie when he was a newbie. The stick of spiritual feather incarnated by the golden seed of king roc in the Shrine surging point became the center of the entire cultivation process and the key to expose the secrets of surging points according to 'King Roc Sutra'.

After the entire fire dragon's energy was absorbed by the stick of spiritual energy, the luster of the stick of spiritual feather changed its color from red, orange to yellow...

Zhang Tie opened his eyes and saw Heller standing on his side

and watching him seriously.

In the process of cultivation, he would forget time. In that realm, although he felt it was just a split second, actually, it might have been several days.

"How long have I spent?" Zhang Tie asked Heller.

"3 hours!" Heller replied.

Zhang Tie nodded. He then picked himself up from the ground and picked another leakless fruit. After sitting down, he ate it.

After eating the 2nd leakless fruit, the stick of spiritual feather in the Shrine surging point started to radiate blue luster like surging points being polished...

After 3 hours, Zhang Tie stood up once again and picked the 3rd leakless fruit.

With the 3rd burning dragon, the stick of spiritual feather's luster turned purple. When it turned extremely purple, the entire Shrine surging point and that stick of spiritual feather slightly shocked as a ball of golden, brilliant bird-shape flame flew out of that stick of spiritual feather and started to circle around that stick of spiritual feather.

Even though, the 3rd flame's energy had not been completely exhausted. After this ball of golden flame was produced, the stick of spiritual feather's color recovered to its original look as it continued to absorb the dragon's energy; finally, the 3rd fire dragon's energy was exhausted as the stick of spiritual feather started to radiate orange luster. The entire Shrine surging point recovered its tranquility once again, leaving that stick of spiritual feather radiating orange luster and a golden bird-shape flame circling around it.

Zhang Tie looked inside for a second. After recalling the order of lighting surging points according to 'King Roc Sutra', Zhang Tie focused on that golden bird-shaped flame, which then flew out of

his Shrine surging point and headed for Zhang Tie's heart like a real bird leaving its nest.

In Zhang Tie's heart, there were 7 manifested invisible surging points and runes in each of them. At this moment, the 7 invisible surging points were like 7 shadows composed of virtual glass.

After locking one surging point, that golden bird dove into it at once.

Closely after that, the invisible barriers of that surging point on his heart broke into pieces at once. When his heart quivered a bit, Zhang Tie felt breaking a shackle as a strand of energy poured out of his heart. All the cells in his body were cheering.

After touching that dark rune in the invisible surging point, the golden bird-shape flame integrated into it at once. Soon after that, the rune brightened up like a burning fire-pan as it radiated a golden light. As a result, it brightened the entire surging point. After that, with a sound "boom", the surging point was completely lit as it started to radiate golden luster like a burning torch.

From then on, the first invisible surging point out of the 34 surging points on the spine was lit as Zhang Tie stepped onto the advancement road of 'King Roc Sutra'.

Under the small tree, Zhang Tie opened his eyes. This was just a new start. He was not satisfied with it. After picking himself up from the ground once again, he picked another leakless fruit and ate it...

3 hours later, he ate another leakless fruit.

After eating another 2 leakless fruits, the stick of spiritual feather produced another ball of a golden bird of flame. Meanwhile, the stick of spiritual feather turned red...

At this moment, another golden bird-shape flame flew out of the Shrine once again. This time, it didn't head for Zhang Tie's heart; instead, it locked a manifested invisible surging point in the qi sea

at his lower abdomen and lit it like how it lit the one in the heart.

After the second invisible surging point was lit, Zhang Tie opened his eyes. He started his cultivation in the morning; however, it was already deep night in Castle of Black Iron now. Heller was still standing on his side. Zhang Tie picked himself up from the ground and was going to pick the 6th leakless fruit; however, Heller persuaded.

"Castle Lord, you've already lit 2 surging points in the past 16 hours. You need to adapt to the change in your physical strength and supply a large amount of energy. At this moment, you need to take a rest and let your body have a buffering effect!"

Soon after Heller's suggestion, Zhang Tie's stomach had started to grumble. After throwing a glance at the rest leakless fruits on the tree, Zhang Tie revealed a smile. He then went downstairs from the high platform where the small tree was planted as he waved his hand, "Alright, I will eat something and go to bed. I will be back tomorrow!"

"That's right. If you want to be the real powerful man, you need to control your desire. Nothing powerful and valuable could be obtained easily." Heller said thoughtfully.

...

After having a bumper supper, Zhang Tie took a walk at the top of the mountain. After that, he drank two vials of all-purpose medicament and went to bed...

When he woke up the next day, he cleansed himself as casual as usual. After that, he ate breakfast and took a walk. When he felt better both spiritually and physically, he sat under the small tree and started to eat leakless fruits.

Zhang Tie would cultivate 16 hours a day under the small tree. Besides lighting 2 invisible surging points a day, he would rest, sleep and supply energy so that his body could adapt to the change

brought by burning surging points.

Although it felt limited in time, everything was undergoing regularly.

During this process, Zhang Tie genuinely understood why it was called 'Robust Ox Skill', an incomplete version of 'King Roc Sutra'. After lighting 5 invisible surging points, the terrifying strength which was as robust as a ferocious ox constantly poured out of his body like the flood, which shocked Zhang Tie too much...

On the 4th day, after lighting the 8th invisible surging point, he felt the strength of qi, the strength of blood, the strength of bone, the strength of marrow, the strength of channel, the strength of vein and the strength of god were back and growing stronger.

The emperor-level secret knowledge showed its terrifying power once again...

Chapter 617: The Power of a Strong Fighter

When in conscientious cultivation, Zhang Tie felt time flying.

He even didn't find that his broken leg had already healed.

He needed to light 21 invisible surging points to promote to LV 10 from LV 9. The 21 invisible surging points spread all over his body. Sometimes, even Zhang Tie felt that he was not cultivating but decoding a very advanced safe in a special method.

His body was a safe with a 987-digit code. The front 34 digits were easily decoded; however, the later 953-digit code became complex and difficult to decode.

In the beginning, Zhang Tie thought that there ought to be some rules to light the invisible surging points. Later on, he knew that no rules existed at all. Perhaps, for the human body's safe, each surging point carried an unusual meaning and effect. There was a hidden special part behind each surging point. When all the special parts were integrated with each other, they would form a human body, the most precise machine in the world, which could not run if lacking any of its parts.

'It seemed that the function of secret knowledge was to tell people how to assemble this most precise machine in a certain method and order. After injecting energy into the machine, people would start it once again.' Zhang Tie thought.

...

Zhang Tie lit his 9th invisible surging point on the bone under his left first toenail.

...

The 10th invisible surging point being lit was on a small piece of triangular bone inside his right ear.

...

He lit the 11th invisible surging point on his liver; then one on his throat, one on his skull, some near his qi sea, one on the bone under his right first toenail, one on his lowest abdominal muscle, one on the left sole and one on the piece of triangular bone inside his right ear...

These invisible surging points were not lit according to a certain order; however, after lighting each invisible surging point, Zhang Tie felt that he did that naturally or the invisible surging point was indeed lit according to some rule or at the certain rhythm. Nevertheless, the rule and rhythm were out of the reach of people's imagination in this age. Therefore, it looked chaotic.

Zhang Tie asked Heller the outcome of making a mistake. Heller told him that he could have a try in the trouble-reappearance situation after lighting all the invisible surging points according to the incomplete version of 'King Roc Sutra'. If he tried in the real world, the only result would be Game Over at once...

The effect of leakless fruits remained unchanged. Precisely, it required him to consume 7 leakless fruits to light each 3 invisible surging points. He needed to consume 49 leakless fruits to promote to LV 10 from LV 9.

On December 1, after sitting 11 days consecutively under the small tree, Zhang Tie ate the 48th and the 49th leakless fruit.

When it was about 12 am at noon, a LV 6 black spider-totem, a LV 7 huge centipede-totem, a LV 8 king snake-totem and a LV 9 bloody scorpion-totem appeared behind him at the same time, which formed a wonder in the sky...

Zhang Tie didn't know that the moment the battle-qi totems rose behind him, Heller had already waved his hand as the colorful clouds started to cover the entire peak and dozens of square kilometers' land under the peak. As a result, those people in the town could not see clearly what was happening here; neither did they know that the God they worshiped was promoting to LV 10.

At the sight of the four battle-qi totems behind Zhang Tie, Edward, Agan and Aziz instantly ran over here. Standing outside the range of the small tree with Heller, they watched Zhang Tie with an amazing and admiring look.

"Heller, what's happening to our master?" Aziz asked.

Aziz, Edward and Agan were masters in their own lines. However, they had very limited knowledge about other things. Therefore, they could only learn them later on.

"Castle Lord has officially entered LV 10. This is the symbol of promoting to LV 10, totem digestion..." Heller replied with a satisfactory look.

Soon after Heller finished his words, the four totems behind Zhang Tie had started to change.

The huge centipede totem moved like a real one as it engulfed the hell black spider; after that, the king snake swallowed the huge centipede; closely after that, the king snake was eaten by the bloody scorpion, which grew larger at least one time. However, the final winner didn't live longer. It immediately turned into a golden rain of light and poured into Zhang Tie's body from the top of his head.

Zhang Tie opened his eyes and stood up. His eyes were full of shrewd lights as his bones started to crack like fried beans for about 2 minutes. After that, Zhang Tie rapidly grew over 3 cm higher in the gaze of Heller, Aziz, Agan and Edward.

Zhang Tie finally understood how it felt to open his qi sea. After lighting 46 invisible surging points, Zhang Tie felt space was opened over there, which covered the Shrine surging point. As a result, the iron-blood battle qi swimming through his body immediately returned to the space of the qi sea and gathered there like it found its home.

Additionally, the iron-blood battle qi that gathered in the qi sea

seemed to be compressed. It was of higher density and greater energy. Moreover, it became more flexible. At this moment, the iron-blood battle qi all over his body integrated into one unity.

With energy surging and battle qi rising in the qi sea, Zhang Tie became thrilled. At this moment, he finally understood how it felt as a LV 10 strong fighter. What a great, great, great power!

Zhang Tie couldn't wait to roar. Closely after that, he sprung up from the ground below the small tree. Due to a pair of powerful legs, he could jump over 10 m high in the sky. When he was still in the sky, he punched a 1.7 m thick parasol tree over 20 m away.

Zhang Tie felt like shooting a cannonball as a red fist being covered with red battle-qi luster flew out as faster as a lightning bolt. In a split second, his fist had struck that parasol tree.

With a boom, the wood dust flew in all directions from the hard trunk, causing a fist-sized hole through its trunk.

Before landing on the ground, Zhang Tie had already launched the second round of attack with his foot, while an ax-shape battle qi luster flew out of his foot and hacked onto the ground like a huge ax. As a result, a trough about 1 m long and half a meter deep was left on the ground more than 10 m away.

After that, Zhang Tie landed on the ground as he burst out into laughter. After so many days of cultivation, he finally felt being confident once again.

"Congratulations, Castle Lord, you've promoted to LV 10 and stepped onto the road of becoming a powerful person!" Heller walked towards Zhang Tie and suggested, "Castle Lord, do you want to try the javelins?"

"Yup!"

The moment Zhang Tie replied had Agan, Aziz and Edward carried some heavy javelins over here jubilantly with a flattering look.

Zhang Tie took a heavy javelin and weighed it with his hands. He felt it was as light as a stick of straw. Zhang Tie knew that it was not because the javelin became lighter, but he became stronger.

The moment Edward and Aziz took the target and ran away had they been stopped by Zhang Tie.

"No need. There're so many trees here. I can shoot them..."

Soon after saying this, Zhang Tie had thrown his javelin towards one shagbark more than 400 m away at the foot of the mountain.

This time, the sonic boom turned lighter. By contrast, when the shagbark was struck, a thunder boom drifted from afar; meanwhile, the entire shagbark was broken into pieces, leaving a huge pit on the ground.

Zhang Tie was very satisfied with this strike. It was at least two times more effective than that of before. With such a great power, Zhang Tie knew that a LV 11 wing demon would not pose any threat to him anymore.

Through this advancement, Zhang Tie knew that his battle strength had increased by more than two times. His battle pattern had changed greatly because he could realize battle qi attack without having to touch the opponent now. After promoting to LV 10, he became qualified to cultivate some senior battle skills and martial arts. A wholly new gate was opened to him from then on. Heller was right. This was the start to be a real powerhouse.

After doing some warm-up, Zhang Tie noticed that the entire mountain was covered by the colorful clouds.

"Heller, what happened?"

"Castle Lord, when you promoted to LV 10, there was an abnormal phenomenon. As it was very eye-catching, if those residents in the town saw such a phenomenon which would appear when a commoner promoted to LV 10 on the God's mountain, they might wave their belief. Therefore, I covered that place with

colorful clouds!" Heller explained.

Zhang Tie didn't agree with Heller's deed because he felt that Heller cared too much about their belief. However, as Heller was always meticulous and did this for his sake, Zhang Tie didn't say anything about that.

If Zhang Tie was a commoner, he must have been very satisfied; however, after being thrilled, Zhang Tie threw his glance towards that small tree once again. The iron-body fruits that he obtained through torture were still hanging over there. Additionally, there were another over 150 leakless fruits. "Compared to having them hang over there, I'd better turn all of those fruits into my battle strength..."

Chapter 618: Being Dauntless and Progressive

Although having promoted to LV 10, Zhang Tie was not satisfied with his current achievement; instead, he continued to improve his fighting strength.

According to Heller's suggestion, after promoting to LV 10, he'd better eat all the iron-body fruits so as to raise his strike-resistant ability to a new height.

Previously, it took him at least 7 days of strike in Crystal Battle Fortress for an iron-body fruit. However, after falling in the hand of Senel Clan, it only took him a few days to form 5 iron-body fruits. Given this fast speed, it could be imagined how cruel torture had he experienced.

Take Zhang Tie's leg as an instance. The leg was fully broken one part after another using instrument of torture. This sharp pain was as unbearable as in the hell. Besides the stripe on his scalded skin all over his body, there were other kinds of cruel tortures, each of which could collapse commoners.

With those cruel tortures, even a piece of iron would be smelt; however, Zhang Tie survived.

Of course, he obtained the fruits after experiencing the hell-like pains. Zhang Tie felt that he should appreciate the small tree. The small tree brought him the last beacon of hope in all pains. Because of the small tree, he escaped out of that cell.

Zhang Tie took 2 days to digest the 5 iron-body fruits.

Just like qualitative changes that happened when he lit sufficient invisible surging points, after digesting 5 more iron-body fruits, Zhang Tie felt his strike-resistant ability had met a qualitative change.

In Zhang Tie's words, he finally understood the term 'Iron man'.

The term 'Iron man' could be well defined by the following data through the test made by Heller for him after he digested 5 iron-body fruits.

Heller said Zhang Tie finally reached a small achievement after eating so many iron-body fruits these years. Over 95% of Zhang Tie's body parts had been immune to pure barbarous force and strike from blunt objects below 900 kg, except for his eyes, nose, ears and inguen. That was to say, any force below 900 kg would cause no harm to Zhang Tie any longer.

Eyes, nose, ears and inguen which were very fragile for commoners, Zhang Tie could still bear over 10 times more pure barbarous force and strike from blunt objects.

Besides being fully immune to blunt objects and barbarous force below 900 kg, his body could also bear more physical harms caused by other blunt objects, high temperature or flames or battle qi strike.

Heller told Zhang Tie about his strike-resistant ability to those harms vividly.

"Simply, if you are naked now, you would not be scalded by 100 degree Celsius anymore. If an average 6-year old kid stabs you with a common blade or sword, he would not make you bleed. Your toxins-resistant ability has increased by 4%; your spiritual-strike-resistant ability has increased 5%; all the battle qi strikes on you would be weakened by 3%-12% or so."

"Battle qi strikes' effects on you would be specifically determined by the battle qi's level and features. If a person who cultivates iron-blood battle qi attacks you, you could only be immune to 4% of its total effect. If the battle qi is fury-wave battle qi, robust ox battle qi, fiery-flame battle qi or crescent battle qi, you could be immune to above 9% of its full effect.

"There's one point you need to know, iron-body fruit brings you the natural physical ability, which could not be brought by any

secret knowledge and fighting skills. If you could learn some defensive secret knowledge and fighting skills in the future, you could have a defensive effect bonus on the basis of those fighting skills and secret knowledge."

Zhang Tie knew that although his harm-resistant ability could not match that pervert ability to walk out of the magma safe and sound like Zhao Yuan, his master, it was at least top-class in the same level. Therefore, Zhang Tie felt being immortal and proud in front of many low-level fighters.

Through Heller's words, Zhang Tie immediately understood many things. He realized why Heller always persuaded him to not belittle the effects of iron-body fruits.

Iron-body fruits could improve his physical qualities and defensive ability in all aspects for sure, including harm-resistance and defense against blunt and sharp objects, physical harm-resistance and defense against flames and high temperature, strike-resistance and defense against spiritual force, toxins and battle qi.

The body was the basis of everything. Only with a powerful body could one survive in the chaotic world. A strong and firm body could grant people with great and firm confidence and belief and enable them to face dilemma and challenges more calmly.

"Castle Lord, If you had not fallen asleep for 3 years because of Abyan, you should have reached this effect when you were promoted to LV 9. If you had such a strong body at LV 9, you would have fewer dangers when facing those difficulties and enemies!" Heller told Zhang Tie with full moods.

Zhang Tie nodded forcefully. He has indeed missed a lot during the 3 years. Thankfully, he still had a chance to mend it up. At least, the leakless fruits were kept hanging over the small tree. He could catch up with the schedule.

On the 3rd day since he digested those iron-body fruits, Zhang

Tie continued to sit under the small tree and eat leakless fruits.

The world after LV 10 was different from that of before LV 10 in many aspects. To be a LV 6 fighter was a key watershed on the road of cultivation while becoming a LV 10 strong fighter was another watershed. The scenery before and after the two watersheds was entirely different.

Before LV 6, cultivators could neither use battle qi nor gather magical beasts' soul flames to produce battle-qi totem.

Before LV 10, cultivators could not launch the long-distance battle-qi strike. From LV 6 to LV 9, battle-qi totem on each level was fixed. Without integrating with the same level of soul flame, cultivators could not make further cultivation and advancement.

After LV 10, everything changed greatly. Cultivators could launch the long-distance battle-qi strike. Soul flames' influence on cultivators had two major changes.

First, magical beasts' soul flames which could be integrated by LV 10 strong fighters started to become rare. They could not be easily owned by people; instead, they became a rarity for cultivators.

Second, cultivators didn't have to integrate with soul flames so as to promote.

The first change could be understood easily. Because magical beasts above LV 10 could be rarely obtained, of course, their soul flames became rare. Only a few of magical beasts above LV 10 were above the ground. Most of the magical beasts above this level would hide in the deeper underground world or adventurous, unpopulated places. Without great efforts and a high price, commoners could barely see magical beasts above LV 10, not to mention their soul flames.

As to the second change, when a person reached LV 10, his physical potential treasure would be further tapped. As the most spiritual living being, after promoting to LV 10, people could be

self-sufficient and didn't need soul flames to promote themselves anymore. Of course, it didn't mean that soul flames became useless after LV 10; conversely, after LV 10, soul flames became more effective and more precious to cultivators compared to that before LV 10. Because soul flames could stimulate one's battle qi to mutate and add some extra attributes or certain great abilities to the cultivator. This effect was enough to drive people mad.

Because of the above two reasons, the battle-qi totem and abilities of powerhouses started to change greatly after LV 10. Many people could not integrate with soul flames after LV 10; therefore, their battle-qi totems became popular 'Whiteboard Totems'.

There were no powerful magical beasts in the 'Whiteboard Totems'; instead, there were only bright points that represented the surging points that had been lit in one's body. Because of those bright points, 'Whiteboard Totem' was also called 'Starry Totem'.

By contrast, those powerhouses after LV 10 who had integrated with soul flames would have both starry points and a powerful magical beast image. Besides being more magnificent, the combination of magical beast's image and the starry totem also represented the cultivator's greater fighting strength. Accordingly, the battle qi's power and feature would be greatly different than that which had not integrated with soul flames.

Before LV 10, each level from LV 6-LV 9 could integrate with soul flame once. Besides, the level of the soul flame should be consistent with the level of the cultivator. Whereas, after LV 10, before one became a knight, each person only had one chance to integrate with soul flame, which didn't have to be consistent with the level of soul flame. If a LV 10 strong fighter was able and talented, he or she could integrate with the soul flame of a powerful LV 16 magical beast so as to change his battle qi's power greatly.

At this moment, Zhang Tie's battle-qi totem was a 'Whiteboard Totem'. In his battle-qi totem, there were 55 bright points in the

rolling iron-blood banner, which represented the number of surging points that he had lit in his body after promoting to a strong fighter.

At this moment, Zhang Tie didn't have any super powerful magical beast's soul flame to integrate with. Neither was he worried about that. It was a major event for each cultivator to integrate with a magical beast's soul flame after LV 10. They had to treat it meticulously. Besides fortune and ability, cultivators needed to consider a lot of aspects. Without proper soul's flame, cultivators would maintain their 'Whiteboard Totem' even at LV 16.

Zhang Tie continued his cultivation.

As an incomplete version of 'King Roc Sutra', 'Robust Ox Sutra' could only allow the cultivators to be the 3-star fighter at most. Zhang Tie needed to light 34 invisible surging points from LV 10 to LV 11, which was as difficult as lighting the number of surging points from LV 1 to LV 9. Zhang Tie only needed to light another 13 surging points orderly so as to promote to a 3-star strong fighter.

Only after 7 days, when Zhang Tie lit another 13 invisible surging points, the "Robust Ox Skill" didn't work for him anymore.

That was the toughest cultivation moment...

On the afternoon of December 9th, after lighting the last surging point on "Robust Ox Skill" and producing another ball of golden flame from the stick of spiritual feather in the Shrine, Zhang Tie left the small tree. After that, he ate some food, took a rest, then walked; then he stood on the top of the mountain and watched those people living in the town. Until Zhang Tie felt that his body had recovered to the optimal state physically and spiritually did he return to the small tree and sat down.

Knowing that the later cultivation process would be extremely tough and frustrating, Heller warned Zhang Tie, "Castle Lord, you'd better choose a trouble-reappearance situation which

consumes the least spiritual energy. In this way, you could make attempts by constantly activating the trouble-reappearance situation with your spiritual energy. According to my most optimistic estimation, if you want to find the next accurate invisible surging point to light, you need to die at least 450 times in the trouble-reappearance situation."

"Alright!"

After saying that, Zhang Tie closed his eyes. After activating a trouble-reappearance situation, he entered it in a split second.

...

Sea waves, refreshing wind, sand beach and sunshine, Zhang Tie watched the place where he collected blue sea iron ores in the west of the Hidden Dragon Island and revealed a smile.

Standing on the beach, he saw a small sea snake in the sea, which was twisting its body and waiting to give Zhang Tie a fierce bite.

Zhang Tie didn't care about that small sea snake; instead, he found a higher clean rock on the beach and sat on it with legs crossed. He started to visualize his Shrine surging point. The ball of golden flame which could light the next invisible surging point was still in the Shrine surging point. However, there were 919 invisible surging points to be lit in his body.

"Which one first?" Zhang Tie glanced over all of them before revealing a bitter smile, "Whatever, no matter what I choose, the accuracy is less than 1/900. No need to hesitate at all."

Thinking in this way, Zhang Tie allowed that ball of golden flame to fly into an invisible surging point on the top of his head. He prepared to try from the top for the sake of memory...

The ball of golden flame integrated with the highest surging point. In the next second, he heard the sound of breaking glass. After opening his eyes, he found he had exited the trouble-reappearance situation and returned to the small tree.

Zhang Tie became a bit surprised, "Ah? What's wrong? It's so fast..."

"You failed the first time, my lord. You've been destroyed and died one time in the trouble-reappearance situation. Therefore, you exited there!" Heller replied calmly.

"I've been destroyed so fast? But I didn't feel any pain at all."

"It needs human neurons some time to feel pain. The feeling of pain is transmitted to a certain region in the human brain in the form of electronic signal. When the speed of self-destruction is faster than the transmission speed of that electronic signal, everything would come to an end before you feel any pain! Castle Lord, do you want to see what was happening at that time?"

"Yup!"

Heller waved his hand as a holographic scene appeared in front of Zhang Tie. After standing on a beech for a short while, Zhang Tie sat on a clean piece of rock. After a few seconds, with a sound of 'bang', his body exploded into bloody mist at once, leaving nothing at all.

At the sight of the scene, Zhang Tie felt chilly all over as he quivered once, "This...this is the outcome of lighting the wrong surging point? If I did this in the reality, will I have the same outcome?"

"Yes, once you've made a mistake in cultivation, you wouldn't even have time to feel the pain of being destroyed by the emperor-level secret knowledge. After selecting the wrong target, it means that you've pressed down a switch of a bomb. As a result, the 987 surging points would explode in a split second like 987 mini alchemist bombs. They would leave any time for you to make any physical response and feel any pain! The benefit of this is that you won't have any experience in wounds or pain physically or spiritually in the trouble-reappearance situation. As long as you have sufficient spiritual energy, you can constantly try it..." Heller

explained solemnly.

After being silent for a short while, Zhang Tie revealed a smile, "It's indeed tough to recover the complete emperor-level secret knowledge. However, now that I choose it, I will continue!"

After saying these words, Zhang Tie sat down with crossed legs once again. He closed his eyes and activated the same trouble-reappearance situation once again.

After a few seconds, Zhang Tie opened his eyes once again. He failed again...

13 hours later, after being exploded 796 times, he finally lit the accurate invisible surging point on a muscle of his calf below his knee. This time, he didn't explode. Instead, the new lit surging point became consistent with other lit surging points, bringing a wholly new energy to Zhang Tie...

"That's it..."

Zhang Tie revealed a smile after opening his eyes.

Half an hour later, that surging point was lit in the real world...

"It's an improvement in the human history since the Catastrophe. Another emperor-level secret knowledge starts to recover its original brilliance." Heller, who was standing on Zhang Tie's side, concluded in a solemn look.

Zhang Tie smiled. He directly left the small tree silently, after eating supper he went to bed. After getting up on the next day, he came to the foot of the small tree once again. After picking 2 leakless fruits and eating them, he took a short rest before entering the same trouble-reappearance situation.

After being exploded 487 times, Zhang Tie found a new surging point, the 15th surging point from LV 10 to LV 11...

...

This time, Zhang Tie sat under the small tree for about 3

months...

Chapter 619: A Powerful Ability

Time: 4 am, March 14th, the 895th year of Black Iron Calendar...

Location: A tower in Ironedge Castle of Senel Clan outside Tokei City, the capital of Titanic Duchy...

At this moment, the Ironedge Castle was like a stiff monster falling asleep in the pitch-dark night...

In the empty tower, a rat appeared in a corner along the wall of the aisle in a blink of an eye.

That rat had smooth fur which seemed having been well maintained. It looked shrewd all over.

The rat stood up like a person. After looking around, it sniffed. At the sight of the thick layer of dust on the floor, the rat looked a bit frustrated.

After finding that nobody was near here and the environment here became different than that a few months ago, it darted along the wall. In a split second, it had reached the staircase. Soon after that, it climbed downstairs...

There was a lobby on the first floor with an opening gate towards the outside. There were some scattered rocks and broken objects. All the items had been covered with dust. Half of a wall in the hall had collapsed. Along the moonlight from the broken hole on the collapsed wall, the rat saw this place clearly.

There was neither lamplight nor human here. It seemed having experienced a sharp change.

The rat ran all the way to the gate of the lobby. Standing at the stage outside the gate, he watched the Ironedge Castle with a dumbfounded look.

The rat found the Ironedge Castle had been completely abandoned. It looked desolate and shabby all over.

It had to be abandoned as half of its buildings had encountered a huge destruction and turned into debris. The greater part of Ironedge Castle's main buildings had collapsed. The yard of the square in the center of the castle had been covered with weeds, which were slightly waving in the night wind...

Under the moonlight, there were tweets of crickets among the weeds.

When the rat was glancing over the scene, a huge colorful cat which had long treated this place as his home was lowering its body and drawing close to the rat. The rat which was glancing at the scene out of curiosity was a rare night snack in the eyes of the big colorful cat.

The rat seemed not having found that the cat was drawing near. Drooling saliva, the big colorful cat soon narrowed the distance to 2 m. It then charged towards the rat as fast as a lightning bolt.

...

The rat didn't scream; instead, the big colorful cat groaned after being extremely stunned.

The rat disappeared; instead, Zhang Tie appeared as he glanced at this place full of excitement.

At this moment, Zhang Tie disguised as Peter Hamplester who had returned from Ice and Snow Wilderness. He was lifting the skin on the cat's neck with two fingers slightly. Facing such a thing, the cat became so scared that it kept groaning out of panic.

After calming down, Zhang Tie revealed a smile as he placed the big colorful cat on the ground. Being too scared to look back, the cat escaped away at the fastest speed.

Wandering in this utterly different castle, Zhang Tie glanced at the changes here. In the square, Zhang Tie saw a 2-m deeper pit and the cracking ground nearby. In the deserted building, Zhang Tie saw the same radioactive, destructive pattern. The only reason

that caused this outcome was that this place had been attacked by the alchemist bombs.

Although Zhang Tie didn't know what happened here during the past months, there was only point to confirm that besides the troops of the allied human forces, no other forces could have such a power across Waii Sub-continent.

Zhang Then climbed onto the top of the half-collapsed wall, from where he looked at the distance and was shocked greatly.

Dozens of pyramid-sized gravetower demons outside the Tokei City had disappeared. Even the exterior city wall of the Tokei City had been severely destroyed. The ground had been covered with human airship wrecks.

Looking at the distance, Zhang Tie saw at least 1000 human airship wrecks within dozens of square miles...

Under the moonlight, many human airship wrecks only remained their skeletons which supported the hard-type air sacs. Some of the skeletons were well preserved; some had been twisted like bones of dead warriors as they shined desolate brilliance.

This was a miserable large-scale battle. The human airship troop raided Tokei City and used the alchemist bombs to destroy all of the gravetower demons here. However, as a payment, human airship troop also suffered a great loss.

When Zhang Tie recalled Lan Yunxi, he became concerned at once; however, after thinking about Lan Yunxi's status, he recovered his composure again. Zhang Tie knew that Lan Yunxi would never be permitted to sacrifice in such a miserable battle by Zhang Clan or Lan Clan. Even if Lan Yunxi's airships crashed, they would escort her away too.

"I wonder what's going on in Selnes Theater of Operations?"

"Over the past months, the entire Selnes Theater of Operations must have experienced a great change."

Zhang Tie instantly disappeared. After a few seconds, a big bird appeared. It flapped its wings and rushed to hundreds of meters high in a blink of an eye and headed for Tokei City in the distance.

That bird was the wounded thunder hawk that Zhang Tie bought in the illegal demon hunters market. After recuperating several months in Castle of Black Iron, it had completely recovered; additionally, with the help of all-purpose medicament, the thunder hawk had reached its heyday. Under the moonlight, its feathers were shining like metal. Only after a few breaths, it had already reached one mile away.

At this moment, Zhang Tie was sitting calmly under the small tree in Castle of Black Iron while the thunder hawk became his second incarnation after the rat.

Previously, Zhang Tie even didn't imagine that he could manipulate in this way.

In the process of using soul-based animal controlling skill of 'Great Wilderness Sutra', he had to protect his original body. In that state, his body was just like a plant man who only breathed. It couldn't sense or move at all. If not being protected well, even a 3-year old kid or a wild-dog could kill him. It was always a shortcoming of soul-based animal controlling skill.

If the incarnation was dead, the manipulator's awareness and senses could recover on the original body; at most losing some aura qi and source soul. Although it felt not good, at least the manipulator would not die. However, if the original body was dead, the manipulator would indeed die. He didn't even have a chance to mend it up.

Therefore, when the disciples of Great Wilderness School applied soul-based animal controlling skill, they always hid their original body in a safe place or put them under the eyes of the elders of the same school. Otherwise, once there was an emergency, they would die for sure.

For Zhang Tie, Castle of Black Iron was the safest place for him. Nobody could break in without his consent. In Castle of Black Iron, his original body could be well protected. With Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie could apply soul-based animal controlling skill without any concern.

What did Zhang Tie's incarnation mean to Castle of Black Iron?

Previously, Zhang Tie had to exit from the same place where he entered Castle of Black Iron. After having incarnations, he could exit wherever he wanted as long as he controlled the incarnation.

In Heller's words, the 'anchored' space coordinate of Castle of Black Iron changed with the location of Zhang Tie's incarnation outside Castle of Black Iron. When Zhang Tie's incarnation left Castle of Black Iron, it was nothing different than Zhang Tie leaving Castle of Black iron. Similarly, when Zhang Tie's incarnation entered Castle of Black Iron, it was nothing different than Zhang Tie entering it himself.

This was a very powerful ability. It meant that he could appear anywhere where his incarnation could arrive as long as that space could hold his body. What a magic!

However, this was not a magic, but a bonus effect after Castle of Black Iron combined with 'Great Wilderness Sutra'. This effect fully displayed 1 plus 1 was greater than 1...

After combining the ability of Castle of Black Iron and the most mysterious soul-based animal controlling skill of 'Great Wilderness Sutra', Zhang Tie instantly obtained a powerful ability. Although his fighting strength didn't increase, he gained endless possibilities and a fantastic means.

Chapter 620: Being a Thunder Hawk

After being incarnated into a thunder hawk, Zhang Tie felt pretty cool flying in the sky, which could never be matched by a glider or the man-powered plane.

Thunder hawk was a very fierce mutated LV 1 living being. Its speed and agility in the sky could never be matched by any other birds. As a result, it had no natural enemy in the sky.

At this moment, Zhang Tie felt the real freedom in the sky.

Thunder hawk moved much faster than the man-powered plane or a glider driven by Zhang Tie. However, it was as easy as a commoner taking a walk on the ground for the thunder hawk. It felt no stress at all.

Flying in the sky, Zhang Tie felt as relaxed as a fish entering the water. He felt pretty relaxed by using the airflow and flapping his wings. Zhang Tie's body was lifted autonomously by the airflow through its feathers without any resistance.

Although being flying, it was as easy as taking a walk in the wild field for Zhang Tie.

Although Zhang Tie had tried to incarnate in a thunder hawk many times when he was in Castle of Black Iron these days, the space in Castle of Black Iron was limited compared to the outside. When he exited Castle of Black Iron, he really started to enjoy the flight.

What Zhang Tie was interested in most was the vision of the thunder hawk. Among all animals, birds had best visions; compared to that of humans, thunder hawk must have a greater vision. When in flight, even if it was in the evening, with the help of a bit moonlight, it could see clearly all the kinds of stuff on the ground. Even a rat in weeds over miles away could not escape away from its eyes.

Thunder hawk was born with a powerful sharpening effect. Like combining telescope with some special optical imaging instrument, it could see clearly very distant stuff like it was right in front of his eyes. If not Zhang Tie had a dark vision, his natural vision could never match that of a thunder hawk.

After leaving Ironedge Castle, Zhang Tie used his instinct to fly. He soon arrived at Tokei City.

The city wall of Tokei City was a bit damaged; however, there were still people inside the city.

Zhang Tie saw squads of demonized puppets patrolling in the city and various things happening in dark corners.

In the dark corners, some were doing something after dodging from demonized puppets; some were discussing something in a low voice; some were trading stuff in dim alleys; some women and men were seeking for sharp physical happiness in rooms behind curtains; some were murdering...

In a dim street in Tokei City, a man got off a carriage. When he was going to open the gate of a residence on the roadside, some humans in masks had sneaked out of the parterre on one side and stabbed into his heart, throat, neck and the place between his chest and abdomen with some pitch-dark daggers at the same time.

In a split second, the man had been stabbed dozens of times while his fresh blood sprayed over the stages outside the gate.

The man fell down. Those murderers instantly took his bag away from his hand. Before leaving, they even fumbled over his corpse before disappearing into that dark alley rapidly.

Before the man was killed, he uttered a miserable shriek, which woke up the person inside the residence. At this moment, the lamp in one room of the residence was turned on...

When a woman in pajama hurriedly went downstairs and opened the gate with candles in hand, the killers had long escaped over 500

m away.

Those killers could never imagine that what they had done was captured by a pair of sharp eyes hovering in the sky.

After escaping 2-3 miles away, the killers slowed down as they entered a slum of slaves. After hiding in a place, they unveiled their masks. They were young men who looked both flurried and excited. They opened the bag and found it was filled with food like bread. They shared the food and left there...

At the sight of this, Zhang Tie realized that the man being killed ought to be a small figure in the order chain of Senel Clan in Tokei City who had surrendered to Senel Clan and demons. He was followed by some audacious slaves. At the risk of losing their lives, those young men killed him outside the gate of his residence——perhaps for bread or opposing the ruling of Senel Clan and demons.

It was said that where there was oppression, there would be resistance. It was too normal to see such an event in Tokei City.

The alleged order of Scala was just not voluntary. It was not the real order. Although it could run bloodily and icily in the daytime, someone would attempt to break it in the evening.

This order was not real. Demons and Three-eye Association just turned cities into huge prisons and warehouses of fresh human blood and flesh. In this order, demons were the rulers, those b*stards of Three-eye Association were the managers of the prisons. This was the truth of the alleged order of the new world mentioned by those sc*mbags of Three-eye Association.

Different view angles indeed led to different feelings. Hovering in the sky, after witnessing various people and this murder, Zhang Tie became enlightened as he instantly saw through the new world's order pursued by Scala and the Three-eye Association.

After leaving that region, Zhang Tie instantly arrived at the Sun

Avenue of Tokei City according to the route in his memory. It was where Senel Clan put him under house arrest several months ago.

In the sky, he found that manor had been ruined into pieces. Many buildings on the street nearby the manor were damaged. However, the damages were not caused by the alchemist bombs but by another force.

"What happened?" a whim occurred to Zhang Tie's mind, "Someone came here to save me?"

'Who's that?'

Zhang Tie started to search above the neighborhood with his sharp eyes. He found a tidy 3 square meters of a hole on the wall and a trace of being ploughed dozens of meters behind the wall.

"Lan Yunxi?" Not knowing why, at the sight of that trace, Zhang Tie immediately imagined how Lan Yunxi pursed his lips and forcefully pulled the bolt while being surrounded by numerous demonized puppets. Several years ago, Zhang Tie visited where Lan Yunxi fought Zhen powerhouses in Heavenly Cold City. The trace left by that battle was very similar to this one. However, it could not match such a great destructive force. It was caused by Lan Yunxi's battle bow which carried the bloodline power of the ancestors of Huaiyuan Palace...

It had happened a long time ago. Given the growth of the weeds in the ruins, Zhang Tie realized that it happened even earlier than the attack in Ironedge Castle.

The moment he thought that Lan Yunxi came here to save him had he felt crying although thunder hawk's eyes couldn't drop tears.

After knowing that neither Zhang Clan nor Lan Clan would allow Lan Yunxi to deepen in such an adventurous place, Zhang Tie became reassured. After combing with the scene outside the city which had been raided by the human airship troop, Zhang Tie

speculated that it was Lan Yunxi who launched the air raid after confirming the threat of gravetower demons outside the city to the allied human forces in the frontline.

After lighting 1 of the 7 surging points on the heart, Zhang Tie didn't realize that he had become much smarter. His speculation was very close to the fact.

Zhang Tie continued to hover in the sky above Tokei City and observe this city. With the vision of the thunder hawk, Zhang Tie could see everything wherever he passed by. He felt like watching a huge man-made sand table. He could even see a part of those in windows if there were no curtains.

Compared to that several months ago, Tokei City looked much more desolate at this moment. All the large-scale demonized puppet camps outside the city were empty. After hovering above there a while, Zhang Tie didn't find any regular demon troop or wing demons at all. It was demonized puppets who maintained order here.

In this case, Zhang Tie paid special attention to the blocks which had the highest and most luxurious buildings in the south of Tokei City.

When Zhang Tie was wondering whether there were powerhouses of Senel Clan in Tokei City anymore at this moment, he saw a person among the buildings...

It was Navas, the sc*mbag.

Even though Zhang Tie could not see clearly his face in the dark, he could identify the b*stard's figure and his way of walking...

Chapter 621: A Great Decline

Slightly bending over his body, Navas was holding a fluorescent lamp while his face was as wrinkled as orange peel. It seemed that he was not in a good condition.

Since he screwed up the stuff in Ironedge Castle several months ago, his position in Senel Clan had encountered a disastrous decline. The golden gate which had opened to him closed up once again. However, he was declined to a lower position, becoming a warehouse keeper of Senel Clan in Tokei City.

How could a warehouse keeper be as comfortable as a steward of the manor? It was a low-paid position. He was only accompanied by that fluorescent lamp in his hand and that whistle over his neck which could never be blown.

If it was several months ago, he must be hugging a beautiful female slave on the bed at this moment; however, now, he needed to make an inspection tour alone one time after another. Life became tougher for him.

"How could they blame me for Zhang Tie's escape..." Navas mumbled to comfort himself as he found nobody nearby. Over the past months, he had been used to mutter to himself, "The one executing the massacre in Tokei City was a knight. The one who saved Selnes Eagle away might also be a knight. Only knights could sneak into Ironedge Castle and take away an alive person from the hidden cell without being found. I'm just a small figure, even if I was on the spot, how could I stop a knight. I've served for Senel Clan over 2 decades. I've always been so loyal to you, how could you treat me this way? When the knight was executing a massacre in Tokei City, weren't you just hiding aside and watching it like me?"

After realizing the last words were not treacherous, Navas instantly looked around out of confidence. After finding nobody

nearby, he muttered some more words as he lifted the fluorescent lamp and checked whether those warehouses had been locked.

This high-wall courtyard was in the most defensive core area of Tokei City. It was once where Titanic granduke, the ruler of Titanic Duchy met his mistress. Because Titanic granduke had a wife who was jealous and always dispatched killers to kill those who tried to steal his man from him. In order to prevent from being broken in from the outside by force, this courtyard was very hidden being surrounded with the high and thick wall, which brought them a great sense of safety and trust.

After Titanic Duchy collapsed, precisely after Titanic Duchy fell into the hand of Senel Clan, this place had become a warehouse of Senel Clan.

When Senel Clan collected all the wealth of the capital of the Titanic Duchy and the most part of the wealth of the country, they had to hide this wealth in hidden places. After filling the warehouse of the bank of Titanic Duchy and the secret warehouses of the Granduke Castle and Senel Clan with wealth, they had to hide the rest in this place where the Titanic granduke met his mistress.

If it was a southern human settlement which had not collapsed, Navas might be indolent when he was here alone. However, it was in the demon's territory, where he dared not even think about it.

There were two reasons. First, money and properties were forbidden to circulate in demons' territory. People had to submit in all the money and precious metal. You couldn't buy anything here with money; neither would there be any seller. As long as one was found having money and precious metal, the person would face the death penalty. Second, even if he tried to take something away from here, he could not cross the entire Titanic Duchy and escape to south with those items alone. If he persisted in escaping, he would be the food of those demonized puppets straying in the wild.

Senel Clan also knew that Navas dared not escape; therefore, they dispatched him here so that he could still do something for the clan.

At this moment, Navas was dreaming that one day a big figure of Senel Clan could remember his name and dispatch him away from this f*cking place. Meanwhile, he started to admire about that Selnes Eagle who escaped away from his hand.

"I was told that his aircraft could fly off from any place and maintain a fast speed in the sky. If I could do that..." Navas licked his lips as he exchanged a glance at that locked gate of the warehouse.

He knew what was in the warehouse. Those items which could not be consumed or traded in demons' territory were very useful to Senel Clan.

"I was told that Senel Clan members and 'nobles' in other demons' territories were still trading things using this item. Through the relationship and network of Three-eye Association, the items inside this warehouse could still work a lot in the humans' territory and human countries. After forbidding commoners to use and store these items in demons' territory, 'nobles' here could better plunder this wealth."

After making an inspection tour around the warehouse, Navas didn't find anything abnormal. Therefore, he lifted that fluorescent lamp and went to bed in his own room. He didn't know that a pair of eyes was gazing firmly at him from the sky.

Zhang Tie was still hovering in the sky. In his eyes, after making an inspection tour around some warehouses, Navas returned to his own room. Soon after that, the fluorescent lamp was turned off, making his room dark.

This was a hidden place. There's nobody nearby. After observing this place for a while, Zhang Tie confirmed that this was not a trap. Therefore, he sneered and plunged downward.

The thunder hawk incarnated by Zhang Tie dived so fast. At the beginning, it shot downwards like a bolt; when he was about 50 m away from the ground, Zhang Tie stretched out his wings adroitly. The airflow penetrated through his feathers slowed him down at once. Zhang Tie then glided down silently like a folded paper plane that kids usually played.

As long as it didn't flap its wings, thunder hawk would not cause any sound in gliding. Even if there was a bit sound, as it was mixed with the wind sound, it could not be easily noticed by people even powerhouses.

The thunder hawk landed behind parterre which was covered with tidy plants. Several seconds after the thunder hawk entered Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie himself appeared in the shadowy place of the parterre with a killing qi. Watching Navas entering his room less than 20 m away, Zhang Tie could hear how Navas turned over his body on the bed.

"What a coincidence!" Zhang Tie had not imagined that he could meet Navas after making an inspection tour in Tokei City.

If not encountered him here, Zhang Tie really didn't have time to revenge him. Even if he wanted to revenge, he would revenge Senel Clan's core members, instead of their lackeys. However, now that he met Navas, Zhang Tie would not pity him. The moment he remembered how cruel punishment had Navas executed on him with a sneer had he felt a killing qi surging in his mind.

Zhang Tie walked towards Navas' room silently.

At the front of the room, when Zhang Tie wanted to open the door's lock by battle qi, he found that the door was left open. He didn't know whether it was because of the b*stard's habit or that the b*stard forgot to close it. He just pushed open the door and walked inside.

"Who's that?" Navas who had not fallen asleep instantly sprung up from bed when he heard the low sound from the door.

A LV 6 fighter responded very fast at the critical moment, including Navas. Pitifully, his opponent was Zhang Tie.

With a distance of about 7-8 m, when Navas sprung up from the bed, Zhang Tie had already launched a punch towards him casually.

As a result, Navas didn't even have a chance to utter a sound before being slapped and fell back on the bed while spitting out a mouth of fresh blood. After that, he didn't move anymore.

Zhang Tie slowly walked over there.

Navas had already passed out. After checking him, Zhang Tie found that almost half of Navas' bones had been broken. At this moment, Navas looked pale golden who only had last breath.

Zhang Tie swore him in a low voice, "F*ck, you b*stard. Aren't you good at torturing people? But I have not realized that you were so fragile when I slapped you several months ago? Why?"

Zhang Tie remembered that he was just a LV 9 fighter whose battle strength had been sealed and had just lit 34 surging points on his spine when he slapped Navas several months ago; then he realized that he had already lit 125 surging points besides the Shrine surging point and had been a LV 11 5-star battle master; besides, he was cultivating iron-blood fist and 'King Roc Sutra', of course, he felt that Navas became fragile.

Zhang Tie scratched his head bashfully, "It's not because my opponent became weak, but I became strong. I've not been used to that."

When Zhang Tie watched Navas for a few seconds, he found Navas tilted his head as black blood flew out of his mouth corner. Navas was dead! He didn't even know who killed him. How pitiful!

"F*ck!" Zhang Tie swore inside. After staying in Castle of Black Iron several months, he was curious about what happened outside. When Zhang Tie was going to wake Navas up and ask him some

questions, he seemed hopeless.

Zhang Tie then started to look around the room...

Navas' room was neither simple nor luxurious. The furnishings inside the room were nothing special at all. The moment Zhang Tie saw them had he wanted to leave. However, Zhang Tie's eyes were attracted by one object on the table near his bed's head.

That was a copper whistle.

"Whistle?" At the sight of that whistle, Zhang Tie instantly recalled what Navas was doing just now. "It seemed that Navas was making an inspection tour around those rooms with a fluorescent lamp while wearing a whistle over his neck. But what was he doing this for? It's strange. There was nobody else here. Why did he make an inspection tour and serve as a sentry just now?"

"Is he guarding something here for Senel Clan?"

The moment such a whim occurred to Zhang Tie had he become spirited, "At least, it won't be a pile of wastes." As long as it could strike and destroy Senel Clan, it would be meaningful for both Zhang Tie and humans in the holy war.

Zhang Tie then left Navas' room.

This was also a manor. Being different from other manors, everything in this manor looked a bit low-key.

There was a big house dozens of meters away from Navas' room. When Zhang Tie came to the front of the big house, he found the gate of this big house was locked. The former windows had been sealed from inside. Zhang Tie attempted to push the door as he found the door was made of metal. it was very heavy. It was out of Zhang Tie's imagination that this place was defended so strictly.

"F*ck!" Zhang Tie swore inside as he became more curious about the items inside the big house.

If not afraid of making a loud noise, of course Zhang Tie could

break it by force. However, as it was deep evening, as long as he made any loud noise, he would attract the attention of others at once. Therefore, he could not break the metal gate by force.

"What should I do?"

A whim occurred to Zhang Tie's mind as he squatted down in a hidden place outside the house. He took out of a pair of dark tore gloves. After putting them on, he injected his battle qi inside the gloves. After that, he inserted it into that stony wall with his fingers like inserting into a piece of bean curd.

After deepening the distance of the wall, his fingers touched a layer of steel plate which was even harder than granite. It was not a common steel plate, but an alloy steel plate which was much harder than a common steel plate.

"There's a layer of high-intensity alloy steel plate inside this wall?" Zhang Tie swore inside as he intensified his strength. He soon tore open a hole on the alloy steel plate. After his entire arm entering it, he suddenly felt no resistance in front of his fingers anymore. Zhang Tie then knew that he had broken through the wall.

After drawing his arm out of that hole, Zhang Tie disappeared. After a few seconds, a rat appeared in the place where he disappeared. After throwing a glance at that hole, it sneaked inside at once...

Chapter 622: A Thorough Cleanup

After entering the house, Zhang Tie came out of Castle of Black Iron and started to look around this place. He then faintly frowned. With the help of his dark vision, he could see everything clearly here.

It looked like a huge warehouse. There was no furniture or decoration here. In the closely sealed house, Zhang Tie only saw piles of items. Like piles of straws in the open place of rural area, they were covered with a waterproof cloth.

The waterproof cloths were very new. There was no dust in the sealed house while a carpet was paved on the ground. It seemed that someone lived here before.

Zhang Tie walked to a pile of objects being covered with a piece of waterproof cloth and unveiled it at once.

Before unveiling it, Zhang Tie imagined what might be buried beneath there. He thought they were munitions; however, after opening it, he became stunned.

What in front of him were tidily placed pieces of golden rectangular ingot metal.

Each piece of those ingot metal was about 40 cm in length, 10 cm in width and 7 cm in thickness. At the sight of those golden ingot metal, Zhang Tie felt vacant for 0.5 seconds. He could not believe what he saw. After that, he stretched out his hand and took a piece of an ingot metal.

It was so heavy. Weak commoners might not take it at all. Weighing it by hand, Zhang Tie knew it was gold for sure.

The line of letters on the piece of ingot metal also verified his judgment—GOLD, 99.999%, 100 KG.

Watching the gold ingots as high as his chest, Zhang Tie forcefully swallowed his saliva. Although he didn't know why

Senel Clan would place so many golds here, he didn't want to think about it at this moment. What counted at the present was that he needed to take away all of these golds. Even the God would not allow him to leave so many golds alone here.

"F*ck, if I take away these golds, I will end the capital source of Three-eye Association. I'm contributing to humans in the holy war!" Zhang Tie found a fair reason for himself. After that, he swallowed a mouth of saliva and moved rapidly.

The moment he touched a piece of gold ingot had he teleported it into Castle of Black Iron. It was time to test Zhang Tie's speed. After making one circle around the pile of gold ingots and touching them with hands, he had teleported all of them into Castle of Black Iron.

A pile of gold ingots had 8 layers; each layer contained 25 gold ingots; each gold ingot weighed 100 kg. It meant one pile of gold ingots weighed 20,000 kg, namely 20 tons. Each standard gold coin weighed 25 grams. Each tone of gold ingots could be made into 40,000 standard gold coins. That was to say, a pile of gold ingots were worth 800,000 gold coins.

As Zhang Tie teleported those gold ingots into Castle of Black Iron, he started to calculate the value of each pile of gold ingots rapidly inside.

After glancing at this warehouse, Zhang Tie found at least 20-30 piles of gold ingots here.

Zhang Tie flashed across the entire warehouse as fast as how autumn wind swept leaves away from the ground.

After over 20 minutes, Zhang Tie left that empty warehouse.

The moment he left this warehouse had he heard some braking sounds of some vehicles outside the gate of the courtyard. After that, over 20 people jumped off the vehicles. The metal soles of their battle shoes touched the slate, causing disordered sounds.

After a few seconds, someone opened the gate of the courtyard, causing a cracking sound.

Zhang Tie hid in the dark. Over 20 tough soldiers rushed in the courtyard. At the sight of the last person, Zhang Tie's pupils shrunk at once.

That one was Rouben, another son of Koz, the head of Senel Clan. Zhang Tie had seen him twice.

"Navas, that b*stard. What a crap! With such a loud noise, he's still sleeping like a dead pig. Besides flattering Scala, he's a crap for sure! If not he has served Senel Clan for so many years, I have long thrown him into gravetower demon. Even a puppet soldier is useful than him!" Rouben, who was tall and strong complained when Navas didn't come out to greet him. With a cold harrumph, he instructed a person beside him, "Go wake up Navas!"

"Yes, sir!" a subordinate immediately trotted towards Navas' room.

"No need!" Zhang Tie uttered a voice as he walked out of the shadow with a javelin in hand.

"Who's that?" Rouben roared as he turned around, followed by the other soldiers.

"Long time no see!" Zhang Tie greeted Rouben with a smile.

"You..." Rouben's pupils shrunk as he had already identified Zhang Tie. At this moment, although Zhang Tie's hair, eyes and skin had changed colors, he could still be easily identified by those who had seen him before.

Rouben became stunned for a second. He then revealed an ecstasy. After that, he became solemn and suspicious. He didn't launch an attack right away; neither did he allow his subordinates to launch an attack. Instead, he glittered his eyes and looked around. He wondered whether someone was hiding in the dark, "You were saved away last time. I've not imagined that you could

surrender yourself. I think you are not brave to come back alone. I admit that you have sharp throwing skills; however, you're just LV 9, you could at most threaten a LV 10 strong fighter. It's not enough for me. Is there anybody in the dark? Whether the one who saved you is also here. Just show yourself!"

Watching Rouben's glittering eyes, Zhang Tie knew that this guy was suspicious and meticulous. Only after a few words, he had exposed a lot of things. Zhang Tie wanted to reply, however, a whim occurred to his mind. Therefore, he changed his mind.

"He, he, of course I dared to come back here alone. Tokei City is not as dangerous as a lion's den. Those who came here along with me would have already shown up if they wanted. Now, they've been destroying your plan. You only need to wait here for a short while, then, you will see them!" Zhang Tie replied calmly.

As Zhang Tie could imagine, the moment he said these had Ruben revealed a bit panic. However, he recovered his composure soon, "You're really well-informed. I've not imagined that you still have time to pay attention to Tokei City when your defense line in Selnes was going to be collapsed by demonized puppets' corps!"

"You know better than me how many lackeys of Three-eye Association were hiding in the alliance command. Do you think that all the human powerhouses would follow the order of the alliance command? Since I left here last time, someone had been gazing at Tokei City and Senel Clan." Zhang Tie sneered as he crossed his arms in a pretentious way. He marked 90 points for his own performance inside.

"Harrumph, so what! Although my father and many powerhouses of Senel Clan are not in Tokei City anymore, you can not destroy our move. Besides me, Senel Clan has just employed an elder for the safety of the airship. He's a knight! The one accompanying you might be a knight at most. Even though he could destroy our airship and prevent us from carrying this wealth away, you could still not take this wealth away!" Speaking of the elder of Senel

Clan, Rouben recovered his composure, "If you really want to fight here, there are 500,000 demonized puppets in the city, you will suffer a great loss!"

Cleverness might overreach itself. Because Zhang Tie looked too calm and confident, Rouben preset a premise that Zhang Tie could not come here alone. With a few words, he had exposed a lot of information to Zhang Tie, which made Zhang Tie's heart race.

Humans' defense line in Selnes would collapse soon.

Most of elites and powerhouses of Senel Clan had already left Tokei City, leaving only two powerhouses in Tokei City, Rouben and an elder of Senel Clan.

Tonight, Senel Clan seemed to be ready for carrying some wealth that they plundered in Titanic Duchy to somewhere else.

After thinking for a few seconds, Zhang Tie revealed a smile, "Thanks for telling me so many information!"

"What do you mean?" Rouben changed his face.

"I mean you can die!"

Soon after saying these words had Zhang Tie thrown out that javelin.

That javelin carried both Zhang Tie's terrifying strength and his iron-blood battle qi. This was a skill that Zhang Tie developed over these months. Zhang Tie found that if he could wrap the javelin with his battle qi, he could not only make the javelin more destructive but also make a lower sound in the flight. Being wrapped by iron-blood battle qi, javelin would not cause sharp sound in the air anymore; instead, it became as tender as a bumble breaking apart in water.

Rouben had been ready to dodge and defend from Zhang Tie's javelin. The moment Zhang Tie moved had he moved too. He instantly changed his positions while being ready to release his battle-qi totem as a warning...

He wanted to lock Zhang Tie's javelin; however, he found that Zhang Tie's javelin could not be sensed at all the moment it left Zhang Tie's hand. After being shocked inside, he knew what did this mean...

"Impossible, I'm already LV 12..." the last whim occurred to Rouben's mind.

Rouben's body exploded into the bloody mist, closely followed by a low sound in the air...

Zhang Tie flashed his movements and launched over 20 punches in a split second, exploding all the soldiers of Senel Clan who followed Rouben in at once.

In a second, with the coordination of javelin and iron-blood fist, Zhang Tie cleared the spot.

At this moment, Zhang Tie realized how powerful he was. Before the bloody mist of Rouben's body completely faded away, Zhang Tie had already darted out of the courtyard and killed the other soldiers in a truck. None of them could send any warning since the beginning.

The entire courtyard recovered to its tranquility. Besides the corpses and blood all over the ground, nobody else had come here.

After making an arrangement, Zhang Tie incarnated into that thunder hawk and rushed into the sky. He headed for a place outside the city in the north. Zhang Tie remembered that there was an airship base over there. There were still 4 large battle airships over there. This was the only place where airships were available across the city.

When Zhang Tie was hovering in the sky, he had already seen this airship base; however, it was out of his imagination that Senel Clan would carry the wealth of Titanic Duchy to somewhere else.

From thousands of meters high, Zhang Tie observed the airships. Only after hovering there a short while, he had already seen a big

blazing fire burning in the place in Tokei City where he came from.

In less than 3 minutes, Zhang Tie saw a person flashing towards Tokei City like a meteor.

It was estimated that that person would not come back until 7-8 minutes later. Therefore, Zhang Tie dived downwards like lightning bolt and landed on the empty deck of an airship...

In a blink of an eye, his incarnation returned to Castle of Black Iron while Zhang Tie's real body flashed out. He then darted towards the freight cabin at the bottom of the airship. At this moment, Zhang Tie had already exploded his maximal speed and battle strength. On the way there, he met some small figures. Like a wind blowing by, Zhang Tie casually killed all of them without even seeing them clearly.

Only after dozens of seconds, Zhang Tie had already reached the freight cabin at the bottom of the airship. After breaking the hatch into pieces with one punch, he saw a lot of crates in front of him.

Zhang Tie didn't even check what was inside the crates. With a gust of wind blowing by, he touched all the crates and teleported all of them into Castle of Black Iron. When he did that, he sprayed a large volume of kerosene over there...

It took Zhang Tie less than 1.5 minutes to plunder this airship. After rushing out of this airship, he darted into the second airship on its side.

All those trying to prevent Zhang Tie were fighters below LV 9. They were too weak in front of Zhang Tie.

After 5 minutes, Zhang Tie directly broke out of a wall of the freight cabin at the bottom of the 4th airship. After that, he flashed around the four airships and set blazing fires on them. After sweeping the 4 airships, Zhang Tie directly burned all the corpses along with his traces...

At this moment, that person who left here just now had already

realized that something was wrong here. He accelerated towards here, causing a terrifying sonic boom in the air.

After hearing that wuthering sound and how fast it was heading towards him, Zhang Tie became scared. The sound moving speed was at least 2 or 3 times than that he could imagine. Zhang Tie then realized the power of a knight. He hurriedly rushed towards the woods beside the burning airships.

When the wuthering sound was close to the airship base, many birds were so flurried that they flew off. Zhang Tie also entered Castle of Black Iron and the thunder hawk flew together with those birds...

After Zhang Tie disappeared less than half a minute, a frame with unrivaled killing qi and a terrifying power had flashed by Zhang Tie's feet like a blazing fire. Zhang Tie was so scared that he oozed sweat all over.

After doing this, Zhang Tie did not dare to stay in Tokei City anymore; instead, he directly headed for Selnes Theater of Operations in the south...

Chapter 623: Zhang Tie's Creed

When a pinpoint of light appeared in the eastern sky, Zhang Tie had already flown over 3 hours. Tokei City had been lagged far behind by him. Thunder hawk moved so fast that Zhang Tie felt that he had already flown over 1,000 mile while numerous mountains, rivers and cities had been lagged behind.

No matter how great the elder of Senel Clan was, he could not catch up with Zhang Tie anymore, even though he changed his direction and flew towards the south. After leaving Tokei City, Zhang Tie didn't just keep flying forward. He even changed his route twice on the way. No matter what, as it was in the sky, his move would not be influenced. Zhang Tie preferred to fly above the high and rugged mountains, and great rivers, where his enemy would not choose to chase after him on the ground.

It was the first time for Zhang Tie to 'fight' knights. After Zhang Tie left Tokei City a long time, that terrifying figure who looked like a blazing fire still made Zhang Tie scared. If he was one minute late or he was not able to use his incarnation, he would be in a big trouble.

The knight moved so fast. Especially when he found that he was cheated and returned from Tokei City to the airship base, his speed was much faster than Zhang Tie's thunder hawk. He was not running on the ground anymore; but flying in the air. Leaning forward, he was flying like a blazing meteor at about 100 m above the ground.

'Was that the ability of a knight?' Although he had witnessed how the Star and Moon Sword Sage used the same ability, at the sight of this ability used by his enemy, Zhang Tie was still shocked too much. He also understood the great gap between him and a knight. Zhang Tie recovered his composure once again although he could easily kill a LV 12 elite of Senel Clan.

'The path ahead is still long. I'm not unrivaled now. Therefore, I should not be puzzled by the current triumph. Life is the most precious, battle strength is the most reliable, freedom counts the most.' Zhang Tie warned himself inside. 'The reason that I succeeded this time is not that I have an overwhelming battle strength; but I'm a free man. In that free state, I could exert my ability to the utmost. Therefore, I could destroy the plan of Senel Clan and do what others could not do.'

'What if this move was arranged by the alliance command?'

'Needless to say, that would be another trap for sure. Even If a knight was dispatched to join the move together with me, that knight might be killed too.' After experiencing the alchemists' bomb attack in Ice and Snow Wilderness, Zhang Tie knew that even a powerful knight would fall into the trap which was delicately designed by others and might lose his life.

'Only when your enemy doesn't know about your next plan would it be the greatest guarantee for your safety. Additionally, the alleged "unrivaled" person could not defeat everyone else. You only need to defeat the one that you're going to face.'

Although Zhang Tie recovered his composure, he didn't look down upon himself; instead, he saw clearly his own advantage and ability. What he did several hours ago might not be matched by any elder of Huaiyuan Palace. Therefore, although the battle strength and ability were important, it was more important if you choose the proper means to exert your battle strength and ability to the utmost at a proper time and a proper place.

This time, Zhang Tie saw clearly his advantage and his battle style. Being mysterious; dodge from the opponent's strength and strike their shortcomings; dodge from the powerhouse and strike weak ones; seize all the opportunities to strike the enemy and leave right away; never leave any chance to the opponent's powerhouse to catch; take the priority of the battle at any time.

By contrast, he would never strike the enemy using his small figure in the air, falling into the enemy's trap and almost lose his life like before.

Zhang Tie didn't know that he had gradually established a firm and powerful personal creed after a year of experience in Selnes Theater of Operations. This creed would influence the rest of his life.

Zhang Tie concluded this creed in one sentence at the cost of his fresh blood, even life on the battlefield.

—Without taking the initiative, I would never join the battle.

...

After flying 3-4 hours, Zhang Tie finally arrived at the hinterland of Titanic Duchy. This place was over 1000 miles away from Selnes Theater of Operations. Although Zhang Tie didn't feel tired, he didn't intend to fly ahead anymore.

'No matter how the battle situation develops in the frontline of Selnes Theater of Operations, it won't work if I just break in.' Before entering Selnes Theater of Operations, Zhang Tie intended to count what he had achieved in Tokei City.

After making a cool plunder, he was busy escaping; therefore, Zhang Tie didn't have time to check what he had gotten from the freight cabins at the bottom of the airships at all. Thinking of those locked crates, anybody would be restless, including Zhang Tie...

'After robbing the human clans of Three-eye Association, of course, I will check what I've gotten.'

It was wild below. After noticing a hidden concave cliff cave in the middle of a steep mountain peak where the thunder hawk could rest in, Zhang Tie spiraled down there.

There were a pine tree and some weeds outside the cliff cave. It was very clean inside the cliff cave as no boa was inside. It was about 2 m deep. Zhang Tie flapped his wings and landed outside

the cave. After that, he entered it. Closely after that, he entered Castle of Black Iron.

After the thunder hawk entered Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie's consciousness and senses returned to his own body.

After opening his eyes, Zhang Tie, with his legs crossed, found that thunder hawk was standing beside him as it was rubbing his thigh with its beak in a very intimate way, causing a light, cracking sound.

While using soul-based animal controlling skill, the consciousness and senses of the animal which Zhang Tie incarnated in was like in a deep sleep. The animal didn't know what its body was doing at all. Only after Zhang Tie relieved that state could the animal recovered its consciousness and senses. Because of the special connection between consciousness and Great Wilderness Seals, after the animal woke up, it would be very intimate with the executor like the latter's loyal pet.

Zhang Tie smiled as he touched the thunder hawk's head. He then picked himself up. Seeing Zhang Tie standing up, that thunder hawk also flapped its wings and jumped up. It wanted to stand onto Zhang Tie's hand. Zhang Tie then stretched out his arm and allowed it to stand on. After flapping its wings twice, the thunder hawk found its balance.

At this moment, Aziz and Heller walked over here together. Aziz was even holding that rat which Zhang Tie had incarnated before. At the sight of the thunder hawk on Zhang Tie's hand, the rat was so scared that it quivered and hid into Aziz's sleeve at once. It didn't dare to come out anymore. That thunder hawk flapped its wings to show its power before croaking twice.

Zhang Tie burst out into laughter as he flicked the thunder hawk's head slightly with one finger, "You cannot eat it, it saved my life before; additionally, it also made meritorious deed today. If you are hungry, you can go to him, he will give you something to

eat!"

The thunder hawk croaked and flapped its wings twice more as if it had understood Zhang Tie's meaning.

Although it couldn't eat the rat, the thunder hawk was eating the flesh of the huge deep-sea monster these days. The flesh was so yummy for the thunder hawk. Additionally, it could increase the thunder hawk's physical strength. Besides, the thunder hawk could enjoy one vial of all-purpose medicament everyday. Such a treatment was already extremely luxurious for a bird.

Aziz raised his arm as he always did that. The thunder hawk then jumped onto Aziz's shoulder from Zhang Tie's hand and stood well there. In Castle of Black Iron, Aziz was qualified as a zoologist. Therefore, he was responsible for taking care of the two pets. Seeing the thunder hawk jumping over here, the rat dared not stay in Aziz's sleeve anymore; it sneaked out of Aziz's sleeve. It planned to go for Zhang Tie; however, after hearing the thunder hawk's unpleasant croak, it hurriedly changed its direction and drilled into the patch of strawberry land which was growing so vigorously. It dared not come out of there any longer.

"These little guys are so cute!"

"Castle Lord, do you want to see what are inside those crates?" Heller asked.

"Heller, you know me so well." Zhang Tie nodded, "Have you seen them, what are they?"

"I know what were they the moment they entered Castle of Black Iron. However, Castle Lord, if you could open them by yourself; you would have a greater sense of achievement!" Heller revealed a smile.

"Fine, I will take a look then..." Zhang Tie replied happily.

Chapter 624: A Great Achievement

There was a huge hollow in the middle of that sacred mountain in Castle of Black Iron. According to Heller, he renovated this place into a huge warehouse lest waste in basic energy storage.

Honestly, after Heller accomplished this space and topographical renovation, the basic energy storage of Castle of Black Iron almost used up. As a result, Zhang Tie had to carry the heavy responsibility to expand the basic energy storage for Castle of Black Iron.

Those items that Zhang Tie plundered from Tokei City were all in the hinterland of the sacred mountain.

The entrance of the hinterland of the mountain was in the north at the top of the mountain. There was a stony gate. After entering the gate, Zhang Tie stepped onto the tidy stages while the path was bright because of the fluorescent belts on both sides of the staircase. He seemed to enter a delicate, fantastic basement. The space and topographic renovation capability of Castle of Black Iron was really marvelous. Who could imagine that all these were natural, especially the natural fluorescent belts on both sides of the aisle? In Zhang Tie's opinion, this was a fabulous, unforgettable setting.

Walking on the tidy stages, a whim occurred to Zhang Tie's mind as he asked Heller, "Heller, can we make a castle on the top of the mountain using the space and topographic renovation ability of Castle of Black Iron? I mean to grow a castle or a palace here?"

"Of course, Castle Lord!" Heller watched the stages as he replied, "With the capability of Castle of Black Iron, we can form the complete main structure of a castle or a palace. Except for the furniture and mobile windows and doors which requires us to manufacture and install with hands, all the fixed parts could be formed by the capability of space and topographic renovation.

Additionally, we could choose many kinds of building materials. It's much more convenient than concrete, stones and steel products!"

"That's great!" Zhang Tie exclaimed, "Don't you feel it becoming crowded on the top of the mountain, I'm afraid that very few people could be held here!"

Those buildings on the top of the mountain were portable dwellings that Zhang Tie left when in Castle of Black Iron, which remained unchanged these years.

"Castle Lord, do you want to take some more people in?"

"Hmm, maybe!" Zhang Tie replied briefly. Zhang Tie estimated that he might have babies now.

"Castle Lord, as long as you could provide sufficient energy storage and merit values, you can build castle and palace in a split second. You've gotten enough merit values; however, you lack basic energy storage." Heller replied.

"What are my merit values now?" Zhang Tie asked Heller as he had not paid attention to his merit values for a long time.

"3287790" Heller told him a tremendous figure.

"Ah? How could it be so much?" Zhang Tie became stunned.

"Castle Lord, you saved tens of thousands of human captives from the underground space of Misty Moon Woods to Castle of Black iron lest they were killed. Therefore, you obtained over 1 million merit values. Plus those you've achieved over the past one year by killing demons in Selnes Theater of Operations!"

After being conscious of his merit values, Zhang Tie continued, "How much basic energy storage do we need to accomplish one building?"

"It depends on your demand, my lord. Of course, the more, the better. If you have sufficient basic energy storage, you will have

more choices. You can build and form more objects and main structures of buildings!"

Zhang Tie nodded and became silent. He started to imagine what a kind of building to build on the top of the mountain. Curiously, he didn't have such a thought before. However, he became more desirable about this idea now.

Zhang Tie thought that this might be because that he was going to be a dad of some babies.

When a man was going to be a father, he would change his ideas greatly. Take Zhang Tie as an instance, previously, he felt it comfortable to live in here alone. Nevertheless, he realized that it was a bit crowded here.

'If some relatives or friends came in, where would they live? It's such a chaotic world. My family members might seek a shelter in Castle of Black Iron at any time. As a man, I should make more preparations for the safety of my family members when their settlement is afflicted by the holy war.' Zhang Tie bore this idea in mind.

'When I escaped from Senel Clan's prison last time, I touched my elder brother. At that time, elder brother and the other family members have already arrived at Yingzhou State, one of the 72 states of Eastern Continent, safe and sound. They have already settled down basically.'

Fiona, Linda and Beverly were good. Because they had been pregnant, they were not suitable to move frequently. Under the suggestion of Zhang Tie's dad and mom, the elder brother was buying real estate in Yingzhou. They prepared to settle in Yingzhou first and got used to the folklore of Taixia Country in the Eastern Continent. They would not consider transferring to proper places until the three babies of Zhang Tie came to this world.

Being different from all the other newborn babies, the moment the 3 babies of Zhang Tie came to this world would they awaken 2

ancestral bloodlines. They had to stay 12 months in their mom's wombs before coming to this world while other babies only needed to stay 10 months. According to Zhang Tie's calculation, the three babies might be delivered these couple of days.

Zhang Tie had already mentioned the peculiarities of the three babies to his elder brother faintly and had his elder brother tell their mom and dad about that. They didn't need to make any precautions when the babies were only 10 months old in their mothers' wombs in case of mistakes.

...

After a few steps, Zhang Tie and Heller came to the hinterland of the mountain. Besides several piles of hill-like gold ingots, there were thousands of crates, big or small.

Those crates didn't have locks; instead, there was a mobile lock catch out of each crate, which could be opened without keys. Zhang Tie came to the front of one crate. After rapidly opening the lock catch of the crate, he opened its lid right away.

The moment he opened the lid had his face been reflected by brilliance under the light of the two circles of fluorescent stone belts in the middle of the hinterland.

'F*ck...' Zhang Tie swore inside.

The crate was filled with resplendent pure blue stones. Zhang Tie put one hand into that pile of stones and scooped out some of them. He found each of them was as large as a pigeon's egg while shining fascinating brilliance. Zhang Tie had them slide off his fingers, causing cracking sounds.

"Is...this blue crystal?" Zhang Tie asked Heller as he swallowed his saliva.

"No, these are high-quality sapphires." Heller replied calmly.

Although the prices of many gemstones were cheaper than that before the Catastrophe due to humans' development to the crustal

layer, although Zhang Tie knew that Titanic Duchy was abundant with some gemstones, for commoners, gemstones, especially high-quality jewels were still expensive. Their prices were far higher than that of gold. In the hand of an alchemist, these gemstones would exert greater effects.

Zhang Tie realized that one crate of jewels was worth at least 1 million gold coins.

Zhang Tie became thrilled. He opened all the other crates one after another. There were over 20 crates of sapphires, some crates of rubies, one crate of diamonds which were more expensive, one crate of Alexandrites, one crate of cat's eye gems and one crate of variegated gemstones. Since he was born, Zhang Tie had never seen so many crates of gemstones.

Besides those gemstones, Zhang Tie saw crates of colorful class VI pyramid-sized crystals and the most precious black crystals.

After crystals, he saw hundreds of crates full of well-sealed gold coins. Zhang Tie was shocked by so many gold coins. After being told that the crates were all filled with gold coins, Zhang Tie directly walked over.

After gold coins, he saw crates of colorful jewels and a crate of emeralds.

Behind those jewels were some small crates, each of which was about 1 cubic meters. Zhang Tie opened one of them and found it was filled with silver bars as long as 10 cm. He then became stunned.

"Why do they have silver bars here? These silver bars are valueless. Why do they put them in crates?" Zhang Tie became puzzled.

"Castle Lord, you might know the reason when you take them!" Heller suggested.

Zhang Tie threw a glance at Heller. The moment he took the

silver bar had he been shocked. The silver bar was even heavier than the gold of the same volume.

"Ah? But why?"

"This is mithril, a more expensive item which could only be exploited in extreme depth. Castle Lord, you had a rune finger ring made of mithril before. It was your booty from the battlefield. Later on, you sold it in an auction house of Kalur."

After being reminded by Heller, Zhang Tie remembered it, "Mithril is indeed rarer than gold. The small rune finger ring made of mithril brought me a lot of money."

This crate of mithril might be more valuable than the crate of sapphires.

...

After that, Zhang Tie opened another different crate and found it was filled with gold checks of different par values from Golden Roc Bank. The minimal par value was 500 gold coins while the maximal par value was 10,000 gold coins. Watching those gold checks, Zhang Tie became so excited that he widely opened his mouth.

"F*ck, have all the wealth of Titanic Duchy been plundered by Senel Clan?"

Zhang Tie was right.

Almost all the wealth that Titanic Duchy had accumulated for hundreds of years and those properties which could not be removed by rich people in the country after the holy war broke out and commoners' savings had fallen into Senel Clan's hand.

...

"In a conclusion, you got 540 tons of golds, 14.68 million gold coins, gold checks which were worth 47.6 million gold coins, over 600 crates of colorful gemstones, jewels and noble metals. Those

golds, gold coins and gold checks were worth 83.88 million gold coins in total while those gemstones, gemstones and mithril which could not be cashed were worth at least 0.13 billion gold coins. As the holy war continued, those items would have a big appreciation space."

Hearing Heller's report, Zhang Tie understood that people would be rich after plundering while the horse would grow fatter after eating grass at night. "Through this plunder, I became a billionaire."

After losing so much wealth suddenly, Senel Clan felt dropping a big piece of bloody flesh. It was a great strike to Senel Clan. Three-eye Association would not develop their forces or harm humans with this wealth. This was also a contribution to humans' side in the holy war. As long as it could weaken the enemy's forces, it would be good to humans.

With such a harvest, Zhang Tie further confirmed his path in the future. Zhang Tie was aware that if he was still following others' order in Selnes Theater of Operations, he would never have made such an achievement.

After returning to the top of the mountain from the hinterland, Zhang Tie obtained two gifts from the small tree: one fruit of brilliance, one fruit of judgment.

The fruit of brilliance contained the spiritual energy of Rouben and the other b*stards whom Zhang Tie had killed. After eating this fruit of brilliance, Zhang Tie's spiritual energy boomed.

By contrast, the fruit of judgment didn't gift Zhang Tie any new item; but a promotion of a god's rune skill. After eating that fruit of judgment, Zhang Tie successfully promoted his binding skill to medium level, which indicated a great effect.

Medium binding skill could attack LV 8 enemy instead of LV 7 at most. All the targets being not higher than LV 8 could not escape from medium binding skills.

Besides attacking higher level targets, Zhang Tie's binding chains also increased their maximal storage number from 18 to 27 and their attacking radius from 52 cm to 62 cm. This indicated that the overall battle strength of the skill had promoted to a new height.

...

After eating the two fruits, Zhang Tie understood that as long as he chose the right position, he could give a great blow to those b*stards of Three-eye Association. Even If he could not plunder wealth from them; after killing them, he could also increase his battle strength greatly and obtain merit values and all sorts of fruits...

'Which one first, return to Selnes Theater of Operations or seek for the next opportunity to strike Three-eye Association and Senel Clan in Titanic Duchy?' Zhang Tie thought for a short while before making the final determination——go back to Selnes Theater of Operations to check the situation of Lan Yunxi and those guys of the Idiots...

After staying 4-5 hours in Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie flew off the cliff cave in the incarnation of the thunder hawk once again...

Chapter 625: Like a Ghost Region

Zhang Tie, who had hovered more than half a year above Selnes Theater of Operations by the gliders, was familiar with this region. The mountains and rivers under his feet were the coordinates in Zhang Tie's mind. Even if he didn't use airmap, he could still identify the correct route and direction based on his memory. Therefore, after flying towards the south for 7 hours, during which period he corrected his route twice and inspected the situations of some cities in Titanic Duchy, Zhang Tie finally flew over the entire territory of Titanic Duchy and arrived at the Selnes Theater of Operations that he was familiar with at dusk.

4 months ago, he was familiar with everything over here very much; however, now he felt pretty strange about this region.

Rouben said the humans' defense line in Selnes Theater of Operations was going to collapse. When Zhang Tie listened to that, he was even a bit dubious about that. However, when he was really close to Selnes Theater of Operations, he realized that Rouben didn't cheat him.

When Zhang Tie saw those huge pyramid-sized gravetower demons erecting outside the city near the demons' region, he knew that the situation here was even worse than he could imagine.

If the gravetower demons appeared in Selnes Theater of Operations, it meant that human airship troops had completely lost their air supremacy over Selnes Theater of Operations. If not, human airship troops would never allow demons to build their arsenal in the frontline tactically or strategically. Demonized puppets constantly provided by gravetower demons would be the worst nightmare of the human troop.

However, the human airship troop could not stop this anymore.

Zhang Tie remembered the wrecks of human airships outside Tokei City. It seemed that human airship troop had paid a greater

price than that he could imagine in that move. Although the gravetower demons outside Tokei City were destroyed, the human airship troop also suffered a great loss. They had not even recovered from that battle till now.

Zhang Tie looked downward and saw a constant demonized puppets camp. The pitch-dark demonized puppets on the ground stimulated goosebumps all over Zhang Tie's body.

When Zhang Tie entered the battlefield of Selnes Theater of Operations, he was shocked once again as the sky was neither covered with human airships nor wing demons, but numerous vultures which ate rotten flesh.

There were also vultures above the battlefield before. However, Zhang Tie had not imagined that there were so many vultures now. The entire sky and ground were covered with vultures. When some vultures flew off the ground, they looked like a sort of dark gray wave while those in a certain air domain looked like clouds.

The only reason for so many vultures to gather here was that there was sufficient food on the ground.

Zhang Tie looked down and found miles of bones and incomplete corpses on the ground, which looked like the hell. The entire Selnes Theater of Operations had become the paradise of scavengers. Packs of wild-dogs and vultures were walking on the battlefield, which was dotted with wrecks of human armored vehicles and tanks. The armored vehicles were covered with blood stains while wrecks of airships could always be seen.

Judging from those corpses, Zhang Tie could not identify whether they were demonized puppets or humans. After remembering that Scala told him that Senel Clan had already turned over 10 million humans into demonized puppets, Zhang Tie looked down and felt icy right away. Although he had not joined the battle, he could also imagine how the army of demonized puppets submerged the Selnes Plain and combated the human

troops here.

Zhang Tie then noticed those collapsed battle fortresses.

At the sight of those human battle fortresses, Zhang Tie's scalp felt numb.

There was a slope paved by corpses outside each battle fortress, which leveled with the height of the wall of the battle fortress. Zhang Tie could completely imagine how those battle fortresses were broken through——under the strike of numerous demonized puppets, these steel battle fortresses defended with human fighters inside the battle fortresses as firm as rocks on the Selnes Plain. They shot down those demonized puppets in batches, causing the corpses of demonized puppets pile up from the foot of the wall of the fortress. When those demonized puppets' corpses gradually elevated and reached the height of the wall, the following demonized puppets finally broke into the battle fortress while stepping on the former corpses...

In such a case, no human guard would survive in the battle fortress. However, Zhang Tie, with the sharp vision of thunder hawk, couldn't find one demon's corpse from the piles of corpses at all.

Demons and Three-eye Association broke though humans' defense line at the cost of humans' strength.

Nearby those battle fortresses which had not been broken through, there were still large batches of demonized puppets. Many of them were squatting on the ground and eating those corpses like scavengers on Selnes Plain. In the region where demonized puppets existed, even wild-dogs and vultures would stay away from them.

From north to south, Zhang Tie saw many human battle fortresses and trenches which had been collapsed while human corpses were piling as high as mountains outside the battle fortresses. Even the trenches had been filled with corpses.

Miserable, too miserable...

When it became completely dark, the Selnes Plain was covered with wildfire, making it look like a ghost region.

Zhang Tie finally recovered his composure. He realized that in the strike of about 10 million demonized puppets, the allied human forces' defense line in Selnes Theater of Operations was finally torn open.

Zhang Tie didn't know where the allied human forces had been retreated to and whether the southernmost three cities in Selnes Plain were still in the hand of the allied human forces.

Zhang Tie directly flew towards the Crystal Battle Fortress. The closer he was to the south, the more demonized puppets would he see on the ground. Many established demonized puppet troops were converging towards the south.

...

After a short while, Zhang Tie had been close to the Crystal Battle Fortress. It was pitch-dark in the evening while being surrounded by the wildfire. At the sight of this scene, Zhang Tie's heart raced. He instantly lowered his height to 200-300 m.

Zhang Tie could see that the corpses of demonized puppets outside the Crystal Battle Fortress were piling as high as a mountain from one mile away. The closer he was to the Crystal Battle Fortress, the more corpses of demonized puppets would he see. According to Zhang Tie's estimation, there were at least 300,000 to 400,000 corpses of demonized puppets.

Hovering above the Crystal Battle Fortress, Zhang Tie could not see any person inside the fortress at all as the entire Crystal Battle Fortress had been occupied by the alive demonized puppets.

Zhang Tie hovered there a while. After seeing no wreck of the airships in the Crystal Battle Fortress, he became relaxed a bit.

Across the Selnes frontline, Crystal Battle Fortress was not only

the biggest battle fortress but also the only battle fortress which could hold fury-level airships. Zhang Tie remembered that a few fury-level airships were parking in the Crystal Battle Fortress all the year round for the sake of emergency evacuation like life buoys on ships. If he didn't see the wrecks of those airships, it meant that those airships had already evacuated from here along with most of the fighters in the battle fortress. This was the best news for Zhang Tie.

The Military Exploits List was still erecting over there. After being weathered about one year, the metal rack was still not rusted. The plates with names of elites from the major clans of Jinyun Country and their credits were still on the Military Exploits List. Zhang Tie found that his name still ranked first...

The Military Exploits List seemed to be especially left by people of the battle fortress which was a mock towards demons and represented the meritorious deeds and dignity of Chinese nations in Waii Sub-continent.

When Zhang Tie saw his name once again, his heart was filled with emotions.

Those slow-witted demonized puppets could never understand the Chinese on the plates. Otherwise, they might have long destroyed it.

After leaving the Crystal Battle Fortress, Zhang Tie flew towards the Glider Base of Hoorn Republic. Like how Zhang Tie had imagined, the glider base which was not far from the Crystal Battle Fortress had already been occupied by demonized puppets.

'I wonder how many fighters in this base have survived.'

The Glider Base of Hoorn Republic was only dozens of miles away from Mocco City. Given that this glider base had been collapsed, Zhang Tie knew it clearly that the allied human forces had already retreated to the last urban bases of Selnes Theater of Operations. If the last human bases were occupied by demonized puppets, the

human defense line in Selnes Theater of Operations would be collapsed completely...

Zhang Tie's guess was correct.

Soon after he left a few miles from the airship base of Hoorn Republic had he seen a battle between a human troop and a troop of demonized puppets. It was more like a chase than a battle...

Hundreds of human fighters were retreating in the wild while being chased by almost 1,000 demonized puppets who were like wild-dogs with bloody eyes. Those human fighters who stayed to stop them were constantly submerged and torn apart by demonized puppets.

At the sight of such a scene, Zhang Tie instantly landed in the weeds which were as high as 1 m...

Chapter 626: What a Massacre!

After frequently changing his body, Zhang Tie could use soul-based animal controlling skill much faster and more easily. Almost the moment the thunder hawk landed in the weeds had Zhang Tie's real body reappeared.

It was like that the thunder hawk abruptly turned into a person the moment it landed in the weeds. It was fantastic and shocking. In the eyes of the onlookers, Zhang Tie was almost like a witch or monster who could transform into all kinds of animals in a blink of an eye, which made them awe-stricken.

Zhang Tie reappeared in the look of Peter Hamplester. At this time, Zhang Tie was like a pioneer who was wearing a pair of half-metal battle boots and a suite of leather armors. Zhang Tie carried a special battle equipment on his back, which was a special metal weapon rack which contained a lot of shiny huge double-bladed axes.

He was also holding two huge double-bladed axes in hands. He obtained all of these weapons from Zhen Clan.

Each huge ax weighed about 60 kg. The double blades were as broad as full moons while the handle was very short. This was a super heavy boomerang. Although it was super heavy for others, it was as light as a wooden stick for Zhang Tie.

The moment he came out of Castle of Black Iron had Zhang Tie rushed towards the place over 500 m away as fast as wind with huge axes like two open lowered-wings.

The moonlights sprayed onto the blades like water, reflecting two chilly lights in the shape of crescents.

Zhang Tie ran rapidly. Everywhere he passed by, the weeds as high as his chest would be split open like waves. At the same time, the sharp blades drew over weeds, causing them to fly in all

directions. Everywhere Zhang Tie passed by would be like a wave. Watching it from the sky, it was like a bolt shot by Zhang Tie, which flew all the way towards the two parties who were fighting in the distance. In the blink of an eye, Zhang Tie had narrowed the distance to about 200 m.

...

"We can not escape like this. Brothers of Battalion One, stay with me to stop the demonized puppets. The other brothers, go away as fast as possible. If you could return alive, remember to tell my son that his dad walked out of the armored vehicles and combated to death. We armored units are not as timid as rabbits. After leaving armored vehicles, we can still kill those sons of b*tches...!" A tough man who was covered with blood exclaimed as he stopped and rushed back towards those demonized puppets.

"Regimental commander..." those fighters beside this man exclaimed. After hearing this man's order, one-third of those who were escaping stopped at once and rushed back towards those demonized puppets who outnumbered them evidently.

Numerous fighters dropped off tears. Besides fighters of battalion one, more people rushed back towards those demonized puppets resolutely. In the end, nobody continued to escape anymore. All of them rushed backward towards those demonized puppets.

"Asshole, Aars, take away with brothers of battalion two and battalion three..." The regimental commander who turned back first yelled at a commission officer who followed him back.

"Boss, we've been used to assault the enemy together with you. Just let us do it once more..."

After knowing that all the brothers would like to fight demonized puppets together with him, the tough man who turned back first dropped off tears from his fierce eyes. Without saying anything, he instantly rushed ahead of the team and stabbed his short sword into a demonized puppet's eye. After a slight prick, he had cracked

its head while a disgusting worm which looked like an octopus fell down the ground and started to creep there. That man stamped it into pieces using his battle boots...

When one party didn't escape, the two teams collided in a split second.

The human fighters were also holding short swords which were longer than 30 cm. Therefore, they were not in the advantageous position with this kind of weapon. Unless they could chop off demonized puppets' heads or stab their short swords into the heads of demonized puppets, common wounds could never affect demonized puppets' movements.

The moment they collided with each other, all the human fighters had already been in a fierce combat.

Glaring at the grim faces of those demonized puppets which were many times more than the population of theirs, all the human fighters thought that they were doomed to die this time.

However, at this moment, two moons flew over...

At the sight of Zhang Tie's flying double axes, they indeed had such an illusion that two moons were flying over. Because the shiny blades became shiny disks due to the fast speed under the moonlight. The path that the disks flew by was like a light band.

When the two moons flew over, they shattered all the weeds in front of them. After that, they flashed into a lot of demonized puppets, shattering the ferocious demonized puppets like shattering weeds. As a result, demonized puppets' fleshes flew in all directions. After crushing out two dozens of meters long bloody paths among the troop of demonized puppets, the two disks made a turn and flew back after drawing a curve. Wherever they passed by, they had left a lane of blood and fleshes composed of the corpses of demonized puppets...

In the blink of an eye, more than 60 demonized puppets had

fallen down.

At the sight of this, all the human fighters became dumbfounded.

However, what was more shocking was coming.

When Zhang Tie arrived there, he forcefully patted his back while the huge battle equipment which looked like a metal shell uttered a light "crack". At the same time, 7 shiny huge axes appeared on his back like how peacock flaunted its tail. Zhang Tie put his hands over his shoulders and grasped other huge axes. Closely after that, two more moons rose in the air and flew towards those demonized puppets.

After the two moons flew out, the first two moons returned to Zhang Tie's back like spiritual living beings after crushing out another two bloody paths.

When all the fighters were concerned that Zhang Tie would be injured by the two disks, Zhang Tie just gave a slight push, shooting out the two disks towards another two directions in a more ferocious way, shattering all the demonized puppets' bodies on the way.

All the human fighters could hear the muffled humming sound when Zhang Tie put his hands on the disks. When those human fighters being close to Zhang Tie heard this sound, they felt like vomiting...

In the blink of an eye, Zhang Tie had thrown out 7 huge axes from his back. Plus the first two axes that he threw out, 9 moons were surrounding Zhang Tie while each of them drew an illusory light belt...

Those sharp moons carried terrifying momentum. Everywhere they passed by, they would spray demonized puppets' fresh blood like rain, their heads flew off from their necks and fell down the ground. Any objects in front of those moons would be broken or shattered, demonized puppet's bodies or their weapons...

Those moons were also as agile as dancing butterflies under the moonlight and seeking for brilliant flowers of blood. They were extremely fast and untouchable. They flew everywhere in all directions before coming back to their owner. After obtaining their owner's praise and touch, they flew off out of excitement once again...

After Zhang Tie arrived here, he emancipated all the human fighters from the battle. Everybody just stared at him with widely opened eyes like being obsessed with ghosts. Just now, these human fighters felt that they would almost die. As for them, they had to face too many demonized puppets that they didn't have any chance to win. After Zhang Tie arrived, all the human fighters felt that those demonized puppets were surrounded by this man at once. It sounded unimaginable that a person surrounded by 1,000 demonized puppets. Nevertheless, it was how they felt at this moment. It was more than an art master displaying his top-notch art and innovation in front of them than a battle.

Under the moonlights, Zhang Tie was wandering casually in the weeds which were covered with the fresh blood of demonized puppets like an immortal man walking in the air. 9 moons rose and fell constantly, tearing the dark apart.

After a while, long or short, when the onlookers recovered their composure, they noticed the dark had dissipated.

"Ah, watch out your back..."

When Zhang Tie walked towards those human fighters, the regimental commander suddenly exclaimed as a demonized puppet who had lost one arm and the greater part of one shoulder with most of its innards exposing to the air was standing up behind Zhang Tie's and was going to stab into Zhang Tie's back by its long sword. At the sight of this scene, all the human fighters' heart raced.

However, the fact was everybody's concern was needless.

Before it could stab Zhang Tie's back with its weapon, 2 moons flew towards that demonized puppet from its back, chopping off its head and breaking its waist at once. As a result, its body was split into three parts. Zhang Tie didn't even look back as he stretched out his hands. The two moons then fell back into his hands, showing their original looks.

At the sight of this scene, all the fighters, including that regimental commander forcefully swallowed a mouth of saliva as they felt their throats dry. Until then, there were still some who rubbed their eyes and couldn't believe what they saw. "How could one person exterminate over 1,000 demonized puppets so quickly?"

After staying in Selnes Theater of Operations so long, they had seen many powerhouses; however, it was really their first time to see a powerhouse like Zhang Tie, who could kill so many demonized puppets so easily without even having his hands been polluted with blood.

The double axes in his hands were still as shiny and sharp as new ones. However, there was no blood on them at all. Zhang Tie sighed with emotions inside, 'These weapons might be imported from Huaiyuan Palace or the Eastern Continent by Zhen Clan. It should be made of an advanced alloy.'

With a "cracking" sound, Zhang Tie inserted two huge axes back into the equipment on his back. The 9 huge axes on his back really looked like how a peacock flaunted its tail. Such an exaggerating shape might be mocked by people in daily lives; however, at this moment, those human fighters only felt it pretty magnificent and cool.

As Zhang Tie gradually walked towards them, those axes on his back had been put away in the metal shell. Until then did those human fighters who had been pulled back from the hell by Zhang Tie realize what happened. They hurriedly walked towards Zhang Tie and surrounded him while throwing their admiring and appreciative looks towards Zhang Tie.

"Your Excellency, thanks for your help. Otherwise, we might have been dead!" That regimental commander appreciated Zhang Tie after making a solemn salute to him.

Until then did Zhang Tie find the collar badge of this regimental commander was familiar. He remembered that Reinhardt wore the same collar badge. Of course, these people's uniforms were a bit different than that of Reinhardt. They might have belonged to different arms of services.

"You are from Iron Plough Corps, North Border Military Region, Norman Empire?" Zhang Tie asked.

After Zhang Tie identified the designation of their corps, all the human fighters became shocked faintly while that regimental commander raised his chest at once, "Yup, we belong to No. 107 Heavy-armored Unit of Iron Plough Corps, North Border Military Region, Norman Empire!"

After hearing his reply, Zhang Tie revealed a smile, 'I've not imagined that I could meet brothers from Norman Empire. But it's not strange. As Norman Empire had dispatched 3 trump-card ground corps here, which almost occupied 1/4 of the total ground troops in Selnes frontline', "Do you know Reinhardt?"

"Ah? You know Colonel Reinhardt?" The lieutenant colonel revealed a strange look.

"We're good friends!"

Soon after Zhang Tie finished his words had he felt that the surrounding fighters changed their looks. Many of them revealed a big smile like seeing their brothers.

"Great..." that regimental commander revealed a big smile at once.

"Oh, why are you here?"

"It's a long story..."

"Are you going back to Mocco City?"

"Yup!"

"Come on, I'm also going there!"

Chapter 627: An Encounter

When he returned to Mocco City once again, Zhang Tie sensed the intense and grim atmosphere which was enshrouding this city. The human defense line and works outside the city were crowded with discomfited human fighters; many broken armored vehicles and tanks were abandoned in the wild. Some turrets and boilers which could still run were buried beneath the earth, only exposing their batteries.

Until then did Zhang Tie realize that Volvo City had collapsed two months ago, the allied human forces only controlled Mocco City and Sladic City while the ground connection between the two cities had been cut off by the demonized puppets corps.

In the recent two months, the allied human forces had been thinking about breaking through the connection between Mocco City and Sladic City. The remnants of the allied armored units then became the main force to combat demonized puppets corps. After losing their fuel and material supply in the latest move, the No. 107 Heavy Armored Regiment of Iron Plough Corps suffered a great loss. As a result, the regimental commander had to lead all the fighters of the entire Armored Regiment to climb out of armored vehicles and evacuated back to Mocco City on foot. Nevertheless, they were caught up by a demonized puppets troop and could almost be completely annihilated.

In such a case, the armored units had two choices: to stay in armored vehicles for rescue; to escape out of there by foot. However, as Selnes was becoming worse while more and more demonized puppets were wandering outside the city. As for an armored regiment being trapped in the wild, they might never see the reinforcements coming. Even though the reinforcements arrived, they had to sacrifice many times more fighters to save the armored units out of there.

In such a case, especially when the armored troop was

surrounded by the demonized puppets in the wild after losing power and suffering mechanical obstacles, those armored soldiers preferred to commit a suicide or starve to death than coming out of there to be eaten by the demonized puppets.

This was the most tragic page of Selnes Theater of Operations.

The No. 107 Heavy Armored Regiment of Iron Plough Corps were fortunate. When their armored vehicles broke down, those demonized puppets had not caught up with them; however, when those demonized puppets caught up with them, they were saved by Zhang Tie.

After being framed by Senel Clan, Zhang Tie didn't know whether he was a hero or a traitor in Selnes Theater of Operations. Because his status was sensitive to the public, Zhang Tie didn't inquire too much about Jinyun Country and the Crystal Battle Fortress lest others' suspicion. Through the regimental commander, Zhang Tie knew that Jinyun Country's troop had evacuated due to some reason after Volvo City was collapsed. Additionally, there was no news that the commission officer of the airship troop of Jinyun Country died or had any trouble in the past months. Therefore, Zhang Tie became reassured.

After entering Mocco City successfully, Zhang Tie separated from those armored units.

...

"When you see Reinhardt, tell him that the guy who smoked his cigar in Mocco City last time had come back. I will live in the place where he invited me to drink that day. I might stay in Mocco City a couple of days!"

"No problem!" That regimental commander nodded.

Zhang Tie waved his hands towards those fighters of the No. 107 Heavy Armored Regiment before turning back and disappearing in the pitch-dark street...

Zhang Tie didn't tell them his name.

...

In the evening, the Mocco City looked a bit frustrated. As a human city in Selnes Theater of Operations, everything about the allied human forces would be expressed in this city. Any victory in the frontline would make this city brilliant while any failure in the frontline would make this city depressed and grim. When this city became the defense frontline and might be collapsed by demons at any time, it was terrifying all over besides deep depression. Zhang Tie saw many human fighters sitting on the roadsides as drunk as fiddler and watching the sky with a vacant look...

Previously, in such a case, urban gendarmes would at least drag those drunk soldiers away; however, at this moment, the gendarmes might have disappeared or just ignored them.

With his memory, Zhang Tie wandered through the dim streets and alleys. It took him only a bit longer than 20 minutes to come to the Demon Hunters Bar in Mocco City.

Besides hiding the largest illegal market across Selnes Theater of Operations, this Demon Hunters Bar was also the most informed place in this city.

Zhang Tie's strange and powerful qi was familiar to those guards outside the door of the bar. Zhang Tie even smelt bloody, which was even more useful than any certificate. The guards threw a glance at Zhang Tie and sniffed before opening the door for Zhang Tie.

The moment Zhang Tie entered had he felt abnormal inside. A woman in black robe was sitting at the bar counter and drinking alone. She looked narcissistic. She was alone near the counter while the others stayed far away from her and sat at those tables around the bar counter. Although some tables looked evidently crowded, nobody would like to sit at the table, even though some stools were still available at the bar counter.

Under the gaze of everyone else, Zhang Tie came to the side of the bar counter and sat beside the woman as he waved his hand towards the bartender.

"Give me a cup of drink!"

"What do you want to drink?" The bartender walked over and asked him in a low voice.

Zhang Tie found the bartender's face looked a bit pale, which might be because of over panic. His smile even looked embarrassed.

"Whatever!" Zhang Tie glanced at the gradevin behind the bartender and found the kinds of drinks inside the gradevin had decreased a lot. It seemed that this place had started to run out of materials.

"Try this. This is the best beer from Norman Empire. I'm sure that you've not drunk it before. This beer is called Iron-blood Lover!" The bartender faintly recovered his look when he talked about the beer. At the same time, she made a cup of beer from the beer barrel behind the counter rapidly.

'Iron-blood Lover?' Zhang Tie felt like vomiting after hearing this name, 'Why does a beer have such a literary name? Whatever, it's none of my business. I'm here for a drink.' Watching the bartender serving him a big glass of beer, Zhang Tie immediately took it up and had a mouth of drink. He was stunned at once.

"How about it?" The bartender asked Zhang Tie hopefully.

Zhang Tie had numerous feelings about the taste of the beer. After a second, Zhang Tie asked slowly, "You mean this beer comes from Norman Empire?"

"Yup, this beer is exclusively supplied for the trump-card troop of Norman Empire in the frontline. I dare say you can not find a better beer across Blackson Humans Corridor. I was told this beer also had some marvelous effects. With it, the frontline fighters

could better maintain their physical strength. If they had some small wounds, they could heal them soon by drinking this beer!"

Zhang Tie replied with a smile as Hanna's face and the absurd and happy plots between him and Hanna flashed across his mind, 'Iron-blood Lover, Iron-blood Camp Lover, doesn't it refer to me? It turns out that even though Hanna has gotten married, she's still authoritative on the side of her original family; otherwise, they would not name the beer in this way.'

"One more Iron-blood Lover!"

After hearing the hoarse and slightly attractive voice of the woman on his side, Zhang Tie turned around as he noticed that the woman was also drinking a big glass of beer; after drinking it up, she pushed the glass towards the bartender.

Judging from her side, she was a top beauty; additionally, she might be a Chinese of mixed parentage. Black hair and clear-cut facial features made her especially charming and impressive.

The woman looked very icy. Even though she knew that Zhang Tie was staring at her, she still didn't throw a glance at Zhang Tie. She looked very arrogant. When Zhang Tie stared at her hands, he found she was wearing a pair of semi-transparent gloves. If not the golden plum blossoms embroidered on the gloves, he almost could not identify that they were female gloves.

After realizing that Zhang Tie was staring at her gloves, that woman threw a glance at Zhang Tie. When she saw the huge shell-sized equipment on Zhang Tie's back, a light flashed across the woman's eyes, which could not be easily observed by others.

The bartender filled the glass meticulously and pushed it back to the woman. The woman took up the glass and started to sip it slowly. As Zhang Tie was thinking about his next step, he didn't feel like accosting her. Therefore, after the woman finished her beer, she dropped some gold coins and left before throwing another glance at Zhang Tie.

Until the woman left did the weird atmosphere in the bar relieve a bit. Some men who were crowding at the tables then dared sit at the bar counter; however, nobody dared sit where the woman had sat before.

"Brother, you're audacious. Well done! You dared even sit beside that woman!" A whiskered tough man sat beside Zhang Tie and thumbed up towards him.

"Ah? Is that strange?" Zhang Tie blinked his eyes.

"Do you know who's that woman?"

"Who's her?"

"Tirsiris. Don't you know her? Although she had been here only a few times, many guys who wanted to accost her had been killed out of no reason!"

'Tirsiris——Selnes Snake? The terrifying voodoo pharmacist?' Zhang Tie became faintly shocked as he had not imagined that he could meet that woman here, 'It's nothing strange. I, the Selnes Eagle could be here, then why couldn't she come here?'

Soon after Zhang Tie drunk two glasses of beer had Reinhardt arrived...

Chapter 628: The Critical Situation

After entering the bar, with a short glance, Reinhardt had noticed that equipment on Zhang Tie's back; he then walked towards him right away.

Zhang Tie felt that someone was watching him. He then turned around and found Reinhardt was walking towards him in the military uniform of colonel.

Since they met in Mocco City last time, Zhang Tie had not seen Reinhardt for a long time. At the sight of him, Zhang Tie found a 4-cm long new scar on Reinhardt's left face. Reinhardt looked more experienced.

However, Reinhardt almost could not recognize Zhang Tie as Zhang Tie not only changed his look but also changed his qi. Last time, Zhang Tie was only LV 9 when his qi was not oppressive. However, at this moment, Reinhardt felt Zhang Tie's qi was oppressive. The reason was that they both cultivated Iron-blood Battle Qi. People who had not cultivated Iron-blood Battle Qi would not have such a strong sense like Reinhardt.

Zhang Tie revealed a smile towards Reinhardt who sat on his side.

"Dude, one more beer!" Zhang Tie told the bartender.

Reinhardt glance at Zhang Tie carefully, "I almost could not recognize you!"

"Had better do this lest any trouble!"

Although they had not seen each other for a long time, the moment they sat together had they started to chat about what happened these days like friends who were separated for only a couple of days.

Zhang Tie didn't explain how did he change his look; therefore, Reinhardt just owed it to some disguise medicament.

"What happened several months ago?" Reinhardt asked him after finishing up a glass of beer in front of him and making a gesture to the bartender for one more glass.

"That was a trap from the beginning. They'd long been waiting for me to seek for death over there. Fortunately, I escaped out of there after experiencing too many tortures!"

As Reinhardt knew Zhang Tie well, he didn't even ask Zhang Tie whether he had surrendered to demons. Because that was impossible. Anyone who knew Zhang Tie would know that was a conspiracy of demons.

"B*stards!" Reinhardt swore ferociously. He knew that Zhang Tie was telling the truth. However, he could not change the publicity. Because not everyone knew Zhang Tie. Most of the commoners were easily influenced by publicity and propaganda. Therefore, at this moment, many people in Selnes Theater of Operations had treated Zhang Tie as the traitor of humans who had surrendered to demons after being influenced by the propaganda of demons and Three-eye Association. They started to swear and curse Selnes Eagle. The news that Zhang Tie had surrendered to demons was truly a great blow to the morale of frontline troops. Even if many people didn't believe that, they would doubt that. If they doubted that, their will to fight demons would shake. As a result, they would not be able to maintain their morale. If Zhang Tie showed his original look, he would bring troubles for sure.

The bartender pushed another glass of beer to him. Reinhardt finished it up once again and pounded it onto the bar counter, "Have you ordered the room?"

"Not yet, I've not imagined that you could come so fast!"

"I met Lieutenant Colonel Stevenson on the way. He told me about you and here I am!"

"It's a coincidence. On the way back, I saw them being chased by demonized puppets; therefore, I gave them a favor!"

"Let's go to another place. It's a bit noisy here!"

Zhang Tie nodded as he finished up his beer and dropped some gold coins on the bar counter. After that, he picked himself up and followed Reinhardt away from Demon Hunters Bar.

Reinhardt didn't drive over here. Therefore, they walked and chatted. When they left the bar and found no other people on the street, Zhang Tie started to inquire some sensitive topics from Reinhardt.

"Why did Jinyun Country's troop evacuate from Selnes Theater of Operations?"

"Do you know what happened in Volv City?" Reinhardt asked Zhang Tie instead of answering his question.

"Haven't Volv City been collapsed?"

Reinhardt revealed a solemn look, "Common fighters might not understand how Volv City was collapsed. Actually, demonized puppets didn't encounter any resistance before rushing into Volv City. Real combats started from inside the city."

Zhang Tie was really shocked by this news, "What the hell?"

"Before the demonized puppets corps arrived, the alliance command changed two corps which were garrisoning outside the city in the name of the shift. The two corps then received a new garrison map. On the two maps, there was an overlapped area. On the overlapped area of the map, the other corps was garrisoning in it. Therefore, human corps didn't dispatch troops to that overlapped area. However, demonized puppets corps fought all the way to Volv City from that overlapped area. When the demonized puppets rushed to Volv City, the two city gates were opened; the defensive equipment on the city walls didn't work at all!"

"Three-eye Association?" Zhang Tie had not imagined that Volv City was collapsed in this way. When he remembered the assassination that he encountered in the illegal demon hunters

market of Volv City, Zhang Tie understood that the power of Three-eye Association in Volv City was actually much greater than that he had imagined.

Reinhardt nodded forcefully, "The allied human forces lost three corps. After Volv City was collapsed, the two human corps of more than 1 million soldiers garrisoning outside the city were surrounded by more than 4 million demonized puppets. Finally, only less than 100,000 of them broke out of the encirclement. Through investigation, we found that the garrison map was replaced. In the original garrison maps, the forces of the two corps were clearly marked on the maps. In the investigation, a respondent even died in Volv City. However, it was the Joint Chiefs of Staff of the alliance command which made the decision to adjust the deployment of the two human corps. After the event broke out, General Howard, the top chief of staff of alliance command had resigned. His two sons also died in Volv city. However, besides, General Howard, the allied human forces couldn't even find a mole of Three-eye Association. After Volv City was collapsed, Jinyun Country's airship troop left Selnes Theater of Operations!"

After hearing Reinhardt's explanation, Zhang Tie felt chilly inside. In Selnes Theater of Operations, what was really terrifying was not demons from the north but the power of Three-eye Association in human forces who served demons. Three-eye Association's power was too deep-rooted in Waii Sub-continent that they were as firm as worms in bones. Three-eye Association was excelled at hiding their darkest side in the brightest place. You knew the moles of Three-eye Association were in the alliance command who were scheming the whole thing; however, you couldn't find who was that? That was really terrifying.

Given the joint forces of Huaiyuan Palace and the other major clans of Jinyun Country could not find the hidden force of Three-eye Association in Selnes Theater of Operations, after losing the

Crystal Battle Fortress, the Jinyun Country's airship troop directly left Selnes Theater of Operations in case of being screwed up by Three-eye Association once again.

In Zhang Tie's opinion, the evacuation of Jinyun Country's airship troop predicted that the defense line of allied human forces could not stand too long in Selnes Theater of Operations.

"Have the airship troop of Jinyun Country returned?"

"No, although Jinyun Country's airship troop have left Selnes Theater of Operations, they are still fighting for humans. They are helping Norman Empire transfer their population to the south."

"It seems that even Norman Empire have prepared to evacuate. As Jinyun Country's airship troop had over 1000 fury-level battle airships, if they could go full stream ahead, they could transfer over 500,000 population once in total. If the human defense line in Selnes Theater of Operations really collapsed, the removal of 500,000 population means that demons would reduce one corps' demonized puppets. From a certain perspective, it indirectly exterminated a demonized puppets corps. Perhaps Jinyun Country's airship troop made this choice out of this reason."

"The dozens of demonized puppets corps pouring in from the north awakened all the people in the Selnes frontline. After knowing that demons could produce demonized puppets, humans have to try their best to cut off the source of demonized puppets from then on. Additionally, they have to clear b*stards of Three-eye Association out of the human camp. If humans could not make the above two points, they would be defeated by their own force."

"Where's Lan Yunxi?"

"Before Jinyun Country's airship troop left Selnes, Lan Yunxi had been dispatched back to Huaiyuan Palace. I don't know why. The commander of Jinyun Country's airship troop is Wang Hu!"

Zhang Tie had a bit impression about Wang Hu. After knowing

that Lan Yunxi was safe, Zhang Tie became completely relaxed.

"Is there anyone of Jinyun Country still in Selnes Theater of Operations?"

"Only a few. It's said that those left are all elites and powerhouses above strong fighter from the major clans of Jinyun Country. However, all of them took off their military uniforms. They stayed in Selnes Theater of Operations not in the status of soldiers, but paladins. Nobody knew about their traces."

"How about those people of Hoorn Republic? They have a glider base outside Mocco City. Have those people escaped out of there?"

As the Hoorn Republic was a small country. Reinhardt thought a while before replying, "When demonized puppets beset the Crystal Battle Fortress, all the garrisons of airship and glider bases between Crystal Battle Fortress and Mocco City had evacuated. They might have been transferred to the rear bases. Thanks to Crystal Battle Fortress which slowed down the main force of demonized puppets corps, the garrisons in those bases could evacuate rapidly!"

"When I fell in the trap of demons and Three-eye Association last time, Major General Ford might have played a negative role or might have cooperated with Three-eye Association. Is that guy still in Mocco City?" Zhang Tie asked as he gritted his teeth out of fury, 'That guy must know the details.'

"Major General Ford had died soon after you were caught by demons!"

"Dead?"

"Yup, dead. Your event had a great influence. Therefore, the alliance command dispatched exclusive personnel to make an investigation about that. Due to great stress, Major General Ford committed suicide. Of course, we all know that civilian posts like Major General might be easily disguised as committing suicide!

After the death of Major General Ford, the alliance command could not figure out anything at all."

After hearing this news, Zhang Tie abandoned his plan. According to his previous plan, Zhang Tie was going back to Mocco City to investigate Major General Ford so as to catch the moles of Three-eye Association out of the alliance command. After this clue was cut off, Zhang Tie didn't have any other methods anymore.

"What about the alliance command? Who's responsible for it?"

"Since Volv City was collapsed, the alliance command had only been an empty title. At this moment, you cannot find anybody in the station of the alliance command except for a plate."

After knowing the current situation of the alliance command, Zhang Tie's heart filled with emotions, "What about the rest troops in Selnes?"

"There are still over 2 million human soldiers in Mocco and Sladic. After the remaining airships and some ground troops evacuated to the rear base, each human troop is occupying a piece of land in the frontline and acting willfully!"

"Ah? Won't it be a mess?"

"Almost like that. The situation in Mocco City is more sophisticated. As many troops are gathering there, it's rather complex to coordinate with their relationships. By contrast, Sladic City is better. There're two trump-card corps of Norman Empire over there. Although they have suffered some loss, it was not severe. After Volv City was collapsed, our prince had already taken over Sladic by force. Some troops of other countries had been invited to leave Sladic by our prince!"

Zhang Tie knew that other countries' troops could never be chased away from Sladic City without using force. As Norman Empire's corps outnumbered those of other countries' troops in Sladic City, of course, they could take control of the overall

situation of the city by force. However, they also needed to pay for it. Based on the current situation, the troops of different countries in the frontline might have been administered in their own way. If not the army of demons in front of them, they might have been fighting each other.

Although they didn't fight each other, the troops of countries had been suspicious about each other. They even became afraid of each other. Because of the existence of Three-eye Association, each country's troop was afraid that the other human troops were lackeys of Three-eye Association who would combine with demons to attack them at the critical moment. Therefore, each troop's commander became very meticulous lest being framed by others. How could such troops join hands with each other to fight demons sincerely?

After hearing Reinhardt's reply, Zhang Tie had a deeper comprehension about the evacuation of Jinyun Country's troop. The main force dispatched by Jinyun Country was an airship troop which could not fight demons independently without the support of ground troops. Airship troop had to depend on ground troops on many key aspects such as supplies and defense. Given the current situation in Selnes, once there was any problem about the ground coordination, the entire airship troop of Jinyun Country might be destroyed. Jinyun Country's airship troop might be forced to leave the frontline in Selnes because of concerns from all aspects.

After thinking about the problem from the perspective of a higher position, Zhang Tie almost figured out what he had not considered at once. For those decision makers of Jinyun Country, they were committed to dispatch troops to Selnes Theater of Operations out of their responsibilities or for the purpose of drilling newbies. However, they didn't want to have a lot of Chinese disciples lose their lives here which was far away from Jinyun Country. Such a decision might only be made by those extremely ferocious clan elders. As to that airship troop of Jinyun

Country which went to help Norman Empire transfer population, there might also be an unknown trade behind it.

"How many airships are available in the Selnes Theater of Operations now? When I escaped out of Titanic Duchy, I saw many gravetower demons in the north of Selnes Plain. They could produce a lot of demonized puppets each day. If not destroy them timely, Mocco City and Sladic would not stand long!"

"Although the gravetower demons outside the Tokei City have been destroyed, the airship troops of allied human forces also suffered a great loss. In the last 2 months, they were raided by the large units of wing demons for a few times and lost a lot of airships. Now, the power of human airship troops has been sharply weakened. As a result, humans also completely lost their air supremacy above Selnes Theater of Operations. There are only over 3000 airships in the theater of operations now. All of these airships have already evacuated to the airship bases within the territory of Symbian Republic. They could barely guarantee the safety of the rear airspace of Mocco City and Sladic City and provide limited air support for the two cities. They could not even surpass the middle line of Selnes Plain at the moment!" Reinhardt couldn't help but sigh.

The holy war had just started. However, the demons and the Three-eye Association had already been overwhelming. This unavoidably made humans a bit pessimistic.

Zhang Tie also became silent. He had not imagined that the Selnes Theater of Operations could develop to such a degree only after a few months. Compared to the demons which were as unified as a piece of iron plate, the power of allied human forces was not only weaker but also dispersed, which could hardly be unified. Even though they were barely unified, they would also face various problems. The nominal existence of the alliance command actually symbolized the failure of the first allied human defense line across Waii Sub-continent in the 3rd holy.

Zhang Tie didn't know how would the rest human countries fight demons. He couldn't work out any effective way either. Zhang Tie also became pessimistic about the battle situation of Selnes Theater of Operations. What he concerned most was that how long could Mocco City and Sladic stand?

Reinhardt directly led Zhang Tie into a high-end garden apartment. After arriving at the top storey of the 4-storey apartment, Reinhardt directly threw a bunch of keys to Zhang Tie, "Some rich people lived in here before. After they escaped away, this house was confiscated. Now, those living in this apartments are all commission officers. Common soldiers dare not find trouble here. Take the keys. When you come to Mocco City later on, just live here. I can also easily find you!"

As it was just a house, which was not important for Zhang Tie and Reinhardt, Zhang Tie didn't say anything; he directly took the keys.

"Are you going to converge with the airship troop of Norman Empire and Jinyun Country? If you want to go there, I can arrange it for you. You can leave Mocco City tomorrow!"

"No, I don't want to leave out of here yet. I feel good being alone. Additionally, I've not gotten back to Senel Clan yet. I've not killed enough b*stards of demons!" When Zhang Tie talked about Senel Clan, a shrew light flashed across his eyes.

Reinhardt burst out into laughter before asking Zhang Tie, "What's your level now?"

"5-star battle master!" Zhang Tie told him honestly.

"Good boy, you've really surpassed me. I'm just LV 10..." Reinhardt burst out laughing hysterically as he patted Zhang Tie's shoulder with one hand while he reached another hand towards Zhang Tie, "Come on, let me try whether you lied to me."

Zhang Tie directly reached out a hand and resisted against

Reinhardt's hand in the air. Only after a few seconds, Reinhardt let out a muffled harrumph as he was forced to retreat backward three steps. Meanwhile, his face turned a bit pale. Until over 10 seconds later did he recover a bit composure.

"How much force did you use?" Reinhardt asked Zhang Tie.

"80%!"

"Come on, tell me the truth!" Reinhardt looked solemn as he stared at Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie could only force a bitter smile as he scratched his head, "60%!"

"Ha...ha...ha, that's more like it. It seems that the Iron-blood Camp of our No. 39 division will have a powerhouse for sure!" Reinhardt didn't mind it at all; instead, he burst out into laughter.

"Boss, aren't you jealous?" Zhang Tie called Reinhardt like how all the members of Iron-blood Camp of No. 39 Division called him before.

"F*rt. So many people are sharper than me in the world. How could I be jealous about my brother's talent? Of course, I'm glad about that. I think you might become a knight in the future." Reinhardt touched his thorny mustache as he watched Zhang Tie seriously, "Maybe I will also choose to be struck by a lightning bolt a few days later. I will see whether I could make a great progress in battle strength!"

Both of them then burst out into laughter.

...

After the talk, Zhang Tie saw Reinhardt walking downstairs. Until Reinhardt left the apartment did Zhang Tie see his hands and mumbled, "I'm sorry, boss, actually I just used 30% of my strength just now..."

...

After opening the door of the apartment and entering it, Zhang Tie found everything inside it was well arranged. It seemed that nobody lived in here recently. Besides those furnitures and sofa which looked a bit luxurious, there was no problem.

After taking a bath, Zhang Tie laid on the bed with his hand behind his head. Watching the crystal ceiling lamp which had not been turned on, he started to think about his next plan.

After knowing that those people whom he was concerned about were safe, Zhang Tie had been reassured. He had really not imagined about the current battle situation of Selnes Theater of Operations. However, as he had tried his best to do what he deserved, Zhang Tie didn't have any mental stress. Neither was he an alarmist. Instead, he had a sense of relief. 'Now that the airship troop of Jinyun Country had evacuated from here, I would be free here. No matter how long could the human defense line stand in Selnes Theater of Operations, I only need to consider how to improve my battle strength in Selnes Theater of Operations and find Senel Clan troubles. No matter how worse the battle situation would be, I would be able to escape at the critical moment.'

'Perhaps I could also be a paladin in Selnes Theater of Operations! In this period, I need to find an opportunity to fly to the seaside and increase energy storage for Castle of Black Iron greatly.'

'If I kill some more wing demons, I would have a ripe fruit of source, as long as I find the settlement of wing demons.'

'Additionally, I only have a thunder hawk and a rat to use my soul-based animal controlling skill on. By far, I have not found any side effect of soul-based animal controlling skill on my body. It seems that I can find some more incarnations so as to deal with more situations.

Thinking of incarnation, a weird whim occurred in Zhang Tie's mind. Zhang Tie then instantly became thrilled, 'According to the "Great Wilderness Sutra", all the living beings could be incarnated

except for humans, does...it mean that I can also incarnate demons...'

...

Zhang Tie was driven excited by this fantastic whim. Gradually, he fell asleep...

...

Zhang Tie slept like a dead pig overnight. After waking up, Zhang Tie refreshed himself before leaving his residence. He prepared to leave Mocco City. However, he found it was too late to leave as the gates of Mocco City had been closed while the atmosphere both inside and outside the city became much more intense than that of yesterday at once.

Looking in the distance, Zhang Tie saw more than one million demonized puppets as he felt his scalp numb.

In a distant and sharp clarino, the demonized puppets started to march towards Mocco City. At the beginning, the demonized puppets just wandered; gradually, they paced up; finally, they started to run like a tide, causing booms...

Chapter 629: The Strength of Steel

Zhang Tie didn't know whether he was fortunate or not. Only after staying in Mocco City overnight, he had encountered such a large-scale battle situation.

Many people who planned to leave the city were gathering in the northernmost city wall of Mocco City. Watching so many demonized puppets, many people were so scared that their face even turned pale. When something reached its million level, it would be overwhelming in front of you even if they were ants.

At this moment, what was rushing towards Mocco City were not ants but the army of demonized puppets.

At least two demonized puppets corps were rushing towards Mocco City.

At this moment, most of those on the city wall of the north gate along with Zhang Tie were demon hunters. Some of them were paladins. Actually, demon hunters were not greatly different than paladins. Demon hunters were powerhouses with military background while paladins were powerhouses who wished to defend demons in Selnes Theater of Operations voluntarily. The two parties both had rich experiences in fighting demons and demonized puppets. Many demon hunters were commission officers. Because of this, the garrisons allowed Zhang Tie and the others to watch what was happening outside the city in the city tower.

The saplings and newborn weeds were quivering, causing ripples in the pond beside the saplings and newborn weeds. The ground was booming like it was thundering. It was caused by more than one million demonized puppets who were running. Looking away at the distance, the demonized puppets were forming a big, dirty and fierce tide.

Including Zhang Tie, everyone held their breath to wait for the

attack.

Right behind the city wall, there was a turret which was higher than 50 m. All the people in the turret were working hard.

On the top of the turret, there was a huge mobile platform which looked like an astronomical observatory. Inside that platform, a huge over 1000-ton mechanical flywheel was swiveling rapidly. Beneath the flywheel were two sets of steam engines. The driving force provided by the steam engines turned into the speed of revolution of the huge flywheel. Above the flywheel, complex steam mechanical devices were automatically loading huge, odd gear-shaped items into the projectile positions of the flywheel.

Because there were two boiler rooms downstairs, steam would be transmitted upwards through pipes. Even in winter, the temperature in the turret would still be higher than 35 degree Celsius, not to mention now. In the turret which was over 40 degree Celsius, each human fighter was oozing sweat all over. Almost all the fighters here were in the bare upper body, a pair of short pants and a pair of shoes. However, at the critical moment, each person was sticking to their own position while staring at the commander who sent orders. Everybody became intense. However, nobody felt frightful. As a human fighter who garrisoned in the steam centrifugal turret silently, it was time for them to show their value. Many people could only have such a chance one or two times in their whole lives.

A Chinese captain with fortitude look and black eyes was standing in the turret and observing the direction of the demonized puppets corps using telescopic rangefinder before sending orders one after another.

"Direction 2..."

"Projection angle 65..."

"Loading centrifugal gear bombs..."

"Largest load..."

"Maintain the largest revolving speed of the flywheel..."

With the series of orders, the metal platform at the top of the turret which was higher than 50 m slowly moved while the huge gun muzzle opened and raised towards the sky...

"Brothers, are you afraid?" That commissioned officer moved his eyes away from the rangefinder at the critical moment as he threw a glance at those fighters who were garrisoning in the turret.

Those fighters' age ranged from 16 to above 60. Some were constantly spading coal into the boilers by shovel; some were gazing at those pressure gauges and tachometers in front of them; some were covered with tools and observing the running operation of those steam pipes inside the turret. Some operators were sitting before the operating table and manipulating the pile of metal drawbars and dials. In the underground bomb loading room, over 20 tough men were gazing at the bomb belt in front of them and waiting for the orders from above.

"Fear what!"

"Just beat those b*stard!"

"Yes, no matter what, we are common low-end soldiers. On the battlefield, we might be killed before chopping down any demon. However, in here, by manipulating such a big weapon, we will make a comeback with only one launch. To fear what?" Soldiers in the turret replied loudly.

"It's not enough to make a comeback; we need to make at least 1000 times more. If you make less than that, don't tell others you're following my order!" The Chinese captain joked as he turned solemn at once, "Attention, ready..."

The inside of the turret became quiet at once. Only the huge centrifugal flywheel hummed...

In less than 10 seconds, a roar sounded in the turret...

"Launch..."

Closely after the order "Launch", the great centrifugal linear velocity turned into the initial velocity of the ammunition on the flywheel at once. With a shriek outside the turret, a group of centrifugal gear bombs had flown towards the far...

...

This was Zhang Tie's first time to witness a battle facing a city in such a scale.

At this moment, the entire Mocco City had been fortified. There were over 100 centrifugal turrets with the largest range in the city. The moment the demonized puppets surged into the range of the centrifugal turret, over 100 centrifugal turrets opened fire almost at the same time. Zhang Tie raised his head and saw hundreds of black points drawing a distant parabola towards the demonized puppets corps over 4 miles away. After over 10 seconds, they all fell into the camp of demonized puppets.

The moment the huge wheel-sized metal gears fell on the ground, they sprung up once again. Due to their great momentum, they kept rolling forward, crushing demonized puppets dozens of meters ahead. As a result, a lot of demonized puppets' blood and fleshs sprayed in all directions with broken tendons and bones...

Standing on the tower over the city gate, Zhang Tie saw those huge centrifugal gears causing over 100 red bloody traces. In the blink of an eye, those bloody traces disappeared as they were submerged by the following tide. For those terrifying demonized puppets, they didn't know about fear and pain at all.

Zhang Tie felt that powerful steam centrifugal shell was like a kurbash which slashed onto those monsters rushing towards Mocco City crazily, leaving bloody traces on their bodies. However, those monsters didn't stop moving forward.

After 20 seconds, over 100 gears flew off once again and fell

towards the distance, leaving 100 more bloody traces, which disappeared in a wink...

Like mad cows, the black tide grew crazier among the constant shrieks.

After launching 10 rounds of shells, the vanguard of the black tide had already been 3 miles away from Mocco City.

Among a wide area of thick rising smokes, Zhang Tie saw over 1,000 armored vehicles and tanks accelerating towards the demonized puppets from outside the Mocco City. At this moment, those who dared rush towards the black tide by armored vehicles were real heroes.

In order to deal with those demonized puppets, the wheels on both sides of those armored vehicles had been installed with blades.

The moment the two parties collided with each other had those demonized puppets been sent flying backwards. Some were crushed; numerous were cut into halves. At the same time, the armored vehicles shot out bolts through steam ballistas. Each time they shot blindly had they at least penetrated through two demonized puppets...

After being heavily cracked by human armored troops, those demonized puppets' tide-like attack was curbed at once; however, it was temporary.

Demonized puppets could barely be killed. Even though they were cut into halves, they would not die in a short time; instead, they could still move. As to the penetrating injuries, unless their fragile head or necks, which contained central nervous system, were penetrated through, those injuries were not fatal to demonized puppets at all.

Gradually, the demonized puppets started to launch a counterattack. Numerous demonized puppets jumped on the

armored vehicles and blocked the loopholes and peepholes with their own bodies while others swarmed up the armored vehicles like ants that biting beetles. After their limbs being chopped off, the demonized puppets were struggling and trying their best to insert their weapons into the pedrails of the armored vehicles; some of them even put their own arms or bodies into the pedrails or wheels to break down the armored vehicles.

After being blocked by piles of demonized puppets, armored vehicles could not launch bolts anymore...

When the pedrails were destroyed, the armored vehicles started to turn around in the same place; some could not even move anymore...

Being surrounded by demonized puppets, the drivers in armored vehicles could not see the forward direction; as a result, their armored vehicles collided with other armored vehicles. Some of them even drove into gullies...

While others kept surging forward...

Only after a few minutes, the collision between steel and demonized puppets which were barely killed had entered a climax.

Not all the demonized puppets were blocked by armored vehicles. When a part of demonized puppets surrounded the armored vehicles, the others just ignored them and continued to surge towards Mocco City while uttering weird roars.

At this moment, the firm fortifications made of steel and cement outside Mocco City started to work while the long-distance ballistas on the city wall of Mocco City also started to roar. Facing the dispersed strike which was like raindrops, a large area of demonized puppets fell down; however, they struggled to pick themselves up from the ground. The entire Mocco City boiled like a piece of hot, red steel in a split second...

Chapter 630: Yingzhou State of Taixia Country

Yingzhou State, Taixia Country, Eastern Continent...

As the most powerful and formidable country and the core region of human civilization in this age, Yingzhou State gathered billions of Chinese population. Every Hua people dreamed for that place. Taixia State represented the top human civilization and power in this age. Each human historian would prioritize Eastern Continent——Taixia Country——Hua people when they talked about the major reason that humans could survive on after the Catastrophe.

Almost every human historian was aware that there would be no Taixia Country or humans would have been exterminated in the former two holy wars without Hua people. Anyone who had a clear recognition about this age would sigh with emotions that Hua people and Taixia Country were the masters of Iron Black Age.

In this age, the continuity of Hua people and the power of Taixia Country bore the largest hope of the survival of all the humans.

If not considering the history and legends that happened in the distant age, humans had almost 6,000 years' recorded history. With the Catastrophe as the original point, there were more than 5,000 years on its left side while only less than 900 years were on its right side. In the recorded human history of 6,000 years, no other countries could match Taixia Country's power and prosperity. Actually, no country or alliance that could match Taixia Country was ever described in the history textbooks of humans. All the alleged brilliant and powerful countries and alliances in the human history textbooks were like fireflies in front of the bright moon compared to Taixia Country today.

Taixia Country was so powerful and prosperous that it was out of ones' imaginations. As a result, those who couldn't imagine its power and prosperity could only strive to move closer to it. When

the holy war was coming, they would be more anxious about migrating into Taixia Country. Yingzhou State, as a coastal state of the 72 greater states of Taixia Country had a large number of immigrants after the holy war, especially the coastal cities, which became boisterous as a result.

...

It was not Zhang Yang's first time to come to the harbor of Fuhai City, each time he came here, Zhang Yang would feel shocked, despite he had also seen those prosperous harbors in Huaiyuan Prefecture,

Fuhai Harbor was just one of the 17 harbors in Yingzhou State. It was not the largest one as its scale and freight throughput could only rank middle places. However, Zhang Yang almost got lost when he came here for the first time.

The harbor coastline was longer than 70 miles. It had over 20,000 shipyards and docks, big or small. In the cargo berths, there were so many giant head masts. Walking in such a harbor, he felt like walking in a steel woods composed of ships and huge fleets. Right in here, Zhang Yang saw huge open-sea fleets which weighed over 1 million tons.

There were exclusive railway lines in the harbor which connected the harbor from the south to the north. It took people almost one hour from the southernmost part of the harbor to the northernmost part by commuting train.

Fuhai Harbor was very large, so was Fuhai City. After coming to Taixia Country and gathering a lot of information from all aspects, Zhang Yang was deeply impressed by Taixia Country. It was too "huge".

Zhang Yang didn't know how large was Taixia Country, because the entire Eastern Continent including those black and gray wild regions on map belonged to Taixia Country. In the words of Hua people, the entire Eastern Continent was the inherent territory of

Taixia Country.

In the territory of Taixia Country, the 9 immortal states were the most prosperous, followed by 36 upper states, 72 greater states. The wild places, there were many medium-sized and small states and prefectures and people agglomerations.

The basic condition to be a greater state of Taixia Country was that the state had to have at least 108 Class A cities, not to mention other conditions and requirements.

After staying in Taixia Country several months, Zhang Yang had not figured out how cities were classified in Taixia Country. He was told that even Yiyang City in Jinyun Country could barely meet the requirements on the scale of population and size of the economy to be a Class A city in Taixia Country, as to other conditions, it might not even meet.

In Waii Sub-continent, Norman Empire copied Taixia Country from all aspects such as its social systems, urban classifications and national class divisions, etc..

The founder of Norman Empire, which was well-known across Waii Sub-continent became average in Taixia Country. In the eyes of most of the people in Taixia Country who knew Norman Empire, the alleged founder of Norman Empire was just a smart guy who ruled an uncivilized place after traveling Taixia Country and learned something. There were so many similar people in other continents and uncivilized places. Even now, there were still a lot of guys who came to Taixia Country with the same thoughts and dreams. They hoped to find a shortcut on this marvelous land so that they could be rich and privileged when they came back to their homeland.

As a Hua people who lived overseas for a long time, when Zhang Yang came to Taixia Country, he firstly needed to be adapted to the inherent confidence and pride of Hua people. After Taixia Country developed greatly, those Hua people who were extremely stubborn

and proud would start to call themselves God's men.

In this age, each Hua people living in Taixia Country was qualified to be proud of that.

Take Yingzhou State as an instance. As a greater state, the distance from south to north and from east to west were both above 20,000 miles. The area of Yingzhou State alone had already surpassed the total territory of all the human countries across Blackson Humans Corridor. Plus the area of all the islands and seas under the affiliation of Yingzhou State, the size of Yingzhou alone had already been several times more than that of Blackson Humans Corridor.

Of course, Yingzhou State was also very prosperous as an upper state.

Yingzhou State was divided into 7 prefectures, which included over 130 class A cities, over 1,000 cities below class A and tens of thousands of towns, large or small. 17 years ago, the state government roughly calculated the total population of Yingzhou State based on the consumption of common salt. According to the investigation, about 6.7 billion Hua people were living in Yingzhou State. Therefore, more Hua people lived here.

But it was just a state. We can imagine how prosperous and powerful was Taixia Country.

After coming to Yingzhou State, Zhang Yang firstly bought a map of the full territory of Taixia Country which was about 4 square meters. It was a mini version. On the map, Zhang Tie recognized that the distance from the southernmost part of Taixia Country to its northernmost part was 380.000 miles, excluding the grey regions.

It meant that it would take a person at least half a year by train straightly from the southernmost part to the northernmost part of Taixia Country at the speed of 100 km/h including using 2 hours to add water and coal each day. Actually, many people had tried it.

Zhang Yang was told that it would take a person at least 20 months to finish the complete travel from the southernmost part to the northernmost part of Taixia Country.

However, on the map, Zhang Yang found that the distance between the easternmost part and the westernmost part of Taixia Country was even about $\frac{1}{3}$ longer than that from the southernmost part to the northernmost part.

Curiously, after coming to Taixia Country, Zhang Yang had felt reassured. He had never felt that reassured when he was in Blackhot City. When he returned to Huaiyuan Prefecture, he felt a bit reassured; however, he didn't become reassured completely. The moment he stepped on the land of Taixia Country and knew that billions of Hua people with the black hair and eyes were living here had Zhang Yang recovered his composure completely. Meanwhile, all the disordered sounds that had been restless in his heart over 2 decades disappeared along with his concerns about coming to a strange place.

Zhang Yang realized that Taixia Country was the very place for Zhang's posterity to root and sprout and the place for Zhang clan to find and develop its everlasting undertakings.

As Zhang Ping, Zhang Tie's uncle said, this was where they should go.

...

Zhang Yang was waiting nearby the dock "Tiger 08" with some attendants. After receiving the message, Zhang Yang knew that those steamers whose weight ranged from 30,000 to 50,000 tons would finally be anchored at the dock nearby "Tiger 08". In this harbor, different tons of ships would anchor in different docks. Docks were different in water depths and docking facilities. In the dock region named as "Rat", there were super huge steamers which weighed over 1 million tons while those huge steamers which weighed over 500,000 tons would basically anchor in dock region

named as "Ox".

It took Zhang family over 2 months from Waii Sub-continent to Yingzhou State of Taixia Country by airship last year. Although the airship was fast and comfortable, it could not hold too many passengers or items in such a long-distance flight. Therefore, Zhang Yang decided to evacuate people in batches last year. The second batch of people would arrive today. They were taking a huge 36,000-ton open-ocean steamer which was bought by Jinwu Corporation from Zhang's Milky Way Shipyard. After bumping 9 months on the seas, the Safety&Tranquility steamer finally sent a message to Zhang Yang last day and told him that they would arrive at Fuhai Harbor of Yingzhou State this morning. Therefore, Zhang Yang waited here with some attendants.

Besides some reliable backbone personnel from all departments of Jinwu Corporation and their relatives, there were some items that Zhang Yang had people bring from Huaiyuan Prefecture, including some key equipment of his dad's airship manufacturer. After all, they were all valuable belongings. Zhang Yang had them packed and transported here.

After waiting for more than 2 hours on the dock, Zhang Yang still didn't see Safety&Tranquility yet. However, other huge steamers docked near the dock "Tiger 08".

The moment those huge steamers docked had the passengers pushed onto the deck and cheered. For them, it was really like getting rid of bitterness and reaching the bank of happiness. Everything here was fresh and nice to those people.

Watching those people, Zhang Yang recalled the scene when he came to Yingzhou State for the first time.

At this critical moment, those who could come to Yingzhou State by steamer were at least not poor. This could be judged from their clothes.

...

"Dad, what's that?" a little girl of about 11 years old in a beautiful skirt raised her head while pointing at that object in the sky when she passed by Zhang Yang.

"Young lady, of course, it's an airship! When we settle down, the master will consider adding the airship as a traffic tool for sure. It's said that Taixia Country is so large. It's very inconvenient for us to travel without an airship!" a fat woman told the little girl, "I've not imagined that young lady could speak Hua language so well only after learning it two years!"

"No, Lisa, that's not an airship. It doesn't have air sacs..." The little girl exclaimed.

"What?"

Some raised their heads out of curiosity and became stunned at once. They then shouted, "How come is it flying in the air without air sacs?"

After hearing their exclamations, more people stopped walking as they all raised their heads and watched the sky, including Zhang Yang.

There was indeed an over 200-m long object hovering in the sky at about 1,000 m in height. That object was different than the airship in shape. Additionally, it didn't have air sacs or wings. Looking from the ground, it was completely a ship. Being different from common boats, it was floating in the sky.

After coming to Yingzhou State many months, it was Zhang Yang's second time to see such an airboat. When he saw it for the first time, he also became dumbfounded; however, at this moment, he had almost been used to it. However, he was still very interested in it as he was deeply shocked by the power of civilization of Taixia Country.

Chapter 631: Airboat of Noble Clans

Before coming to Taixia Country, Zhang Yang had never believed that there was such an object in the world. Three decades ago, such a marvelous airboat had already appeared when an exotic metal called "air floating metal" was excavated from the underground world. However, such an object could only be seen in Taixia Country. Even in Taixia Country, only very few people could have such an object. In the airspace of Taixia, the airship was still the main air traffic tool. Such an airboat was rarely seen. After coming to Taixia Country the past few months, Zhang Yang had just seen it twice.

It was very crowded when people got off the steamer. One person raised his head and watched the sky as he continued to walk forward. Unfortunately, he was pushed into the sea. He then flapped and exclaimed in the sea as those on his side pulled him out of the sea hurriedly.

"That's an air floating airboat made of the air floating metal..."

A sailor in the dark brown skin explained to those people in Hua language fluently as he was fixing the anchor chain while those passengers were watching that exotic object in the sky.

"Can I buy one? How much?" A middle-aged man with a bulged belly while being pushed by people in all directions looked like "This uncle doesn't lack money" as he asked with glittering eyes.

"Of course you can..." That sailor had seen too many nouveau riches who escaped here in order to dodge from the holy war. He derided, "Across Yingzhou State of Taixia Country, besides the governor of this state, only a few clans like Qin Clan could purchase the air floating airboat. Qin Clan is very well-known here. You will know them soon. If you think you could match Qin Clan on wealth, you might purchase an air floating airboat!"

"How rich is Qin Clan?" The middle-aged man continued as he

felt the sailor's ridicule.

"Qin Clan is a noble clan in Yingzhou State. They've multiplied over 40 generations here. They have a nickname, '100-city Qin'!"

"100-city Qin?" That middle-aged man repeated as he felt strange about that word, "What does that mean?"

"It means that Qin Clan has over 100 cities. If you also have many cities, you can also buy an airboat!"

"One clan has...over 100...ci...cities?" That middle-aged man was frightened as he stammered.

"Hmm, almost like that. Although it's a bit exaggerating. I was told Qin Clan at least have 70 cities and dozens of large-scale town. Therefore, Qin Clan was called 100-city Qin!" The Sailor's voice was full of admiration and respect when he talked about so much wealth of Qin Clan, "You'd better be low-key here. In Taixia Country, if you have less than 1 city and levy tax of less than 1 million gold coins from your city each year, you'd better not tell others that you're a rich man; otherwise, you would be ridiculed. They would treat you as a rustic."

After hearing the sailor's words, the man's fury disappeared at once. He even dared not ask the price of the airboat. Watching the airboat disappearing in the sky very soon, the middle-aged man could only take his followers away while lowering his head. Only that little girl was still watching the sky.

After hearing this dialogue, Zhang Yang also smiled. Before coming to Taixia Country, all of these people had excellent lives. Many of them were rich in their former settlement. However, when they came to Taixia Country, they found the standard of being rich was out of commoners' imagination. In Yingzhou State, a lot of clans had cities. In Taixia Country, cities were divided into official cities and private cities. Official cities were managed by Taixia's governments and imperial court while private cities belonged to personnel or clans. Over two-thirds of cities in Taixia

Country were private.

100-city Qin was well-known in Yingzhou State. When Zhang Yang came to Yingzhou State at the beginning, he was told that noble clans in Yingzhou State like Qin Clan had very deep root in this state. Qin Clan had been in Yingzhou State for over 700 years. Due to the efforts of generations, Qin Clan had such a great undertaking. If in other places, Qin Clan, with such a great undertaking, would be unrivaled. However, in Taixia Country, Qin Clan was just a local noble clan.

Private property was guaranteed by the laws of Taixia Country. According to the laws of Taixia Country, as long as you built a private city in a place, you will have that private city forever. The owner of the city had the right to levy taxes and formulate taxation policies to gain "tax and interest", you could also recruit army and guards for your private city...

In your private city, you could levy whatever you want as it was protected by the Taixia's laws. Additionally, all the non-slave population in Taixia Country could enjoy free immigration. However, if you didn't have enough conditions to attract people to do business in your private city, your city would be an empty city. You could have as many troops and powerhouses as you want. Rich people were even encouraged to cultivate powerhouses privately according to the laws of Taixia Country. They could do business and expand their own territory by force. Nevertheless, bullying the weak and violating others' legal rights and interests were forbidden and intolerable in accordance with the laws of Taixia Country.

Therefore, all the noble clans and rich people in Taixia Country were wild about building cities and treating it as the best undertaking that they could leave to their posterity.

There was a saying in Taixia Country, "Commoners kept houses, noble clans kept cities; houses existed for about 100 years while the cities existed forever."

After coming to Taixia Country several months later, Zhang Yang's ambition was also gradually aroused. For all the Hua people, Taixia Country was full of hopes. People had enough place to make their dream come true here. 'Others could build cities for the well-being of their posterity and have their bloodlines carried forward, why wouldn't Zhang Tie and I establish an undertaking in Taixia Country?'

...

At almost noon, Zhang Yang finally saw that the Safety&Tranquility steam slowly driving towards the dock under the guidance of the pilot vessel. In Huaiyuan Prefecture, Safety&Tranquility was a huge vessel. However, it was dwarfed here.

The moment the Safety&Tranquility was anchored steadily and the gangway ladder was put down from the vessel, all the passengers who had traveled about 10 months poured out at once.

"Boss..." All the people who got off the vessel were very thrilled at the sight of Zhang Yang. Some even dropped off tears. They finally arrived at Taixia Country and didn't need to be terrified anymore.

"Thankfully, you all arrived safe and sound. After bumping on the sea for so long, you can have a rest for a few days. I've already arranged your residence. After a couple of days, we will discuss the next plan!" Zhang Yang let out a sigh when he saw the backbone personnel of Jinwu Business Group and their family members. 'As long as these people have arrived, I will have good helpers when doing business. As we are new here from Waii Sub-continent, we could only join hands with each other to tide over difficulties. By doing this, these people could be more loyal to me.'

"Boss, we've bumped on the sea for over 300 days, we're almost driven mad. When can we assemble those machines? Once we find some more employees and figure out the purchase channels of raw materials, our Jinwu Airship Manufacturing Corporation could

produce airships soon!" An engineer of Zhang Yang's dad suggested enthusiastically as he couldn't wait to show his value.

Zhang Yang threw a glance at that engineer. He knew clearly what that engineer was thinking about. At this moment, those people who came to Taixia were shocked by such a prosperous country. Therefore, they were very afraid of not finding their location in the new place so as to show their value, "Don't worry about our plan, Taixia is a bit different than Huaiyuan Prefecture. I've not figured out many things yet. You only need to believe me that as long as you wish to continue to work for me and serve Jinwu Business Group and Zhang Clan, as long as I have food, I will never make you hungry. Our Jinwu Business Group would never abandon those who would like to stand together with us regardless of any risks and difficulties!"

At this moment, Zhang Yang looked more like a leader. Only with a few words, he had made all the others reassured.

This time, over 100 employees of Zhang Yang came here from Huaiyuan Prefecture. Plus their family members, the Safety&Tranquility held over 1,600 passengers in total. As shipping tickets from Waii Sub-continent to Taixia Country were rare, almost all the employees came here with their relatives and family members. Even some guys came here with their beautiful wives. After asking the reason, Zhang Yang knew that since these guys were allowed to take their family members to Taixia Country, so many people would like to propose a marriage for them. Some girls even wanted to marry them voluntarily. Before going aboard, these guys were still intoxicated in their sweet dreams. Finally, they had to take their wife, and parents-in-law, their wives' younger brothers together to Taixia Country.

As the old saying went, "If one requested others too strictly, one would not have any friend." Zhang Yang didn't feel like figuring out the details. Because numerous people were dreaming to leave Waii Sub-continent, a steamer ticket would even arouse a fight.

After remembering his mom's instruction, Zhang Yang just wanted to save as more people as possible.

It would take 180 gold coins a day for the Safety&Tranquility steamer to anchor in the dock of Fuhai Harbor. Although it was not cheap, it was necessary. After handling the procedures on the harbor and arranging some people on the Safety&Tranquility, Zhang Yang took those people away from Fuhai Harbor.

Like how Zhang Yang felt when he came to Fuhai Harbor at the beginning, watching the over 70 mile-long harbor and those huge fleets which weighed over 1 million tons in the docks, everybody else was shocked by the prosperous scene.

...

Zhang Yang ordered a big hotel in a quiet place over 10 miles away from the port area of Fuhai Harbor. He arranged those people to take rest in the hotel for a couple of days and adapt to the situation of Yingzhou State. Although those people were very excited the moment they got off the steamer, after a short time, they had started to feel dizzy as they suffered from symptoms like seasickness. It was a common disease. Like some people would suffer from carsickness, after bumping on the sea for a long time, when they came to the steady land, some people would not adapt to such a change at once. Therefore, they would also feel uncomfortable temporarily. Many sailors had such an experience.

After having a meal with everybody else who had not eaten food on the land for over 10 months, Zhang Yang comforted them faintly and told them to have a good rest. After that, he left the hotel by car.

In that black sedan, on the way back home, Zhang Yang took out of a thick book "Taixia Laws".

If you wanted to understand a place, the most effective way was to learn the local laws. The complete Taixia laws contained 360,000 words in Hua language. The complete "Taixia Laws" were

divided into "Great Laws", "Civil Laws", "Commercial Laws" and "Criminal Laws", which regulated the running of the entire huge eastern empire as the supreme code of Taixia Country.

Over 500 years, "Taixia Laws" had just been remedied once, namely, increasing an item in the "Commercial Laws" of "Taixia Laws", which made a clear definition about the shipping priority of maritime businessmen. Due to the authority of "Taixia Laws", Taixia became more and more powerful.

...

Only after half an hour, a manor that covered about 15,000 square meters appeared in front of Zhang Yang's black sedan. At the sight of the sedan, two spirits fighters instantly opened the gate of the manor and had the sedan enter.

The moment Zhang Yang got off the vehicle had he seen some female servants running here and there. They looked very busy. The entire manor also looked a bit intense.

"Aunt Sun, what's happening?" Zhang Yang hurriedly asked a senior who came to Taixia Country together with his family members.

"First young master, thank god, you're back. The three wives of the second young master are going to deliver babies!"

"Now?"

"Yup, the three ladies have already broken their amniotic fluid simultaneously in half an hour just after the noon. What a coincidence..."

After hearing Aunt Sun's words, Zhang Yang hurriedly walked into the inner chamber where the three ladies were.

Chapter 632: The Birth of Immortal Bloodline (I)

After entering the inner chamber, Zhang Yang found all the members of Zhang Clan were busy serving the three women in the exclusive delivery room.

Zhang Ping was circling outside the room while he looked both intense and pleasant. He kept punching one fist onto the other. Zhang Yang didn't see his mom. Paul, whom Zhang Tie arranged to protect Linda, Beverly and Fiona, was also waiting outside the room. Compared to Zhang Ping's anxious look, Paul kept his eyes closed in a tranquil way all over. He didn't open his eyes until Zhang Yang arrived. He then put his right hand on his left chest as he faintly bowed to Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang also nodded towards him.

"Where're dad and mom?" Zhang Yang asked as he strode forward.

"Your mom is helping inside the room with Huizhen!" Zhang Yang's dad looked a bit reassured after seeing Zhang Yang.

"What's going on inside?"

"It's should be okay!"

"Dad, you don't need to be that nervous. Just take a seat outside. It will be all right after a short while!"

"How can I take a seat at this moment? I've not imagined that Zhang Tie's going to be a papa!" Zhang Ping revealed a faint smile as he was going to have three more grandsons or granddaughters. This brought him a great sense of achievement, "When did you contact Zhang Tie last time, is he okay?"

"Good, he's dynamic!" Zhang Yang didn't tell the truth which was told by Zhang Tie. After all, as long as knowing that Zhang Tie was safe, their parents would not be concerned about him.

"That's good. Remember to tell him to not care about the honor of 'Selnes Eagle'. It would be good as long as he could come back alive. The honor 'Selnes Eagle' is nothing but a f*art in Taixia Country!"

"I know. I will tell him when I contact him next time! The Safety&Tranquility has already arrived at Fuhai Harbor along with those equipments. Dad, what's your next plan?" Zhang Yang inquired Zhang Ping. If Zhang Clan wanted to settle down in Taixia Country, his dad's airship manufacturing plant had to take root here too. Although it was an industry of Jinwu Business Group, the airship manufacturing plant was always run by his dad. It was Zhang Ping's undertaking. Therefore, Zhang Yang had to follow his dad's opinion on the airship manufacturing plant.

"I've investigated the situation of Fuhai City these months. The harbor and transport services here are very developed. The shipbuilding skills here are much more advanced than that in Huaiyuan Prefecture. However, there's a weaker foundation here on airship manufacturing industry. There's almost no airship manufacturing plant here. If we settle down here, we will be greatly limited in all aspects such as talents, techniques and resources. Our airship manufacturing plant will hardly develop. As a small enterprise, if we want to build competitive airships here, we have to do trades and learn from others enterprises in the same industry!" Zhang Ping became excited and professional when he talked about the airships manufacturing.

"Which place do you think is suitable?"

"I was told that some places in the inland of Yingzhou State had an advanced manufacturing industry, which gathered a batch of Class A airship manufacturing enterprises. I've not investigated over there yet. Therefore, I have not made any decision temporarily. What do you think?"

"I will wait until my younger sisters-in-law get better. Then, I want to take a look at Huaiyuan City!" Zhang Yang replied after a

few seconds.

Huaiyuan City was a settlement of Huaiyuan Palace in Taixia Country and one of the Class A cities in Yingzhou State. It was over 3,000 miles away from Fuhai City. Since he came to Taixia Country, Zhang Yang had not been there yet.

"Are you prepared to settle down in Fuhai City?" Zhang Yang's dad asked Zhang Yang.

"Not yet..." As a descendant of Huaiyuan Palace, of course, he could be taken care of by Huaiyuan Palace when he came to Huaiyuan City. However, Zhang Yang didn't mean to gain any special care from Huaiyuan City; instead, he wanted to negotiate with Huaiyuan Palace on the business of all-purpose medicament in Taixia Country. At this moment, most of the all-purpose medicament were mainly used in Waii Sub-continent. Only a few of them were sold to Taixia Country. However, the all-purpose medicament would play a greater role everywhere. Compared to the Waii Sub-continent, 1/4 of which had been occupied by demons and covered with battle flames, Taixia Country was a much greater potential market.

Huaiyuan Palace dispatched a 60-year old powerhouse to protect Zhang Yang's family members on the way back to the Taixia Country. Given this point, Zhang Yang knew that Huaiyuan Palace was aware of the value of all-purpose medicament. Someone also came to Fuhai City for Zhang Yang from Huaiyuan City and mentioned the all-purpose medicament a few days ago. However, as Zhang Yang was not clear about the situation in Taixia Country, he didn't make the decision right away. Additionally, he didn't have enough assistants on his side; therefore, he could not take care of that on many aspects. By contrast, with the arrival of the reliable backbone force of Jinwu Business Group and Zhang Yang's deeper investigation about Taixia Country in all aspects, Zhang Yang realized that it was the right time to talk with Huaiyuan Palace.

"I will support you and Zhang Tie, no matter what decision you make!" Zhang Ping expressed.

Right then, the steward came to Zhang Ping's side, "Master, the household registration officer of Fuhai City has arrived. He's taking a rest in the parlor!"

"Oh, I know, go greet him politely right away. When the babies come out, I will send someone to notice you. You then bring the officer here!"

"Yes, sir!" Before leaving, the steward suddenly remembered something as he asked, "There are two female officers, do we need to prepare for red purses?"

"Prepare two red purses, just 6 silver coins and 6 copper coins in each of them in case of trouble." Zhang Yang replied.

"Yes, sir!" The steward became hesitated for a short while as he felt that the red purses contained too less money. 'Even the servants would gain more than that in usual. How come the first young master became so mean this time?' However, the steward dared not ask about the reason.

Until the steward walked away did Zhang Ping ask Zhang Yang, "Does the red purses contain too fewer coins?"

"They dare not take it if you give them too much. Additionally, they would be angry about that. According to 'Taixia Laws', civil servants are forbidden to take the bribe. As long as the evidence could be provided, even if they take one copper coin illegally, their positions would be relieved. Additionally, they would never be employed again. If they take the bribe of more than one gold coin, they would be punished to do hard labor work for more than a month. If they take the bribe of more than 100 gold coins, they would be disparaged to pariahs. If they take 500 good coins illegally, they would face a capital punishment while three generations of their posterity would be forbidden to be officers."

"Ah?" Zhang Ping became amazed, "Why did you give them the red purses then?"

Zhang Yang smiled, "Local customs are exceptions. In Fuhai City, when household registration officers provide door-to-door registration services, they could accept red purses which indicated a benediction. However, the maximal amount of money in the red purse should not exceed 8 silver coins, namely one day's salary of the lowest officer in Taixia Country; otherwise, the registration household officer would not dare to take it!"

When Zhang Yang explained to Zhang Ping, a loud cry drifted from the delivery room, closely after which were the exclamations of some women...

Chapter 633: The Birth of Immortal Bloodline (II)

It would take commoners about 10 months to come to the world; however, it took Zhang Tie's three wives about 12 months to deliver the babies. This was what Zhang Ping was always concerned about. He was afraid that something was wrong with the babies in the wombs of their mothers. If it happened to commoners, the fetuses probably had been dead or have problems in development

If they had not invited a lot of prestigious doctors to check the pulses and learned that the fetuses were normal plus Zhang Tie's reminder in advance, Zhang Tie's family members might have had Linda, Beverly and Fiona to do cesarean section two months ago.

At this moment, after hearing the first especially loud cry of the baby, Zhang Ping finally looked relaxed. However, closely after that, he heard the doctor and those women's exclamations, therefore, he became startled at once. He thought that something bad happened as he almost broke inside the room.

Zhang Tie's dad didn't break in; instead, he just drew closer to the door in a flurried way and asked loudly and intensely, "Is everything all right inside?"

Until a few seconds later did Zhang Tie's mom try her best to reply calmly, "It's all right...Linda delivered a boy. Mom and baby are both safe..."

"Nice to hear that!" Zhang Tie's dad recovered his composure at once.

Zhang Yang also stood outside the door in an intense way. After eating Zhang Tie's fruit of plunder, Zhang Yang had already been an orange-robed pharmacist. As a pharmacist who could identify about 1,000 medicines and raw materials by the nose, his smell was

much sharper than that of his dad. The moment he stood outside the door had he smelt the rich, special fragrance from inside the room.

If Zhang Tie smelt this fragrance, he would know that it was from leakless fruits. This was a feature of his baby.

Paul finally opened his eyes while a mysterious and shrewd light flashed across his eyes.

By contrast, after hearing the baby cry, an old gardener who was pruning flowers and grasses in the garden suddenly stopped. When Paul opened his eyes, the old gardener closed his eyes before slowly revealing a shocking look.

...

With Linda's smooth delivery, a rich, special fragrance started to spread out, which even covered the bloody smell. Everyone was shocked when they saw the baby boy and smelt the exotic fragrance, including the doctors, the midwives, the nurses, Zhang Tie's mom, Sonia and some female servants and Zhang Tie's elder sister-in-law on Linda's side.

Besides Zhang Tie's family members, nobody knew that the baby had stayed in his mom's womb for 12 months. However, the moment the baby came out had all the others felt his specialty. Besides the exotic fragrance in the room, the baby's feature was more amazing.

Usually, new babies could not open their eyes until a few days later. However, Linda's baby boy opened his eyes closely after his first cry.

At the sight of that baby boy, everyone exclaimed.

What marvelous, beautiful eyes!

They were as glittering and translucent as ice and snow and as beautiful as gemstones. At the beginning, his eyes were black; closely after that, they started to change constantly like the

rainbow from red, orange, yellow to green, blue and purple. Everybody felt like watching a brilliant milky way. The female doctor who cradled the baby boy was completely stunned.

Besides his eyes, his hair was also constantly changing its color. At the beginning, it was black like that of Zhang Tie; it then turned into the color of a chestnut like that of Linda; after that, it turned into red and blue like a rainbow.

After his hair changed its colors, the baby boy's jade-like skin faintly changed its color like a rainbow as well.

The female doctor felt like cradling a brilliant rainbow.

...

When everyone was stunned and didn't know what to do, with Beverly's muffled cry, another loud baby cry sounded on the other bed several meters away from Linda's bed. When the second rich fragrance suffused in the room, the second rainbow came out, which was 5 minutes later than the first one.

After another 5 minutes, with the same exotic fragrance, Fiona gave birth to the third rainbow.

All the doctors and nurses were shocked by the three unusual babies. Even Zhang members were stunned...

...

After half an hour, Zhang Yang and Zhang Ping exchanged glances with each other in the study room solemnly. Even though Zhang Yang was always prudent, he was still a bit restless at this moment.

"Zhang Yang...look...can you cover this thing?" Zhang Ping asked as he looked surprised and worried, "It's easy to deal with our family members, as to the doctors and nurses, can we prevent them from disclosing it to the outside using money?"

Zhang Yang replied with a solemn look, "If there was only one

baby, it would be easy. However, the three younger sisters-in-law delivered their babies almost at the same time. We invited three groups of doctors and nurses, totally 18 people; all of them have already seen that just now. It's easy to prevent them from spreading the news to the public; however, it's hard to let them keep their mouths closed, unless..." Zhang Yang hesitated before forcing a bitter smile, "Besides those doctors and nurses, the two household registration officers of Fuhai City are still sitting in the parlor!"

"Can we not register households for the three babies this time? Just let the officers leave?" Zhang Tie's dad asked hopefully.

"I'm afraid not!" Zhang Yang shook his head, "As their dad is a Hua man, the three babies carry Hua people's bloodlines, additionally, they were delivered in Taixia Country. According to the laws of Taixia Country, the three babies had already become real Hua people in Taixia Country. By contrast, we are now migrants and could not be real Hua people in Taixia Country until 3 years later, unless we could immediately find another three baby boys who could substitute them. Additionally, the 18 doctors and nurses have to risk their lives to perjure for us. Otherwise, the registration household officers have to verify the babies themselves..."

"Zhang Tie the jerk, even being not at home, he still makes so many troubles for us!" Zhang Ping could only blame Zhang Tie. Previously, everyone in Zhang family was forbidden to disclose the news that Linda, Beverly and Fiona would give birth to the babies after being pregnant for 12 months, including the servants. Zhang Ping only expected the babies could be delivered smoothly; however, he had never imagined that the baby boys could have such special features. If it was in a remote place, they could just bring them up by being frugal. However, it was in Taixia Country. Zhang Ping didn't know how to deal with that. He was even afraid of bringing harms to the three babies.

The father and the son both saw the opponent's frustration. Even Zhang Tie had not imagined about this. Zhang Tie only knew that the babies were born with two bloodlines, color changing capability and precise throwing skill. However, he had never imagined that they could show the bloodlines in such an exaggerating manner.

"Alright, just bless it. Invite the two household registration officers here. If we cannot stay here anymore. we will move away!" Zhang Tie's dad made his decision as he gritted his teeth.

Zhang Yang nodded as he asked the steward to bring the two household registration officers to the delivery room to check the three baby boys...

...

It had already been half an hour when the abnormal looks of the baby boys had almost disappeared. Their skin was as white as jade steadily while their hair and eyes were still changing colors. Usually, new babies would fall asleep soon after they were born; however, these three baby boys were especially energetic.

Linda, Beverly and Fiona were also in good conditions. They all delivered the babies smoothly as they didn't suffer too much pain. The moment the babies cried had the women's breasts became plump while the milk started to flow out like a spring. The babies then started to suck their moms' milk.

After drinking milk, the babies became more energetic. Lying in the swaddle, they were all widening their beautiful eyes and watching this world out of curiosity.

When the two household registration officers came to the delivery room, the fragrance in the delivery room still didn't fade away. The two women, one was over 30 years old while the other was over 50, wore vermeil uniforms which represented happiness and blessing. Watching them entering, Linda, Beverly and Fiona hurriedly held their babies intensely.

The two household registration officers looked both curious and solemn. Before entering the room, they had already asked the doctors and nurses. If not being told in unison vividly, they would never believe that.

The moment they entered the room had they smelt the special fragrance and witnessed their eyes and hair which were still changing colors; therefore, they knew that the doctors and nurses were telling the truth.

The two household registration officers exchanged glances with each other as they both found the opponent's shocking look at the same time. The elder one then told Zhang Tie's mom, "Erm, we need to invite our director to verify this. I will invite him here, hold on please!"

Zhang Tie's mom had not imagined that it would become so tricky. However, she could do nothing but see the female register leaving out of here rapidly.

The younger registration officer just sat in the room and kept her glittering eyes on the three babies afraid of them being substituted by others.

"Before the director arrives, please send others away from here!" The younger female registration officer told Zhang Tie's mom.

"Is there anything wrong with my grandsons?" Zhang Tie's mom asked out of concern.

"Don't worry, it will be all right!" The registration officer revealed a smile as she took a deep breath. It seemed that she was relieving her intense mood, "It could only be good news!"

After hearing that, Zhang Tie's mom, Linda, Beverly and Fiona finally recovered their composure.

...

Almost about 40 minutes later, the other registration officer finally arrived at Zhang's manor. As the owner of this manor,

Zhang Yang and Zhang Ping had to greet the local officer.

The moment the black official vehicle parked had a 70-year old dignified elder with a snowwhite mustache in a vermeil official robe jumped out of the vehicle with the smell of liquor, "Where are those babies with the exotic symptoms? Hurry, take me there..."

Zhang Yang forced a smile towards his dad as he could only lead the director to the room.

...

Right in the delivery room, under the gaze of Zhang members, the director meticulously took out a box with exotic grains; after that, he drew out a colorful object from the box. One end of that object was made of a metal which was carved with runes and small colorful pieces of crystals while the other end of it was a fine needle which looked like a cattle's hair.

The director then slightly injected that object into the baby's finger under the intense gaze of Linda and pushed out of a drop of fresh blood which was as small as a sesame seed. After that, he had it sucked into that needle-sized object.

Only after 10 seconds, a piece of mauve crystal on the object had started to shine.

"Ah, this baby has a complete Wild-level ancestral bloodline. Good, very good..." The director became thrilled as his hands faintly quivered, "No, there should be some more. Wild-level bloodline doesn't have such a great ability..."

The moment the director finished his words had the piece of golden crystal brightened up at the top of the object. The director raised his voice at once as he almost quivered all over, "Ah? another immortal bloodline...my god, it's indeed an immortal bloodline...my god, it's an unprecedented immortal bloodline..."

When the piece of white crystal at the bottom of the object brightened up, the director directly shrieked like a little girl.

"What...leakless body..."

After testing the other two babies and finding that they had the same features, the director giggled a few seconds before tilting his body and falling to the ground.

Zhang Yang and the others were startled. If the director of the registration household center had some troubles in their house, it would be a big disaster for their family. Zhang Yang hurriedly jumped over there and helped the director sit well. At the same time, he pressed, patted and rubbed some points on the director's head and back. The moment the director woke up, he instantly grabbed Zhang Yang's arms tightly with glittering eyes, "Are you the father of the three babies? I have a daughter of age 16. She's beautiful and kind. She has a good-luck look. Additionally, she's not married. I have more than 30,000,000 square meters of fertile quality land outside Fuhai City. I'm also a shareholder of the maritime business in Fuhai City. If you wish to marry my youngest daughter, how about taking the land and shares as her dowry?"

Seeing such a sudden change, not only Zhang Tie's family members became stunned, even the two registration officers felt embarrassed as they turned their heads aside. However, the younger registration officer was stealthily glancing at Zhang Yang with a special, brilliant look.

Zhang Yang also felt a bit embarrassed as he cleared his throat, "Director, the father of these three babies is my younger brother, I'm their uncle!"

"What? Your younger brother, where's your younger brother?" The director instantly became nimble as he looked around the room.

"My younger brother is fighting demons in the Waii Sub-continent!"

After hearing this answer, the director became faintly hesitated as his eyes became more glittering. Only after slightly rolling his

eyes, he had dropped Zhang Yang's arm and grabbed Zhang Ping's arm almost at the same time. He then burst out into laughter, "Hahaha, brother, lion-like father always have excellent sons; the moment I saw you had I realized that we would have this marriage fixed. When your younger son comes back to Taixia Country, let's arrange the marriage for them. How about that?"

"Erm..."

"Now that brother doesn't oppose that. That's a deal! I have something to deal with, I will leave now!"

The director changed his look and hurriedly left before Zhang Tie's dad said anything. The two female registration officers hurriedly followed their director away with an embarrassed look.

Zhang Ping had never seen such a big figure. When he opened his mouth and thought about what to say, the director had already left.

"I...did not say anything just now!" Zhang Ping looked at Zhang Tie's mom with an embarrassed look.

After recovering her composure, Zhang Tie's mom looked more open-minded, "It doesn't matter, let's talk about it when Zhang Tie comes back!"

"But why would that man have his daughter marry Zhang Tie?" Fiona was still as naive as a young girl although being a mother. She just felt unhappy instinctively.

"My cute girl!" Zhang Tie's mom walked over and slightly patted Fiona who was sitting on the bed with the baby in her arms, "Have you heard about the old Hua saying?"

"What's that?"

"Mom becomes dignified if she has a good son!" Zhang Tie's mom's eyes fell onto that little Zhang Tie as she revealed a benign smile.

Fiona was still confused. However, Linda and Beverly had already understood it after exchanging a glance with each other, 'According to that person, our babies are born with some very rare potential abilities, which are given by their dad...'

Although having prepared for that, Zhang Tie's family members were still stunned when the governor of Fuhai City paid a visit to Zhang Tie's family on the same evening.

The governor even brought a gift. Until the city governor left did Zhang Yang send a message to Zhang Tie using remote sensing crystal...

It was March 22, the 895th year of Black Iron Calendar, the 7th day when the demonized puppets besieged Mocco City, a portal of human defense line in Selnes Theater of Operations!

From that day on, Zhang family's manor had become boisterous as the gossip about the abnormal phenomena of the three baby boys started to spread across Fuhai City, even Yingzhou State...

The director of household registration center of Fuhai City sent people with written marriage proposal noting the name, the birthday and the family background of his younger daughter. This made Zhang Tie's dad and elder brother speechless. According to the Hua traditions, when one party sent the marriage proposal, the marriage would be fixed. What made Zhang Tie's parents reassured was that the girl's photo was there in the marriage proposal. Given the photo, the girl indeed looked beautiful and virtuous. Because of the photo, Zhang Tie's parents didn't return the marriage proposal.

No matter what, Zhang family still underestimated the influence of the powerful ancestral bloodlines and the leakless bodies of the three babies born in Taixia Country...

...

Huaiyuan Palace was shocked at first...

Chapter 634: Arousing A Shock

The elders in Huaiyuan Palace had not received the emergency call of Zhang Clan for a long time. Therefore, the moment they received the message through their carry-on jade plate had the elders rushed towards the Shrine palace of Huaiyuan Palace at the fastest speed, even though it was midnight. Although some elders were in Yiyang City when they received the message, they still flew towards Huaiyuan Palace like meteors, being not afraid of arousing a chaos.

In the evening, a meteor flew towards Huaiyuan Palace from the skyline with a boom. When it was close to the terrace of the Clan Shrine Palace of Huaiyuan Palace, the meteor abruptly stopped and changed its direction. Closely after that, it landed on the terrace with a fierce qi, causing some pieces of solid and thick stone plates to break off in a split second. A tall old man walked out of the fiery flames full of killing qi, shocking those who were present.

"Brother Muyuan, have demons reached Jinyun Country?" The old man asked in a muffled voice.

"No, when I was in the Clan Shrine Palace, I had received a message from Huaiyuan City of Taixia Country. As it was a major event, I had to call you up for a negotiation!" The man being called brother Muyuan by the fierce old man was Zhang Tie's 6th uncle who ruled the Clansmen Pavilion of Huaiyuan Palace from Golden Sea City. At this moment, Zhang Tie's 6th uncle was standing on the stages of the Clan Shrine Palace of Huaiyuan Palace and welcoming the other elders.

"Ah!" After hearing such a reply, the fierce old man became a bit amazed as the brilliance over his body dissipated at once, "I wonder how major it is!"

"Brother Mulei, calm down. When brother Muen and brother Muyu arrive, we will talk about it in the palace!" Zhang Tie's 6th

uncle replied calmly with a weird look.

Soon after his words, a figure had appeared silently on the terrace like coming out of the void without any early symptom. Soon after this person appeared for less than 2 seconds, a gust of breeze blew over while another person arrived on the terrace.

"Not having seen you for many days, brother Muen's Swift Move out of the Void skill looks better. Congratulations!" The latter one smiled.

"Brother Muyu's free steps skill is also fabulous!"

"Ha...ha..." With a big laughter, the latter old guys entered the palace together.

The huge statue of the founder of Huaiyuan Palace was drawing full a crossbow in the deep end of the palace majestically. There were fierce flames inside the bronze tripod. An elder who arrived earlier had been waiting in the palace. After the rest elders served incenses for the statue of Lord Huaiyuan, they sat together.

...

After the other four Zhang elders arrived and sat under the statue of Lord Huaiyuan, they all turned to Zhang Tie's 6th uncle. However, Zhang Tie's 6th uncle didn't speak; instead, he took out a piece of paper and passed it to elder Muen, telling him to share it with the rest elders.

After taking it, elder Muen skimmed a few seconds before turning his face, "Are you sure?"

"18 doctors and nurses were present. Even the 2 registration officers have seen that. After receiving the report of one registration officer, the director of the household registration center of Fuhai City made the test himself. Several hours ago, the governor even paid an exclusive visit to Zhang Tie's family and gifted 3 rune gold locks to them. We've confirmed these messages!"

"What happened in Taixia Country?" Elder Mulei, who was a bit

short-tempered couldn't wait to move closer. Elder Muen directly passed the note to him.

After taking it, Elder Mulei had widely opened his mouth only with a short glance, "Ah? Is that real?"

Hearing this, the rest 2 elders also became curious. It was soon their turns to read the note.

"God bless our Huaiyuan Palace!" Elder Muyu's eyebrows quivered as he added, "I suggest to dispatch Huaiyuan City powerhouses to escort Zhang Ping's family members to Huaiyuan City right away."

"After receiving the message, the agent in Huaiyuan City has already dispatched an airship to Fuhai City to pick them up. However, as Fuhai City is over 3,000 miles away from Huaiyuan City, it would take them at least 1 day to be there. Zhang Ping's family members might not follow other's arrangement, it's just a temporary solution!" Elder Muyuan said.

"Our head is in Taixia Country, does he know that?"

"We've already sent the message to him. However, since the beginning of the holy war, the head of Zhang Clan has been fighting demons in the underground world. He has no time to concern about what happens above the ground. The head of Zhang Clan has sent a message to let the elders deal with this event!"

Elder Muyuan's reply contained too many messages. If Zhang Tie was here at this moment, he must be surprised and frustrated, "What's happening in the underground world? How could Count Longwind have no time to concern about what's happening above the ground?"

"I suggest Elder Muyuan to go to Taixia Country!" An elder on elder Muyuan's side said after thinking for a few seconds, "As this is a major event of Huaiyuan Palace which is related to the continuity and prosperity of the clan bloodline for thousands of

years, I'm afraid that Huaiyuan Palace's people in Yingzhou State could not deal with it if there's no clan elder on their side! As Zhang Ping's family members came from Golden Sea City. If Elder Muyuan went there, a lot of things could be dealt easily. Additionally, given the progress of the warfare in Waii Sub-continent, Huaiyuan Palace would return to Taixia Country sooner or later. At this moment, a heavyweight needs to go to Taixia Country to preside over the situation."

"I agree!"

"Fine!"

The other elders nodded almost at the same time.

Among all the elders, there was only one elder who had been frowning since he read the message. At this moment, he slowly opened his mouth, "An immortal bloodline, a complete wild-level ancestral bloodline and a leakless body. The 3 babies are very important. However, we forgot an more important person—their father. The message doesn't contain the father of the 3 babies."

Closely after this elder opened his mouth had the other elders become shocked, "Yup, how could we forget the most important thing?"

"Brother Muyuan, isn't Zhang Yang the father of the 3 babies?" Elder Mulei reacted at once.

After being silent for a second, Elder Muyuan replied, "Their father is Zhang Tie!"

"What?" Elder Mulei almost sprung up soon after Elder Muyuan finished his words, "That brat had left Huaiyuan Prefecture for Selnes since the end of last March. It's 12 months since Zhang Tie's wives got pregnant, how could he be the father of the 3 babies?"

With the same thought, the other elders could never imagine that Zhang Tie was the father of the 3 babies when they read the

message. As the message on the note came from Huaiyuan City, Yingzhou State of Taixia Country, which was too far away from here and the message was incomplete and contained some contradictory information, nobody knew who was the father of the 3 babies without confirmation.

"I'm afraid that Zhang Tie is indeed the father of the 3 babies!" Elder Muyuan replied in a muffled voice, "The 3 women who delivered the babies are all foreigners whom Zhang Tie met in Blackhot City and Norman Empire. After confirming that Zhang Tie had color-changing bloodline last year, out of the responsibilities of Clansmen Pavilion, I have been keeping some people to focus on Zhang Tie's situation. During the period when Zhang Tie was in Huaiyuan Prefecture, he always stayed with the 3 women. After Zhang Tie left Huaiyuan Prefecture, the 3 women had been pregnant and were taken by Zhang Tie's family. The pregnancy of the 3 women was 12 months in total, instead of 10 months. Zhang family members were forbidden to disclose the news when the 3 women still didn't deliver babies after being pregnant for 10 months. Although the message from Taixia Country was unclear, I guess the immortal bloodline should be the color-changing bloodline that Zhang Tie had awakened while the complete wild-level ancestral bloodline should be the precise throwing bloodline that Zhang Tie had awakened and advanced. As to the leakless body, it might also be passed to them by Zhang Tie!"

All the elders were shocked. They all knew clearly what did this mean——Zhang Tie, the jerk, could pass the powerful bloodlines that he had awakened to his next generation. This was really unrivaled!

In that age, it was a matter of chance for the next generation to awaken the same bloodlines that their parents had awakened. It was usually rare for 1 or 2 of 10 babies to awaken the same ancestral bloodlines that were carried by their parents. Huaiyuan Palace and

the other major clans of Jinyun Country even those noble clans in Taixia Country racked their mind to work out various means in order to raise the chance of awakening the same bloodline even a bit.

In such a case, nobody could imagine that someone could grant his next generation with ancestral bloodlines that he had awakened simply by giving birth.

If ancestral bloodlines could be inherited to the next generation, it would not be precious anymore.

However, if only one person could pass the bloodlines that he had awakened to his next generation, that person would be extremely precious.

All the babies delivered by the 3 foreign women had awakened 3 very powerful abilities; what if the babies were delivered by 3 Hua women? At least 3 more...

An immortal bloodline, a complete precise throwing skill and a leakless body. The moment the elders thought about this had their hearts pounded.

At this moment, all the 3 elders who had met Zhang Tie were regretting inside. If it was real, they should not have let Zhang Tie go. How could Huaiyuan Palace drop such a valuable person in Selnes Theater of Operations? If other clans knew that, they would laugh their a*s off.

"Where's Zhang Tie now?" Elder Mulei asked.

"He's disappeared in Selnes Theater of Operations!" Elder Muyuan described what happened to Zhang Tie in Selnes Theater of Operations with a grim look, "In order to save Zhang Tie, Lan Yunxi and an elder of Lan Clan broke into Tokei City by force. They almost fell into the trap of Three-eye Association. However, they still didn't find him. Lan Yunxi even suffered a punishment for what she did. After being dispatched back from Selnes Theater

of Operations, she was sent to Taixia Country by the clan. After that, we've used a lot of resources and made a lot of investigations; finally, we learned that Zhang Tie had been saved away from the backroom of Senel Clan by a powerhouse on the same evening when Lan Yunxi and the Lan elder broke in Tokei City by force. After that, Zhang Tie didn't appear anymore, although we've been searching him for months..."

"Powerhouse?" After hearing this words, all the elders frowned. If that person was qualified as a powerhouse in the mouth of Elder Muyuan, it meant that he was at least a knight. This made the problem more complex.

"I will go to Selnes Theater of Operations right now. I will search Zhang Tie there, dead or alive!" Elder Mulei proposed.

"It's indeed necessary. As we could realize that point, the others must be able to realize that too. Based on the ability of Huaiyuan Palace, once Zhang Tie is in Waii Sub-continent, very few people dare oppose us. However, we might have troubles in Taixia Country. There must be a lot of people who understand the value of the 3 babies. Additionally, they could easily link the 3 babies to Zhang Tie. I'm sure that a lot of people have already paid attention to them in Taixia Country. Take care of yourself, brother Muyuan!"

Elder Muyuan nodded. Closely after that, he forced a bitter smile and shook his head, "I've never imagined that our Huaiyuan Palace could have such a freak!"

"Zhang Tie is just 20 years old. When he enters his heyday, he might awaken some more ancestral bloodlines, even heavenly bloodlines..."

Elder Muen didn't finish his words. Whereas, all the 5 elders held their breath at the same time...

"I will go to Selnes Theater of Operations tonight, as to the affairs in Huaiyuan Palace, thanks for your concern!" Elder Mulei

suddenly sprung up as he instantly shot out of the palace as fast as a lightning bolt while being covered with flames...

The other elders then exchanged glances with each other. Elder Muyu hesitated a little before asking, "Erm...should we inform Lan Yunxi about Zhang Tie's affair?"

When Lan Yunxi broke in Tokei City by force for saving Zhang Tie a few months ago, the elders had already understood her intention. None of the elders could imagine that Lan Yunxi, who was always arrogant, could fall in love with Zhang Tie, the jerk. Besides, the jerk could make 3 foreign girls pregnant before getting married. None of the other elites in Hidden Dragon Palace, even other clans could do it. However, that jerk also had an unrivaled reproductive ability.

"The moment Lan Yunxi arrived at Eastern Continent had she been sent to Taiyi Fantasy Sect, one of the 7 major sects in Taixia Country. No disciple of Taiyi Fantasy Sect is allowed to leave out of there before becoming a battle spirit. This might slow down her cultivation. We need to negotiate with it later!" An elder suggested as the others elder nodded.

"I've not imagined that the force of Three-eye Association could be so deep-rooted in humans. Waii Sub-continent is weak originally; plus someone who has malicious intentions are lurking inside, the demons are more powerful than humans at this moment. Therefore, the human defense line in Selnes Theater of Operations could not stand for too long. The north of Waii Sub-continent would be collapsed sooner or later. Huaiyuan Prefecture should also evacuate its people as soon as possible!" An elder said.

"What a pitiful undertaking!"

"It's just some cities. To the final analysis, they are just some bricks, gold, silver and steel, nothing to be pitiful about. The holy war has just begun. If we keep our people, we might get our land back in the future; if we intend to keep our land, we will lose both

land and people. As long as our clan has more elites in the future, our Huaiyuan Palace can easily expand its undertaking by 10 times after the holy war!"

"Yes!"

The elders then remembered Zhang Tie once again, "But why does he have such marvelous abilities?"

"Perhaps it's because he had been struck by a thunder when he was young. Or perhaps he has other special experience or fortune. Each one has his or her secret."

"Being pregnant for 12 months reminds me of some Hua legends. It was said that Emperor Pangu didn't come out until being bred in the chaos for tens of thousands of years; many special people stayed longer in their mom's wombs. Those who could stay in their mom's wombs for dozens of years were all masters; those who could stay a couple of years in their mom's wombs were all talents who could arouse a great chaos; similarly, whether Zhang Tie's babies might also be great in the future?"

After hearing the words, the other elders looked weird at first; gradually, they all revealed a thinking look. They realized that the truth of cultivation was to seek for the endless secrets in human bodies and the universe.

However, in a split second, the elders recovered their composure. If it was in a peaceful time, they might have free time to discuss this question; however, at this moment, nothing could be more powerful than fists. None of the illusions could be more beneficial than finding out Zhang Tie, the jerk.

After the negotiation, the elders of Huaiyuan Palace left. However, the entire Huaiyuan Palace's force moved for Zhang Tie's affair from Waii Sub-continent to Yingzhou State of Taixia Country.

Although Zhang Tie had not been to Taixia Country, his name

and "talents" had been spread across Taixia...

If the director of the household registration center of Fuhai City and the elders of Huaiyuan Palace realized the importance of Zhang Tie and his 3 babies, how could others not realize that...

All sorts of hidden forces started to move!

Chapter 635: Feeling Sad

On March 23rd, after 8 days of endless bloody battle, the Mocco City was covered with blood and flesh.

At dusk, as the last ray of sunshine disappeared in the distant woods, Zhang Tie woke up in an empty civilian house which was not far away from the north city wall of Mocco City after less than 4 hours of rest.

With sufficient all-purpose medicament and exuberant energy, Zhang Tie felt that he could even keep working 7-8 days without taking a rest. However, in order to not be too eye-catching lest bigger troubles, Zhang Tie kept his regular schedule consistent with most of the guards in Mocco City like that of other paladins and demon hunters.

The demonized puppets corps were terrifying. As long as they launched the attack, all the demonized puppets would completely become wild beasts who only knew about killing and moving ahead. They could constantly charge forward like waves with one batch after another until their heads were exploded or their physical structures were severely destroyed.

What a terrifying attack! Demonized puppets could keep attacking humans without food, water or rest just like killing machines. However, the greater part of guards in Mocco City didn't have such abilities. Those guards could only keep fighting for 3 days at most; therefore, the troops in Mocco City were forced to defend on the city wall in two shifts.

More than 20 armored soldiers and paladins were lying disorderly in the civilian house like Zhang Tie in the bedroom which only had 2 beds. Some more were lying on the sofas of the parlor. At this moment, it made people jealous if one could occupy a sofa or share a bed with the others. Most of them could only casually find a corner in the parlor or the corridor and fall asleep

while leaning against the walls.

Previously, the owner of this civilian house might be a middle-class man. Therefore, the entire house was clean. However, it had been disordered at this moment. A cabinet in the parlor had been hacked into firewood and wooden plates, which became the heat source for this place. The 3-layer curtains had become their quilts. At this moment, it was especially dirty inside. The pieces of wooden wainscots on the walls of the parlor had been taken down and nailed onto the windows on behalf of curtains. The air inside the rooms smelt very turbid as it was filled with the stink of men's feet and sweat as well as various body odors. Including Zhang Tie, everybody inside the room had not bathed for 8 days.

After waking up, Zhang Tie picked himself up silently. After that, he strode over the disordered arms and legs and walked out of the parlor.

There was a washroom outside the parlor. Since the demonized puppets corps besieged Mocco City, the water faucet inside the washroom had stopped working. However, the washroom was still available if they had to pee or poo. Although that washroom was extremely dirty, nobody cared.

Zhang Tie, as a person, also had to pee. However, when he came to the washroom, he could not even place his feet. As Zhang Tie really couldn't stand making any more contribution calmly to the piles of shit or pee which almost reached his feet, he could only retreat. After leaving the civilian house, he came to a lane nearby. After that, he faced the wall, pulling off the zipper of his pants and started to have a pleasant pee.

Squads of soldiers were running on the streets. Many buildings on both sides of the streets of Mocco City had been demolished by soldiers. Some buildings were destroyed while the others were reinforced. At this moment, everybody in Mocco City knew that they would lose this city. Therefore, many radical commissioned officers chose the street battle.

Amazingly, after knowing that Mocco City would be collapsed, Zhang Tie didn't feel sad. He just watched those human soldiers passing by him in squads. Watching those faces which were as young as him and imagining how many of these people could finally survive when the city was collapsed, Zhang Tie felt faintly grieved. On the battlefield, after witnessing too many killings and experiencing too many life and death situations, one would not always be that excited and fervent anymore. These days, Zhang Tie had watched hundreds of thousands of people being killed in front of him outside the city.

For many soldiers of those troops, they had a chance to withdraw; however, they didn't. Because they locked themselves inside the firm fortifications and fortresses and fought demonized puppets for 5 days until the corpses of the demonized puppets blocked those loopholes and those thorny trenches. Finally, it faded to silence.

At this moment, when you watched a person dying in front of you, you would feel sad; when you watched 10 people dying in front of you, you would feel furious and painful; however when 100 people, 1,000 people, 10,000 people even hundreds of thousands of people died in front of you, you would gradually become dumb. After that, you would only feel sad.

It was like how you felt when you saw a red maple leaf falling off and turning into the mud. In Zhang Tie's eyes, young human fighters were just maple leaves which were not red or would turn red.

There were many supply points in the streets being close to the city wall. They provided large pieces of brown bread which contained ham slices and canned meat paste, and meat porridge in paper cups. Those soldiers who ran over the streets would take a piece of bread or a cup of meat porridge with their hands. When they ate the food, they rushed onto the city wall or entered the fortifications inside the city wall.

Mocco City had sufficient supplies, with which the guards of the city could at least survive 2 months. However, everybody was clear that Mocco City could not stand for 2 months. In such a case, it would be meaningless to save any supply.

Zhang Tie took two pieces of bread and a cup of meat porridge. As he ate them, he walked onto the city wall.

It was already dark outside while the torches on the city wall had been lit. Demonized puppets had already attacked the defense line of Mocco City one wave after another for 8 consecutive days.

The demonized puppets were still uttering weird sounds outside the city while those human commissioned officers on the city wall were still roaring exhaustively. Although demonized puppets' sounds remained unchanged, all the human commissioned officers' voices had turned hoarse, which sounded as rough and dry as bubbles.

The city wall of the entire Mocco City was surrounded by a terrifying and disgusting odor of putrefaction. If one kept breathing in such environment for a long time, one's organs would suffer a great damage. As a result, his battle force would be weakened.

After coming to one side of the aisle, Zhang Tie found a barrel of brown ointment. Fighters on the city wall would always daub some ointment below their nostrils for the sake of the corpses' stink.

After 8 days of battle, over 1 million corpses of demonized puppets had been lying outside the city gate. After being exposed to the air for 8 days, many of the corpses had been rotten. 3 days ago, when the demonized puppets tore off the last defense line outside Mocco City and rushed to the foot of Mocco City, they also paved their corpses near here.

At the foot of the Mocco City, there were numerous demonized puppets.

However, the battle continued. The demonized puppets which looked like black tides were still rushing towards Mocco City constantly, which gradually increased the thickness of the corpses outside the city gate.

Zhang Tie didn't daub that kind of ointment which was used to prevent from the invasion of the stink of corpses; instead, he just gnawed his bread, chewed his ham slices and meat. In the strong smell and battle fires, he walked onto the city wall and started to check the situation outside the city.

After several hours, the corpses of demonized puppets outside the north city gate grew 2 m higher. However, demonized puppets kept rushing in. At this moment, the demonized puppets were not in bare hands anymore; they all held a corpse or a part of the corpse in front of them as their shield and food.

Demonized puppets constantly rushed towards the north city gate with others' corpses as the shield against the powerful defensive weapons on the city wall. Some thirsty demonized puppets were even biting off flesh from those rotten corpses as they uttered harsh shrieks. However, those demonized puppets who had reached the foot of the city directly dropped off their shields to narrow the distance between the top of the city wall and their heights.

Eating bread, drinking meat porridge, Zhang Tie just watched this bloody battle icily.

At least Mocco City was safe at this moment; however, it could not stand for too long. The guards outside Mocco City had already fulfilled their responsibilities at the cost of their lives. For guards inside Mocco City, it was the time for them to sacrifice themselves when the demonized puppets almost reached the top of the city wall.

The north city wall of Mocco City was higher than 30 m. At this moment, the corpses of demonized puppets had been 15 m in

height, leaving 20 m for the demonized puppets to rush into Mocco City.

About 7-8 miles away, where the steam centrifugal shells could not reach, was gathering more demonized puppets compared to one week ago. Looking away in the distance, Zhang Tie saw nearly 2-3 million demonized puppets which covered the entire plain. Those demonized puppets were also waiting patiently for the moment when they could directly run onto the city wall...

...

Chapter 636: A Bloody Battle on the City Wall

"Peter is coming..."

At the sight of Zhang Tie, 4 fighters in front of a position of steam ballista were happy at once. These days, Zhang Tie had become a "Sniper" who could operate steam ballista very well on the city wall. Each day, he would work with other fighters in shifts to operate a ballista S137 on the north city wall of Mocco City.

When other ballista operators operated this middle-and-short distance ballista, they could hardly kill one demonized puppets due to the strong vitality of demonized puppets unless their heads were exploded. Even if their bodies were penetrated through or their limbs were broken, they would still rush forward.

7 days ago, the fighter who operated this ballista dislocated his arm and suffered a severe bruise due to the long-term work. Coincidentally, Zhang Tie was on his side. After saying "Hand it to me", Zhang Tie then sat in the gunner's location. With his excellent ability, he soon gained the approval of the other fighters of this emplacement and became a special person who was out of the personnel scheduling of emplacement S137.

Those who were responsible for S137 and the other emplacements on its side was a ballista camp of No. 7 City Defense Regiment under the affiliation of garrison corps in Mocco City, Symbian Republic. Usually, those who didn't belong to the ballista camp like Zhang Tie who worked as a paladin were not allowed to sit in the location of the gunner. However, nobody cared about that at such a critical moment, as long as he could kill demons.

All the other gunners were stunned at the sight of Zhang Tie sitting in the emplacement of S137. After receiving the report, the battalion commander even came here out of fury and prepared to scold Zhang Tie; however, after watching Zhang Tie operating for

2 minutes, all of his fury faded away as he tacitly approved Zhang Tie's special status as a gunner out of the establishment. At this critical moment, everyone in Mocco City was qualified for defending demons; therefore, military uniform did not become that important.

Watching Zhang Tie coming here, the gunner who was operating the ballista hurriedly jumped off his seat like relieving a heavy burden as he gave the gunner's location to Zhang Tie, "F*ck those b*stards..."

Zhang Tie immediately jumped onto the seat and adroitly drew the reset catch of the steam ballista. Closely after that, he put his hands on the handle of the ballista and pressed down the trigger. With a short glance, he shot out a bolt towards the head of a demonized puppet who was holding a corpse and rushing towards the city wall more than 500 m away, blowing its white and red brains out.

All the other fighters of S137 emplacement exclaimed at once. It would take others a least 3 bolts to precisely hit a demonized puppet; however, it depended that which part of the demonized puppet could they shoot. If they shot its torso or limb, besides opening a hole on the demonized puppet, they could still not stop it running towards the city wall although it would slow down its speed. If they wanted to kill one demonized puppet, they had to consume at least 7-10 bolts. However, with 10 bolts, Zhang Tie could precisely kill more than 4 demonized puppets.

"Hurry, get some more ammo here!" The monitor of that emplacement roared as he also rolled up his sleeves and joined Zhang Tie's supporting crew.

From then on, the ballista S137 kept firing 3 times per 2 seconds and shot bolts towards demonized puppets constantly who were 30-500 m away from the city wall.

Zhang Tie, who was sitting in the gunner's seat, repeated his

movements like targeting and shooting as his body faintly quivered with the ballista. As ballistas on the city wall were driven by steam high-pressure ejection, its principle was similar to that of bombs before the Catastrophe. However, the powder was replaced by a rotating high-density steam compression can. When the steam compression can was broken, the thrust would trigger a sliding barbette which was similar to a piston, shooting the bolt out of the tube of the ballista.

When the high-intensity steam compression can released its thrust, the barbette would suffer a great counter-force. Although there were devices like torsional spring on the emplacement, a part of the counter-force was still transferred to the gunner. Commoners could only keep operating it for 1 hour before their arms became numb; if longer, their arms would be dislocated; in the worst case scenario, their joints would be severely worn.

However, Zhang Tie was not influenced by that bit of counter-force at all. For a person who could stand almost 900 kg's trike, that bit of shake was too trivial.

Zhang Tie pressed his hands on the handle as steady as a huge rock on the ground as he constantly blew out demonized puppets' heads. It was a bit similar to throwing javelins. Although Zhang Tie could not realize 100% precision like how he threw javelins; using his instinct, he could reach 30% to 50%. Although Zhang Tie couldn't control the power of the high-intensity steam compression can, he could try his best to control the trajectory of the bolt in the air just like how he controlled the trajectory of his javelins.

With this ability, Zhang Tie became a respectable "great gunner" on the city wall. He didn't even remember how many demonized puppets had he killed these days.

It was worth being happy to have such a harvest for others; however, Zhang Tie felt it meaningless. But he had to do that. Although those demonized puppets were humans previously, they

were just a larva or an egg of the parent puppet worm of demons at this moment. A puppet parent worm could lay hundreds of thousands of eggs per day. However, the real demon corps had not appeared till then. Perhaps demonized puppets corps were just cheap low-value consumables for demons corps. They were dispatched here for just to be a cannon fodder. No matter how many of them were killed, the demons would never feel pitiful about their loss.

Whereas, nobody across Mocco City knew that the famous Selnes Eagle was working as a gunner at an emplacement at this moment.

When the demonized puppets were less than 30 m away from the city wall, they were in a dead angle of the steam ballistas; instead, they were in the shooting range of the scattered strike weapons. The entire city wall was covered with layers of weapons. After reaching here, besides dropping off the corpses from their arms, they could never survive themselves; however, those demonized puppets didn't intend to withdraw at all. Although being like sieves, the demonized puppets still gathered at the foot of the city wall, allowing alive ones to climb on them. Whereas, as long as they drew closer to the city wall, rows of sharp steel javelins would prick out and draw back repetitively from egg-sized holes. As a result, those demonized puppets were constantly killed.

Although demonized puppets would fail each time when they stepped on their partners' corpses, the pile of corpses gradually increased their height while the demonized puppets became increasingly closer to the top of the city wall. After being blocked by dense corpses, the defensive weapons on the lower part of the city wall became ineffective.

Everybody knew that the real test had not arrived yet. However, it was not too far.

The moment Zhang Tie sat on the ballista had he forgotten about time. Gradually, besides burning torches, the lens headlights on the city wall were also turned on, brightening up the area within

100 m. However, the farther place became dim. Firepots were thrown out of the city wall one after another and burned up the open land in the dark so as to provide sufficient light sources for firing weapons on the city wall.

After it turned completely dark, the precision of weapons on the city wall started to decline. As a result, the demonized puppets became more restless as their striking density and frequency increased evidently. Additionally, demonized puppets could always put out the firebombs very fast and make the surrounding space recover to dark completely.

Demonized puppets kept flashing out of the dark and rushing towards Mocco City one wave after another while their grim looks were like that of ferocious ghosts.

With the dark vision ability, Zhang Tie could keep the same precision as he did in the daytime. Because the density of demonized puppets increased, Zhang Tie's ballista even became more fatal. However, only Zhang Tie could do this across the entire city wall. Therefore, more and more demonized puppets evidently forced in the range of 30 m.

Not knowing how long had he stayed on the city wall, Zhang Tie suddenly heard a boom as his S137 stopped working...

A part of the emplacement suddenly cracked while a metal fragment immediately broke Zhang Tie's face and left a 2-cm long wound on Zhang Tie's left face...

"Ah, the high-pressure rifled tube is broken. What the hell? Motherf*cker..." The monitor of class 2 looked downward as he shouted. All the other fighters became flurried...

Regardless of his wound and the fresh blood, Zhang Tie casually wiped off the blood as he jumped off the gunner's seat. He looked downward and found a tube at the bottom of the barbette had been destroyed evidently as a hot vapor spurted out of it...

"How's it? Can we fix it?" Zhang Tie asked the monitor...

"As a key part of the emplacement, it should not be broken so easily. We could only change it. However, we need to move away the entire turret. It will take us at least 3 days to fix it." The monitor of S137's face turned pale...

In a split second, another boom was drifted from a ballista in the distance, causing it to break down too...

...

Chapter 637: A Conspiracy

Starting from S137, in the next few hours, high-pressure rifled tubes of ballistas on the north city gate of Mocco City were broken one after another. As more and more ballistas stopped working, more and more demonized puppets rushed forward...

At the sight of this, the commissioned officers and fighters who were defending on the city wall started to roar furiously. Some fighters even punched onto ballistas, making their fists bleed; however, the ballistas still remained broken.

High-pressure rifled tube was the core component of the ballista. Theoretically, as it was made of special alloy, it should be of great durability. This component didn't need to be replaced usually as it was the most durable component of the ballista. However, many high-pressure rifled tubes were damaged one after another at the critical moment. This indicated that it was not a coincidence; instead, it was a conspiracy...

2 years ago, when the demon corps had not reached Selnes Plain, the entire city defense system of Mocco City had been updated in a large scale. These key components had been replaced at that time. In usual, these ballistas didn't have any problem at all. It was really out of ones' imagination that the most important parts of these ballistas could have such a problem only after being used for just one week constantly.

It reminded Zhang Tie of Three-eye Association at once.

Only those b*stards of Three-eye Association could have such motive and ability to screw up the city defense system of Mocco City, causing a big problem at the critical moment.

Undoubtedly, Three-eye Association had hidden deep in the Symbian Republic.

However, it was meaningless even if one knew that it was

screwed up by Three-eye Association...

The demonized puppets swarmed up one wave after another while more and more corpses were dropped outside the city wall, making the piles grow higher and higher...

At this moment, all the paladins and demon hunters jumped off the city wall and set off cyclones so as to relieve the striking rhythm of the demonized puppets.

Zhang Tie also jumped off the city wall. Without dealing with the wound on his left face, he took two long swords with him, each weighed more than 50 kg.

At this moment, Zhang Tie felt like returning to the situation where he was surrounded by demonized puppets in Heavens Cold City. If the demonized puppets around him when he was in Heavens Cold City were like a lake, those demonized puppets surrounding him at this moment were like an ocean. Those demon hunters and paladins were like rocks in the ocean which could split the sea water and the waves. However, more sea water would flow over these rocks and rushed towards the bank.

Zhang Tie didn't know how many demonized puppets had he killed; however, there were always endless demonized puppets who charged at him one after another.

When the day broke, the precision of available steam centrifugal ballistas started to rise, reducing the strike frequency of demonized puppets; meanwhile, the density of demonized puppets decreased. However, after one night's ferocious battle, some exhausted demon hunters and paladins had been injured or killed. As a result, they started to retreat.

A paladin was mired into the encirclement of demonized puppets more than 100 m away on Zhang Tie's left-hand side.

A demonized puppet who was chopped in halves fell in the corpses and remained unchanged. The paladin fought other

demonized puppets as he kept moving his footsteps to retreat back into the city; when the paladin passed by the one lying on the ground, the half demonized puppet suddenly stabbed its short sword into his shin, drawing a long wound.

With a painful roar, the paladin instantly blew out its head; however, more demonized puppets swarmed up, sending the injured paladin in a dilemma at once.

Zhang Tie rushed over there as he swept over his two swords, sending a lot of heads flying in the air. After that, he caught the paladin's waistband and rushed into Mocco City.

On the way back, Zhang Tie was stepping on the crisscrossed disgusting corpses of those demonized puppets. Some demonized puppets lying on the ground who had not been completely dead wanted to attack Zhang Tie; however, they were all kicked to death by Zhang Tie. The closer they were to the city wall, the more corpses of demonized puppets would they meet. Gradually, a hill composed of corpses came into being.

Watching Zhang Tie rushing towards the city wall, the garrison and the other demon hunters and paladins on the city wall yelled while the distributed strike system started to fire towards those demonized puppets behind Zhang Tie and the injured paladin.

At this moment, Zhang Tie and the injured paladin were the final humans who evacuated. Therefore, they attracted a lot of people's attention.

"It's not convenient for you to take me. Just drop me off..." The paladin told Zhang Tie in a weak voice.

"Catch him..." Zhang Tie shouted when he reached at the foot of the city wall; meanwhile, he threw that injured paladin onto the city wall.

As Zhang Tie was standing on the pile of corpses, which was less than 10 m away from the top of the city wall; therefore, that person

could be easily thrown onto the city wall. After seeing the injured paladin falling onto the city wall, Zhang Tie forcefully stomped as he directly jumped into the air; at the same time, he grabbed the end of one rope which was put down from the top of the city wall and instantly came back to the city wall.

As it was less than 10 m, Zhang Tie actually could directly jump onto the city wall with the injured paladin and the two weapons. However, it would be too exaggerating if he did it under the gaze of so many people. Therefore, Zhang Tie pretended to be low-key. Over one night's battle, Zhang Tie didn't expose his real battle force too much; he didn't even use his Iron-blood Fist and battle qi strike. When many demon hunters and paladins were releasing their brilliant battle qis in the dark, Zhang Tie was just walking among the demonized puppets with two swords like a reaper. He just chopped off the heads of demonized puppets and crushed their bodies one after another precisely, efficiently and icily.

On the city wall, the injured paladin was sitting under a gun perforation while his face turned pale. He had torn open his pants which had been wet with fresh blood and exposed that terrifying wound on the rear side of his right knee. The wound was as wide as 50 square cm, through which one could even see his bones. A medic was squatting in front of him and cleaning up his wound using alcohol.

When alcohol was poured into his wound, the veins on the paladin's forehead jumped while sweat drops rolled down.

Watching Zhang Tie coming over here, everybody else threw their respectful glances towards him and his weapons.

Noticing that they were gazing at his two long swords, Zhang Tie became stunned. He also looked at his swords and found the blades had been like saws. After killing numerous demonized puppets over one night, he realized that the two swords were almost scrapped.

Evidently, the two long swords were the best certificate of Zhang Tie's meritorious deed, which also won him respectful eyes.

Zhang Tie shook his head as he threw the two swords into a deserted wooden case which contained bolts. After that, he walked to the injured paladin.

"What's the matter? Are you okay?" Zhang Tie asked that paladin whom he threw onto the city wall.

That paladin was over 30 years old with a square face. He looked strong. With a brown hair and a whisker, he looked pretty heroic. Just now, Zhang Tie found this guy was between LV 10 to LV 11. He might be a 4-star or 5-star strong fighter.

"Thank you, I'm Robin. You saved my life!" That guy raised his head towards Zhang Tie as he was oozing cold sweat, "What's your name? I will pay you back whenever there's a chance."

'What a funny guy!' Zhang Tie smiled, "I'm Peter!"

"Fine, I will keep your name in my mind!" That person nodded seriously as he quivered his eyebrows. Meanwhile, he drew in a mouth of cold breath.

After such a short while, the medic had already cleaned his wound with alcohol and started to sew up the wound using a needle in the shape of a fishhook and surgical suture.

"Wait a moment!" Zhang Tie stopped that medic as he took out a vial of all-purpose medicament from his pocket, "It would be better with this!"

At the sight of that vial of all-purpose medicament, Robin, the medic and all the others all brightened up their eyes.

"Ah? All-purpose medicament?" Robin uttered an amazing voice. After licking his lips, he revealed a smile, "Looks like I'm lucky. I should not be a burden for you even if I need to escape after a couple of days."

After taking the vial of all-purpose medicament, the medic sniffed at the mouth of the vial with an intoxicating look before carefully daubing half of it on the wound. He then felt unwilling to give the rest half of it to Robin. After taking it, Robin instantly bottomed it up.

After dealing with Robin's wound, the medic wrapped it up soon. With the effect of all-purpose medicament, Robin could already stand up.

The other paladins and demon hunters walked over here. They were all powerhouses above LV 9 who fought demonized puppets outside the city with Zhang Tie last night. They made concerted efforts to defend the city these days. Although they could not tell each others name, they were still familiar with each other.

"Two brothers, do you want to have a cup of drink with us?"

Zhang Tie looked at the demonized puppets outside the city; then, he threw a glance at the turrets where half of the ballistas had been damaged overnight and the groups of fighters who were running onto the city wall with manual crossbows. He then let out a deep sigh inside.

Even Robin had realized that Mocco City could stand 2 days at most, how could Zhang Tie not find that? At this moment, many people in the city should have a good plan about what to do in 2 days...

Chapter 638: The Plan

As Mocco City had been besieged for 9 consecutive days by demonized puppets corps, the popularity in the dim demon hunters bar also declined. The various kinds of drinks that could be once enjoyed here had disappeared. At this moment, each customer could only enjoy half a cup of "Iron-blood Lover".

At this moment, the illegal demon hunters market behind the bar was clear. There was an eye-catching plate outside the demon hunters bar—until the first demonized puppet enters, this bar will keep running.

This was the last bar in Mocco City. Perhaps because of its declaration, those customers who visited here didn't have any complaint about the supply of only half a cup of "Iron-blood Lover".

Mocco City was besieged by demonized puppets corps. The railway had been cut off. As a result, materials could not reach inside the city by railway. Within 9 days, the airships had supported Mocco City 3 times and launched air attack to the demonized puppets outside the city 3 times by dropping a lot of gel ammunition. However, fewer human airships could reach Mocco City, posing increasingly less threat to the demonized puppets corps outside Mocco City. According to the gossip, human airship troops suffered a severe loss these days after being raided by the wing demons. Many airships were shot down by the wing demons on the way here.

After fighting overnight, many demon hunters and paladins were gathering in a bar at this moment. Zhang Tie was sitting in a location which was not eye-catching as he was sipping the beer in his cup and listening to others' talks.

They were not here to drink and trade items; instead, they were here to exchange messages and discuss the countermeasures.

Although it was a fierce battle last night, it was not fatal to these LV 9 human fighters. Additionally, everybody knew that the most critical moment had not arrived yet.

"When the city collapse, I will break out from the south city gate. Who else would like to leave with me?" A demon hunter at Zhang Tie's round-table put it straightforwardly as he placed his glass on the table forcefully.

"Count me in!"

"Count me in!"

"And me!"

Some guys instantly agreed with him. It was not a coward tactic to break out of the encirclement of demonized puppets.

"Having been in Selnes Theater of Operations for many days, I only understood one point, as long as we didn't clear those b*stards of Three-eye Association, the allied human forces in Waii Sub-continent would never win the war. Even if they could, it was just temporary. The more humans gathered here, the easier it would be for the b*stards of Three-eye Association to screw us up. I don't want to be framed by those b*stards. Therefore, I prefer to break out of the city." Another paladin replied calmly.

"Peter, how about you?" With this question, all the members at the table focused on Zhang Tie. Although Zhang Tie didn't show off his real battle force, everybody working together with Zhang Tie had realized that Zhang Tie was unusual. This could be seen from his performance last night. Among all the humans exiting the city gate to fight demonized puppets, Zhang Tie was the only one who didn't suffer any wound after fighting overnight. Additionally, he saved a partner in the end.

Zhang Tie was also considering the same question.

"I don't want to leave temporarily. If there are still troops fighting demonized puppets in the city, I will fight together with

them. I will not leave until the last moment!"

Zhang Tie's words shocked everybody.

"Ah? Why?" Robin asked with a strange look.

"I want to see whether the demon corps would appear. Honestly, I've not seen how a super corps of 100,000 demons launched an attack on a city." Zhang Tie revealed a smile. Zhang Tie stayed in the city these days for two reasons. First, he wanted to see how the demonized puppets corps collided with the human defense line of steam and steel; second, he had a small desire—if that super demon corps appeared in Mocco City with a limited number of demon fighters, it would be a good opportunity for him to grow fruits of source of iron-armored demons.

Zhang Tie had not eaten a fruit of source; even that fruit of source of wing demons had not been ripe yet. However, Zhang Tie had always been dreaming for one ripe fruit of source because of its powerful attribute. With one fruit of source of wing demons, he could increase his source by $\frac{1}{12}$; namely, he could increase the ability of each surging point that he had lit by $\frac{1}{12}$. Based on the number of surging points that Zhang Tie had lit, as long as he ate one fruit of source, the total ability of 125 surging points would increase by $\frac{1}{12}$, namely, the ability of lighting another 10 surging points. Additionally, such a surplus effect would grow greater as he lit more and more surging points.

As long as he could ripe two fruits of source in Selnes Theater of Operations, this trip in Selnes would be worthwhile.

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, all the demon hunters and paladins at present became stunned for a few seconds. Then, the paladin told Zhang Tie solemnly, "Younger brother Peter, if we want to be well-known, we will get a lot of opportunities later on. As the holy war has just begun, we cannot kill all the demons. As long as we're alive, after this holy war, we might be nobles! At this moment, Mocco City is already a dead city. You've already seen

what happened last night. Many ballistas on the city wall had broken down. They might be damaged by those b*stards of Three-eye Association. If you're mired in this city, you would be screwed up by the Three-eye Association!"

"Yes, even if we leave Mocco City at this moment, we can also find a chance to fight demons later on!"

"If I do not feel good, I will leave out of here. I don't plan to sacrifice myself for a city!" Zhang Tie revealed a smile as he was indeed not anxious about leaving out of here.

"Younger brother Peter, if you intend to stay here, you must have a way to protect yourself. I saw the all-purpose medicament that you gave to Robin, it's a rarity, which could save one's life. Do you have more? If you have, can you sell some to us? I can pay you 50 gold coins for one vial!" The demon hunter who expressed to break out of the south city gate stared at Zhang Tie with glittering eyes.

For these demon hunters who fought demons on the battlefield, they knew clearly what the all-purpose medicament represented. With one more vial of all-purpose medicament, they could survive at the critical moment. However, dozens of gold coins were nothing compared to their lives. Actually, the all-purpose medicament was really more useful than gold coins. Previously, all sorts of items were sold in the illegal demon hunters market, except for all-purpose medicament. As for all-purpose medicament, anyone who saw it would hide it or store it; nobody would complain about that they carried too many vials of all-purpose medicament.

Glancing at their enthusiastic eyes, Zhang Tie smiled as he took out a carry-on medicament purse and opened it in front of them. There were 9 vials of all-purpose medicament inside it.

"One of my friends serves in Thor Mercenary Group. After knowing that I was going to Selnes Theater of Operations, he gifted me 10 vials of all-purpose medicament. One was used by

Robin, there are 9 vials left now. Don't talk about money with me. We're comrades-in-arms. I only take 2, you can share the rest 7, 1 for each. Hope this thing could work at the critical moment!" Zhang Tie said generously. After that, he took out the vials of all-purpose medicament and gave one vial to each of them, including Robin. Zhang Tie just kept 2 vials.

After hearing Zhang Tie's generous words, the other 7 people were all moved very much. It was really a timely assistance.

Because of some vials of all-purpose medicament, Zhang Tie made some more friends.

...

Half an hour later, Zhang Tie left the demon hunters bar and returned to the apartment which was gifted to him by Reinhardt. After that, he closed his eyes and crossed his legs before cultivating the endless true words of the Great Wilderness Sutra.

The daytime soon passed. When it turned completely dark, Zhang Tie opened his eyes and stood up. After warming up his limbs, he checked around the apartment and found that he was the only person in the entire apartment. All the nearby streets and gardens were very tranquil. As the battle outside the city wall was so fierce, nobody had time to care about this trivial place. Therefore, Zhang Tie became reassured.

Zhang Tie came to the bedroom and entered the hidden tunnel. Closely after that, he entered Castle of Black Iron.

Only after 10 seconds, the thunder hawk had appeared in Zhang Tie's bedroom. It looked right and left before walking out of the bedroom. It then came to the balcony. After thrusting against the ground forcefully and flapping its wings, it flew away.

After hovering around Mocco City for a circle, especially above some warehouses which stored the materials such as grains, he flew outside the city...

Chapter 639: A Needle in the Ocean

The battle outside Mocco City became fiercer in the evening; especially the section being longer than 100 m in the middle of the north city wall had become the focus of the entire battlefield, where most corpses of the demonized puppets piled up at the fastest speed.

Hovering in the sky, with only one short glance, Zhang Tie found that the corpses of demonized puppets had piled up another 2 m higher. A slope almost as high as 20 m had formed.

While besieging the Mocco City, the demons also knew how to break through this city at the minimal price by centralizing its force. When the greater part of the demonized puppets corps was used in attacking the north city wall, most of the defensive equipment on the other city walls of Mocco City became useless. Only a few defensive equipments nearby the east of the north city wall and the west city wall could provide limited support to the great stress facing the north.

When it turned dark, the demonized puppets were driven mad. They rushed towards Mocco City one round after another. 8 rows of human fighters were squaring their shoulders in a line of thousands of meters on the north city wall with crossbows in their hands. They were defending demonized puppets by shooting in sections. The moment one row of human fighters finished shooting, the other row would substitute them.

At the foot of the city wall, more and more human fighters were gathering in the dark and preparing to substitute those fighters on the city wall. Given the strength and firing intensity required for operating the crossbows, most of the human fighters could only stand 2 hours; otherwise, they would become exhausted and could not be well-prepared to shoot crossbows in the regular time.

In the dark, rows of bolts were fired towards outside the city like

rain.

Unless being shot in the head, those demonized puppets would never stop; instead, they were just delayed a second. Many demonized puppets were still rushing towards the north city wall like a hedgehog while being covered with bolts.

Compared to the lethality of ballistas, crossbows were too weak. From 100 m away, the bolts of crossbows could not be lethal to demonized puppets after penetrating through the "corpse" shields in their arms.

At this moment, all the turrets on the north city wall had broken down. None of them could run anymore. However, those human fighters were still trying their best to restore those turrets although they knew that it was impossible within such a short time.

At the sight of this, Zhang Tie let out a sigh. Facing such an overwhelming battle situation, he knew that he could not change anything; therefore, he kept flying towards outside the city.

A large flock of vultures appeared above the wild outside Mocco City due to the stink of corpses. They were waiting for the chance to share the rotten corpses below. Those vultures provided the greatest cover for Zhang Tie; nobody could notice that thunder hawk among those vultures.

When Zhang Tie flew over that demonized puppets corps. Perhaps because of such a unique perspective, he was shocked by the dense, millions of demonized puppets, which covered dozens of kilometers in the north of Mocco City. At the sight of them, Zhang Tie felt his scalp being covered with goosebumps.

The demonized puppets were restless on the ground and were waiting for the moment to break through the Mocco City.

In the middle of the matrix of these demonized puppets, Zhang Tie saw a lot of wing demons and a huge tent in the rear of the

demonized puppets corps. The tent felt being very rigid. A lot of fire baskets were burning around it. Zhang Tie also found a lot of humans there, besides demonized puppets.

When Zhang Tie was hovering in the air, he found a group of people walking out of the tent who were pointing at Mocco City in the distance. With the light provided by the flames in the fire baskets around the tent and the powerful vision of thunder hawk, Zhang Tie saw Koz, Scala and some strangers. Standing on Koz's side, those strangers felt as powerful as Koz and didn't look like Koz's subordinates. Scala was standing on their side as well.

When Zhang Tie was observing them, 2 people of them sensed his gaze as they raised their heads and watched the thunder hawk which was thousands of meters in height. One of them glanced at Zhang Tie seriously for a few seconds before moving his eyes away and continuing to watch Mocco City in the distance.

When they looked up, Zhang Tie's heart almost stopped beating. Even being a thunder hawk, he could still sense the terrifying, powerful threat from the ground.

One of the 2 people looked familiar. When he looked up, Zhang Tie suddenly remembered that he was that elder being employed by Senel Clan in Tokei City who looked like getting heated all over. Therefore, his heart raced.

What if a thunder hawk felt a powerful threat from the ground, what would he do then? He would fly away at once.

With the incarnation of thunder hawk, Zhang Tie knew it clearly how the thunder hawk would respond in such a case. Therefore, he immediately flew towards the north instead of continuing to observe the camp.

Zhang Tie didn't know that the elder being employed by Senel Clan didn't move his eyes away from the thunder hawk until he flew away.

"Elder Quentin, what's wrong?" Koz turned around and asked politely after realizing that Elder Quentin became absent-minded.

"Nothing, I just felt a thunder hawk was gazing at us just now. Therefore, I checked whether there was some problem with the bird..." Elder Quentin explained.

Zhang Tie could not identify Quentin's real age. Given his look, he didn't have any wrinkles on his face at all. He looked like a middle-aged man who took care of himself very well. His hair looked abnormally offwhite while his pupils were burning rufous flames. As long as Zhang Tie looked into his eyes, he would feel a great stress.

"Elder Quentin, you don't need to feel sorry about what happened in Tokei City. Our Senel Clan could afford that bit of loss of property. The Blackson Humans Corridor would belong to us sooner or later!" Koz comforted him "generously" as he thought Elder Quentin became oversensitive after what happened in Tokei City.

Nevertheless, although Koz mentioned the loss of property, he didn't mention the loss of his son Rouben. Senel Clan could never stand this. He would revenge for his son sooner or later.

Of course, Elder Quentin understood what did Koz mean. Senel Clan was severely damaged by that event in the underground space of the Misty Moon Woods; Koz also treated that event as a great shame. Closely after Koz's words, Elder Quentin had been surrounded with a killing qi while he narrowed his eyes, "Don't worry, no matter whom that person is, as long as I find him, I will never let him go."

"Now that person dared to rob Three-eye Association, he is our common enemy. Now that he could plunder our items in Tokei City, he must have unusual means. If that person was found, Elder Saale could give a favor to Elder Quentin when necessary!" A man on Koz's side said with a heroic look.

The elder who looked up together with Quentin then turned around and smiled at Elder Quentin. Elder Quentin also replied with a smile. At the same time, an abnormal light flashed across their eyes...

Although Senel Clan suffered a great loss, for those who had been knights, the mortal items were not indeed precious; what was indeed precious could not be bought or produced in this age. Those items were buried deep in the ground or the bottomless abyss. They were real treasures. It was said that they existed in the age of gods hundreds of millions of years ago. Elder Quentin and Elder Saale only heard about those rare items. Compared to those rare items, the loss of property of Senel Clan was nothing at all.

Such rare items were usually in the hands of rare powerful persons. Even Elder Quentin was dwarfed in front of those people who could have those rare items. Whereas, it was out of Elder Quentin's imagination that a guy who was weaker than him probably had such a rarity to plunder all the treasures using the tactic of luring the tiger out of the mountain. The rarity was even more powerful than all those that Elder Quentin had ever heard which could hold all the items in the warehouses of four airships. Naturally, Elder Quentin became excited.

Of course, that person might be a terrifying, powerful passerby who teased Elder Quentin when he passed through Tokei City; perhaps, many knights whose power was close to that of Elder Quentin joined hands to tease him. However, it was almost impossible. For instance, theoretically, the king had the same right to play mud with kids; however, no king would like to squat down and play mud with kids.

'This is a good opportunity that could not be met for 1,000 years.' Elder Quentin's heart pounded. However, what made him anxious was that he still didn't know the look of that robber. If there was even the slightest chance for him to know that the robber was in Selnes Theater of Operations, he would never let that robber go.

This was almost like seeking for a needle in the ocean. Although it was a hard work with a trivial chance, what if he found it?

Evidently, Elder Quentin was not the only one who had such a thought.

Elder Quentin didn't know that the "needle" had just flown over his head.

...

Chapter 640: An Incarnation of Demonized Puppet

After flying over the demonized puppets corps outside Mocco City, Zhang Tie soon arrived at Selnes Plain more than 300 miles away.

At this moment, many demonized puppets were still wandering in the wild nearby the battle fortresses which had been broken through by them. Zhang Tie targeted those demonized puppets.

In order to not make himself feel like vomiting after making a success, Zhang Tie wandered quite a while before locking a proper target. Its clothes were a bit tidier and didn't look that disgusting. When Zhang Tie caught sight of that demonized puppet, it was tearing a rear leg of a wild wolf like a wild beast on the vast prairie.

Watching it eating the flesh of a wild wolf, Zhang Tie felt a bit better at least. As it could kill a wild wolf, it was at least a LV 1 soldier.

There was nobody within dozens of miles. Therefore, Zhang Tie just landed on the exuberant grassland hundreds of meters away from that demonized puppet.

After a few seconds, Zhang Tie appeared and walked towards that demonized puppet.

When Zhang Tie was about 50 m away from that demonized puppet, the demonized puppet, who was gnawing the rear leg of the wild wolf, immediately raised its head and glared at Zhang Tie with a pair of bloody eyes. At the same time, it showed its teeth to Zhang Tie with a grim look. Closely after that, it dropped off that bloody rear leg and darted towards Zhang Tie.

Of course, this demonized puppet was as weak as an ant in Zhang Tie's eyes. Watching it rushing over here, Zhang Tie just stayed still with a smile. When the demonized puppet was about 5 m away

from him, a binding chain flew out of Zhang Tie's forehead and stroke it, freezing it right away. According to the acting time of the binding chain, Zhang Tie instantly identified that this demonized puppet was a LV 2.

Zhang Tie walked over there and teleported it into Castle of Black Iron at once. Closely after that, he also entered Castle of Black Iron. After being incarnated into the thunder hawk, he flew off once again.

After half an hour, the thunder hawk landed on a mountain in Selnes Plain more than 100 miles away. Closely after that, it entered Castle of Black Iron while Zhang Tie's eyes opened inside there.

The demonized puppet was still lying stiffly on the ground. Zhang Tie walked over there as he directly picked a Great Wilderness Seal from the 3rd floor of the All-spirits Pagoda and injected it into its mind.

In the next second, Zhang Tie realized that he was lying on the ground while his real body was standing on his side.

'The secret knowledge of the Great Wilderness Sutra could really control demonized puppets!' Zhang Tie exclaimed as he picked himself up from the ground at once. He became so excited that he almost sprung up.

Zhang Tie didn't realize that the effect of the binding chain had already been relieved.

After being incarnated into a demonized puppet, Zhang Tie felt being utterly different from being a rat. When he became a rat, he could sense how the rat sensed. However, when he was incarnated into a demonized puppet, he felt as weird as driving a machine. Zhang Tie poked the body which he was in using his finger and felt like poking a piece of log. He didn't have any sense at all. Of course, he would not feel any pain. Zhang Tie realized that he was manipulating the puppet worm in this body; instead of this body.

This body didn't have any sense of touch, smell or taste. It could only see and hear out its instinct to respond to hunger and thirst.

The demonized puppet kept its auditory sense unchanged. However, Zhang Tie felt like wearing a pair of tainted spectacles as everything he saw had lacked fidelity like being covered with a layer of a faint bloody curtain.

After being incarnated into the demonized puppet, Zhang Tie felt that its brain was full of disordered and bloody killing intents. Thankfully, the killing intent didn't influence Zhang Tie's judgment. Zhang Tie attempted to speak; however, he felt very difficult to utter any words. It seemed that the "manipulating mode" provided by that demonized puppet didn't contain the "option" of language and speech. He tried twice only to find that he could only utter meaningless sounds.

Zhang Tie tried to run around the top of the mountain for a while and did some movements. He found that the body of the demonized puppet could still move freely. Zhang Tie could still use his Iron-blood Fist using this body, although being less powerful. His battle awareness and instinct was still there. However, great strengths such as hidden battle qi could not be implemented by this body. Thankfully, Zhang Tie didn't need this demonized puppet to do anything difficult. He only needed to hide himself inside its body.

After noticing that Heller was watching him interestingly on his side, Zhang Tie retreated from the incarnation and returned his awareness to his original body.

After that, the demonized puppet just stood aside stupidly. After seeing that Heller pointed at the entrance of this mountain, this demonized puppet walked into the mountain cave.

"In usual time, we can just let it stay in the mountain cave and have Gandi, Aziz and Edward feed it some food and water. When Castle Lord needs its body, you can just call it out!" Heller told

Zhang Tie.

"That's great. I've not imagined that the soul-based animal controlling skill could really control demons!" Zhang Tie told Heller fervently. In this way, he would not be identified by them even if he disguised as a demonized puppet in front of those b*stards of Three-eye Association.

"To the final analysis, the demonized puppet is just a special worm. Of course, it is under the control of the secret method in the Great Wilderness Sutra!"

Zhang Tie instantly recalled something as his heart raced, "Hmm? If I meet a parent puppet worm, can I control it?"

"Of course, Castle Lord; but you need to raise your floors of the All-spirits Pagoda. Given the current floors of the All-spirits Pagoda that you've unlocked, you could not control the parent puppet worm temporarily!"

"Ah? What's the level of the parent puppet worm?"

"It's a LV 14 living being!"

"LV 14?"

"Right!" Heller nodded.

The moment he heard Heller's words had Zhang Tie dropped that exotic thought. He had just unlocked the 3rd floor of All-spirits Pagoda. That was to say, he could only control LV 2 living beings at most. He had to unlock the 15th floor of All-spirits Pagoda so as to control LV 14 living beings. However, even if he did nothing but read endless true words of the Great Wilderness Sutra for 10 years, he could still not unlock the 15th floor of All-spirits Pagoda. Because the higher the floor was, the more times of endless true words he needed to read. The times grew in the form of a Fibonacci data array. What was more was that they were calculated by the unit of ten thousands.

He needed to read the endless true words of the Great Wilderness

Sutra for 1.3 million times so as to unlock the 4th floor, 2.1 million times to unlock the 5th floor, 3.4 million times to unlock the 6th floor and 5.5 million times to unlock the 7th floor...he had to read endless true words numerous times before unlocking the 15th floor.

'Well, just forget about that. Don't be that greedy. Just step by step. Others could not even have an incarnation. I should be satisfied with such an ability. It's not good for me to be over-ambitious.' Zhang Tie then gradually recovered his composure.

Watching Zhang Tie's look, Heller knew what Zhang Tie was thinking about. After realizing that Zhang Tie accepted the reality so fast, Heller nodded inside. On the way towards being a real powerhouse, it's not always good for a person to have an unrealistic high expectation, regardless of the way near his foot. Many cultivators were destroyed by unrealistic expectations. Perhaps, Zhang Tie didn't have high talent, he was indeed very diligent. Additionally, he was always optimistic and full of hope, which was the necessary foundation for a person to be a real powerhouse.

As he had just left Castle of Black Iron for less than 2 weeks, there was only one ripe leakless fruit on the small tree, while the other one had not been ripe yet. It was not enough to light a surging point; therefore, Zhang Tie didn't waste time in Castle of Black Iron. He soon appeared in the woods.

This time, Zhang Tie targeted some powerful incarnations below LV 2. The demonized puppet could only be used in special situations. On one hand, there were still some available Great Wilderness Seals on the 2nd floor and the 3rd floor of All-spirits Pagoda at this moment. He wanted to use them. On the other hand, Zhang Tie didn't feel that the soul-based animal controlling skill could bring him any side effects. Therefore, he intended to get some more incarnations.

To be honest, although the rat helped Zhang Tie a lot, it was too

common. Zhang Tie always wanted to find an incarnation with a special ability. He only requested it to be a bit sharper than that rat.

With this thought, Zhang Tie came to a relatively open land in the woods. After that, he injected a Great Wilderness Seal from the 2nd floor of All-spirits Pagoda into the ground...

The moment the Great Wilderness Seal entered the ground, an invisible, mysterious wave had started to spread across the mountain...

Zhang Tie just waited for those small animals...

Chapter 641: An Exotic Beetle

Zhang Tie was waiting silently in an open land of the woods...

A few seconds later, some green points appeared in the distant shrugs. With faint rustles, two yellowish LV 1 huge wolves jumped out of the brushwood behind the shrugs and laid on the ground in front of Zhang Tie.

After that, with a flapping sound, an odd-looking bird flew over here.

The Great Wilderness Seal in the Summon Sector on the 2nd floor of All-spirits Pagoda could actually summon all the LV 1 and LV 0 animals within 30 miles; however, as Zhang Tie wanted a special incarnation, he only summoned LV 1 living beings. That was to say, those LV 0 animals were not qualified to attend this big party.

In the wild of Selnes Plain, there were too many LV 0 living beings; by contrast, there were very few LV 1 mutated living beings.

Zhang Tie just waited there silently. Soon, an agile leopard cat with shiny fur appeared in front of Zhang Tie at an extremely fast speed. After circling around Zhang Tie for a while, it stayed under a tree in a cute way.

The leopard cat moved very fast and lightly. It was the fastest animal that Zhang Tie had seen in the woods so far.

After carefully glancing at that leopard cat, Zhang Tie shook his head. The leopard cat was too large; additionally, it only stayed in the woods. If it appeared in other places, it would arouse others' attention for sure. This was what Zhang Tie wanted.

Zhang Tie wanted a trivial animal which could substitute that rat. It should be able to go anywhere that common rats could and could not go. It should have a greater ability to move and survive.

It should be agile and be hidden enough at a place. Additionally, it had better be small enough to drill into that warehouse that he had broken in Tokei.

Animals had different features. As this incarnation was not used to fight, it didn't need to be too strong and deterrent. If a weak thing was used properly, it could also play a great role.

After a short while, with a loud noise, a large area of shrubs fell down while a brown bear with terrifying, sharp claws slowly appeared. Closely after that, a leopard, some strange birds and a weird scaly anteater arrived.

As Zhang Tie was not a biologist, he could only identify which family did they belong to; however, he could not tell their names. In this age, there were too many LV 1 mutated living beings to be told by many authoritative biologists.

When LV 1 animals appeared one after another, Zhang Tie became hopeless constantly. Although these animals were good, they were not what he needed.

Finally, when Zhang Tie saw some red hedgehogs wobbling towards him under the moonlight, he even burst out into laughter.

'Alright, these might be all the nearby LV 1 living beings.' Zhang Tie shook his head.

Zhang Tie waved his hands to let all the LV 1 living beings leave politely and safely like that they had just joined a party. No attacks happened.

Zhang Tie was not disappointed. He just injected the 2nd Great Wilderness Seal from the All-spirits Pagoda into the ground which could be used to summon LV 2 living beings.

Zhang Tie waited there for about 10 minutes. With a bloody wind, a tiger with silver markings appeared in front of Zhang Tie. After a low roar, it laid on the ground.

In the next half an hour, Zhang Tie saw no more LV 2 animals.

When he thought he had wasted two Great Wilderness Seals of Summon Sector tonight, a pitch-dark little beetle fell on his shoulder after flying around him for a short while.

At the sight of that tiny beetle, Zhang Tie became stunned, 'Is this small thing a LV 2 living being or a common beetle who was passing by here coincidentally?'

'It's easy to verify this question. If this small thing is appealed here by the LV 2 Great Wilderness Seal from the Summon Sector, it would follow my order.' Zhang Tie thought.

"Come here onto my palm!" Zhang Tie opened his hand and told that beetle.

After receiving Zhang Tie's message, the small beetle flew off Zhang Tie's shoulder and landed on Zhang Tie's palm without any fear.

'Yi? What an interesting thing!' Zhang Tie mumbled.

Zhang Tie moved the beetle in front of him and watched it carefully. It was only as large as half of his thumb. Its pitch-dark shell was shining metallic luster. After a careful look, Zhang Tie found its shape a bit strange. Its body was like an amplified ant. Being different from common ants, this small thing's eyes seemed to be a bit larger than that of common ants. Additionally, there was a pair of wings on its back. When it landed, its wings could be completely hidden in his hard shell. When necessary, its wings would pop out of its shell.

Zhang Tie stroked its tiny body with one finger as he found it pretty hard. It felt like touching a small piece of iron.

"Show me your talent!" Zhang Tie sent an order to that small thing.

After circling in Zhang Tie's palm for a few seconds, it flew off. Zhang Tie found that it could even fly a bit faster than common sparrows. Because of its small figure, it seemed to be more agile.

The small thing flew a few seconds around Zhang Tie rapidly like showing off itself. It even dared land on the head of the tiger with silver markings. The tiger seemed to be very afraid of that small thing. When the small thing landed on its head, the tiger even gritted its teeth and wanted to pat away the small thing. However, he finally dared not do that; he could only shake its head.

When the small thing landed on the tiger's head, it changed its color into that of the tiger like a chameleon. If he did not watch it carefully, Zhang Tie thought it was just a spot on the tiger's head.

'What a marvelous talent!' Zhang Tie became interested in it.

The small thing then flew off the tiger's head and landed on a trunk 10 m away. At the same time, its body turned into the color of that of the trunk and became unidentified.

After that, the small thing moved. In only a bit longer than 10 seconds, it had already drilled a hole on the trunk. Two minutes later, it came out of the trunk from the other end of the hole. In such a short period, it had already drilled through the trunk which was as thick as 1.5 m.

Zhang Tie widened his mouth in a shock...

After flying off the trunk, the small thing directly landed on a distant solid rock. In a blink of an eye, it had already opened a hole on the rock and hid itself inside.

Zhang Tie knew that some ants and beetles were good at drilling holes; however, he had not imagined that this small thing was that sharp.

When he saw it drilling out of the ground beside the rock, Zhang Tie waved his hand towards it. The small thing then flew over and fell onto his hand once again.

At this moment, Zhang Tie realized the cuteness of the small thing.

Zhang Tie waved his hand towards that tiger. The tiger then

turned around and disappeared in the woods.

Zhang Tie then gradually hid himself in the shadowy place and entered Castle of Black Iron together with that beetle.

The moment Zhang Tie returned to Castle of Black Iron had that small beetle flown off Zhang Tie's hand. It seemed to be very excited. It flew around the small tree for a few seconds before rushing to the high air. Then, it wanted to touch and catch up with the colorful clouds. After finding that it could not catch up with the colorful clouds, it circled around the mountain rapidly for a few seconds before diving towards the foot of the mountain. After reaching the abyss which was made of the Pool of Chaos at the foot of the mountain, the small thing started to dance in the air. Under Zhang Tie's gaze, the small thing couldn't wait to drill a hole on the cliff.

After a few minutes, that small beetle flew back and landed onto Zhang Tie's palm. At the same time, it started to circle in his palm due to the excitement.

Zhang Tie smiled as he injected a LV 2 Great Wilderness Seal into that special little beetle.

In a split second, Zhang Tie found he was on the palm of his original body which was as lofty as a mountain. Zhang Tie then flew off. As he turned small, he found the top of the mountain became grotesque at once. The small tree became as lofty as a huge towering tree. Each leaf of the tree was like a balcony where he could rest on. The brook on the mountain became a surging river while those rocks became high mountains. Each item was very fresh to him. The entire world seemed having enlarged by many times as it turned abruptly vivid...

Although being the same world, it had different splendors in different viewpoints.

The beetle's vision was not as open as that of humans. However, it could still see objects over miles away. Additionally, it seemed to

have twilight vision. With fine light, it could see clearly everything nearby. What was funny was that the auditory sense of the beetle was on its legs. There was a layer of fine fur on its legs, which were sensitive to rocks and sounds in the air. Within a distance of about 20 m, it even had a sharper auditory sense about low sounds than humans.

The small beetle then flew downwards the foot of the mountain. It finally arrived at that distant village. As it was late, villagers had already gone to bed. After making a round, it flew into the hieron, where he saw his own statue. Some seniors were sitting on their knees in front of the statue. They might be praying piously. However, they didn't notice such a trivial beetle at all...

"My lord, please accept our gratitude. It's you who gave us new lives..."

"My lord, please accept our gratitude. It's you who gave us food..."

"My lord, please accept our gratitude. It's you who gave us safety..."

"The greatest god in the world, you break the hell to open a sacred gate of redemption for those in troubles. You punish all the evils in the world by throwing javelins as fast as lightning bolts. You master the great karma. All the living beings will succumb to you. You display the greatness of life to the human world. Your name is the most sacred secret..."

The prayers were being sung solemnly and sentimentally. This seemed to be a rite that these people had invented.

Zhang Tie landed on a stony pillar in the palace. After listening to them quietly for a short while, he flew away. Watching him being worshiped like a god, Zhang Tie felt pretty absurd.

The beetle then flew back to his palm while his consciousness returned to himself...

Watching that beetle lying in his palm, a whim occurred to Zhang Tie's mind. He took out a vial of all-purpose medicament and dripped some drops in his palm. The little beetle soon drunk them all. It became so happy to taste such a yummy drink for the first time.

...

After having one demonized puppet and one beetle as his incarnations, Zhang Tie's potential ability improved again. Zhang Tie was very satisfied with that. Therefore, after telling Heller about something, he incarnated into a thunder hawk and flew out of Castle of Black Iron.

After a bit longer than 1 hour, Zhang Tie had arrived at Sladic City.

Like Mocco City, Sladic City was also besieged by 3-4 millions of demonized puppets. The land outside Sladic City was also covered with corpses. As it was evening, the battle between humans and demonized puppets grew fiercer...

After observing the battle situation facing Sladic City, Zhang Tie knew that human defense line across Selnes was on the verge of collapse...

Chapter 642: Message and Farewell

Zhang Tie learned that he had become a dad in the morning of the 25th day of the month.

This was completely a kind of whim. When the Selnes human defense line was going to be collapsed, Zhang Tie remembered that he had not contacted his family members for many days. Therefore, after finding two incarnations for himself last night, he took out the remote sensing crystal that his elder brother gifted him when he got up on the next morning. When Zhang Tie injected his spiritual energy into the remote sensing crystal, he soon sensed a vibration from the other side at a fixed frequency. It indicated that someone on the other side was always gazing at the other remote sensing crystal. Zhang Tie wondered whether his elder brother was paying attention to it or someone else. As he was in the Selnes Theater of Operations, he could not do anything but watch the remote sensing crystal. Therefore, Zhang Tie always touched Zhang Yang on his own initiative unless he and his elder brother fixed the contact time in advance.

Zhang Tie soon sent some secret words that he and his elder brother had appointed to identify each other's real status in the different frequency of oscillation, high or low. After dozens of seconds, Zhang Tie received a reply in the same type of secret language. It was Zhang Yang.

Therefore, their statuses were confirmed.

After that, the core of the remote sensing crystal oscillated in different frequency, high or low.

Zhang Tie jostled down the frequency of oscillation as he deciphered the contents of the section of frequency in the way that he and his elder brother had appointed.

——You're a dad now. Linda, Beverly and Fiona gave birth to 3 male babies for you on the afternoon of the 22nd day of this

month. Linda first, Beverly second, Fiona third.

After being familiar with the use of remote sensing crystal, they felt very convenient to touch each other with remote sensing crystals although they could not talk with each other, as long as they were tacit. This was like how humans made instant message transfer using mobile or telegraph before the Catastrophe. However, compared to that of mobile or telegraph, a pair of twin remote sensing crystals in this age was too expensive that even many rich people could not afford it. In many corps of human countries across Blackson Humans Corridor, a pair of twin remote sensing crystals was already a high-end configuration for a division. Only large-scale business groups, noble clans and some personnel or agencies targeting special tasks such as Golden Roc Bank, the super giant.

After receiving Zhang Yang's message, Zhang Tie's heart pounded. After more than 1 minute, Zhang Tie sent another message.

——How are Linda, Beverly and Fiona?

——They are safe. What about you? Dad and mom are worried about you very much.

——I'm okay. But I'm afraid that the human defense line in Selnes Theater of Operations will be collapsed.

——Just come back then!

——I cannot come back temporarily. I have my way to protect myself. I'm always safe.

——Huaiyuan Palace have dispatched some personnel to our home.

——What's the matter?

——Your babies were different from others when they came out. They had abnormal phenomena. All the 3 babies had awakened an immortal bloodline, a complete ancestral bloodline and a leakless

body when they came out, which even aroused a shock across Fuhai City. Meanwhile, the news is spreading in Yingzhou State. We dare not even leave our house now. Various figures come to visit us everyday.

Zhang Yang's response was very long, which shocked Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie didn't feel amazed about the inheritance of the color-changing pupils and precise throwing skill. However, it was out of Zhang Tie's imagination that the trait of the leakless body was also inherited. Zhang Tie guessed that this might be related to the leakless fruits that he had eaten, 'It's understandable that I could have a leakless body after eating so many leakless fruits; but how could the babies also have leakless bodies when they don't have any leakless fruit to eat?' Zhang Tie wondered. He then asked Heller straightforwardly.

"The leakless state of the three babies is inherited from you. It was an effect of leakless fruits. It's a duplication and response to your own physical state. However, their leakless bodies are different from your leakless state. In the concept of Eastern Continent, the alleged leakless bodies of them refer to that it won't easily lose their aura and spiritual energy. By contrast, your leakless state refers to that none of your energy would escape with the effect of the Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree. Your leakless state is many tiers higher than that of theirs. Although they don't have leakless fruits to eat, their leakless state could improve their health and make them more resistant. Benefited from that, they could better cultivate many battle skills and secret knowledge. Simply, the 3 babies are born with a higher qualification of cultivation!"

"Higher than me?" Zhang Tie asked.

Heller became silent for a second before replying with a vacant expression, "Castle Lord, you're really humorous!"

"Would all of my babies have such a leakless body in the future?"

"Yes!"

When Zhang Tie talked with Heller, Zhang Yang sent another message.

——Have you already guessed the traits of your babies?

——Yes!

Zhang Tie replied honestly as he treated his elder brother as one of the most reliable persons in this world.

Zhang Yang became silent for a short while. He didn't ask why. After eating the fruit of plunder gifted by Zhang Yang, he had already known that Zhang Tie had a lot of secrets. .

——Huaiyuan Palace is looking for you. I didn't tell them how I could I get in touch with you. They also hope us to move to Huaiyuan City.

——What's your plan?

——It has aroused a shock. Perhaps we will settle down in Huaiyuan City for a few years. After a few years, when the babies grew up and Jinwu Commercial Organization's base in Taixia became a bit steady. We will build our private city in Taixia Country and leave an everlasting undertaking for Zhang's posterity. By then, we will not have to rely on others.

——That's a good idea!

'I've not imagined that my elder brother has been ambitious to build a city soon after arriving at Taixia Country. It seems that Taixia Country is indeed suitable for developing undertaking.' Zhang Tie became thrilled.

——Have you named the babies?

——Just let our dad deal with it.

——When will we contact next time?

——The 25th day of next month. It might be a bit chaotic this month.

——Fine, take care of yourself!

——You too!

Zhang Tie then put away his remote sensing crystal.

It was out of Zhang Tie's imagination that Huaiyuan Palace was looking for him. But it was reasonable as Zhang Tie knew that the elders of Huaiyuan Palace prioritized bloodlines very much. 'At this moment, I must have been a "Trump-card stallion" in Huaiyuan Palace. If it was a few years ago, Zhang Tie would dream for this day for sure. However, at this moment, Zhang Tie had realized that many things were more important than making piston movements with beauties.

'Whatever, I don't believe they can find me. When they cannot find me, they will abandon this thought. It would depend on when will I return to Eastern Continent and Huaiyuan Palace by then.'

'I wonder what Lan Yunxi will think about it when she finds out that I've become a dad.' Zhang Tie rubbed his face with a bitter look, 'Whatever, let's just wait until I meet her. Oh, I should have inquired my elder brother about the current situation of Lan Yunxi. I have to do that next time.'

On the verge of the collapse of Mocco City, Zhang Tie was not nervous at all. Because he knew that with his abilities, he didn't need to be nervous at all. Zhang Tie, as a 5-star battle master, was trivial in such a large-scale battle which determined the life or death of millions of humans across Blackson Humans Corridor. There were a lot of powerhouses on both sides. It was not his turn to determine the overall situation. He only needed to mind his own business.

When he recalled those people of Senel Clan that he saw outside the city last night, a killing intent flashed by Zhang Tie's eyes. Perhaps he could not defeat LV 16 Koz or LV 14 Scala in a head-on collision at this moment, he didn't need to please them face to face given that they were just b*stards of Three-eye Association who

were excelled at playing tricks. As long as he could kill them or made them unhappy, he didn't care about much. At this moment, Zhang Tie had already prepared to be a fish in troubled waters.

As it was already the 25th day of this month, given the progress of the accumulative corpses of demonized puppets outside the city gate, they would be able to break in Mocco City in the following 24 hours. At such a critical moment, Zhang Tie calmed down; instead of being anxious.

There were still some firewood and food in the kitchen of this apartment which was gifted by Reinhardt. Although the water pipes had already run out of the water, the water tank in the washroom was still full of water which was preserved several days ago.

Zhang Tie lit the firewood and made a steaming breakfast. After that, he took off his clothes and took a cool bath in the washroom. When he came out of the washroom in a towel while cleaning his hair, he heard the doorbell ring. He opened the door and found it was Reinhardt.

Reinhardt was wearing a suit of battle armor which was covered with blood stains. It seemed that he had just left the battlefield. At the sight of Zhang Tie who looked like having a vacation in Mocco City, he widely opened his mouth.

"Ah, boss, come on in. Do you want to eat something? I've just made the breakfast." Zhang Tie leaned his body, allowing Reinhardt to enter.

Reinhardt then strode in. He then sniffed the taste of breakfast in the kitchen. If not Zhang Tie kept fighting demonized puppets on the city wall these days, Reinhardt would doubt that whether he had come to the wrong place.

"You are taking a bath at this moment?"

Zhang Tie revealed a casual smile, "No matter what, Mocco City

could not stand too long; therefore, I took a bath before the city was collapsed. Just take it as a memory. Pitifully, there's no barber's shop in business now; I even wanted to have a haircut."

Few people could be so calm at such a critical moment across the Mocco City. Reinhardt's dumbfounded look turned into an admirable look. Sometimes, the demeanor of great generals referred to such guys who could feel free to make breakfast when the city was going to be collapsed.

"When Mocco City is collapsed, Norman Empire's Iron Plough Corps will break out. Do you want to leave with us?" Reinhardt put it straightforward...

"I want to stay in Mocco City and kill demons for a longer time. I won't leave before this city is completely ruined!" Zhang Tie answered.

Reinhardt watched Zhang Tie seriously for quite a while when he saw a firm conviction in Zhang Tie's eyes.

"Okay, take care of yourself!"

"You too!"

The two people then embraced each other tightly as they patted the other's back and shoulder heavily. Closely after that, Reinhardt strode away.

Zhang Tie knew that it was uncertain whether they could reunite after this departure. When the holy war broke out, life or death situation and regrets always happened to friends, brothers, and relatives!

After seeing Reinhardt off, Zhang Tie took a deep breath before returning to the table. After glancing at the rest breakfast, he sat at the table calmly and gnawed it leisurely...

Chapter 643: The Final Moment

Sometimes, one would do something strange thing in others' eyes. When on Hidden Dragon Island, Zhang Tie was told that there was an elder brother in Hidden Dragon Palace who would like to do surfing when terrifying, huge waves being as high as dozens of meters formed in the ocean. Previously, Zhang Tie didn't understand why. Until when he watched the millions of demonized puppets surging over here like huge waves, he understood that there was a dauntless pledge surging in all the men's souls——Here I am, here I see, here I conquer!

At dusk, the slope of the corpses of demonized puppets finally reached the height of the top of the city wall. At the same time, the first demonized puppet climbed onto the city wall using its dirty hands and jumped off it.

As was predicted, all the demonized puppets of that batch were killed by the garrison. After being killed, their corpses were pushed off the city wall and made the pile of corpses a bit higher.

After attacking Mocco City for 10 consecucutive days like a storm, when the demonized puppets finally climbed onto the city wall, they all stopped. At the same time, all the demonized puppets retreated from the front line and returned to their large unit. As a result, the periphery of the entire Mocco City became quiet at once, showing a temporary, weird peace.

Right then, all the air defense towers in Mocco City rung shrill alarms at the same time, which sounded like the last roars and wails of this human city and shocked everyone's souls. At that moment, all the humans guarding this city stopped what they were doing and listened to it carefully. The alarms indicated that demonized puppets had already climbed onto the city wall.

When the alarms sounded, Zhang Tie, who had taken a bath, finished his brunch and taken a noontime snooze, was drinking

beer leisurely in the Demon Hunters Bar. At this moment, there were only over 10 people in the bar.

When they heard the alarms, everyone put down their glasses and listened to it carefully, including the bartender who stopped wiping the glass in his hand.

When the alarms stopped, the bartender didn't say anything. He just took out some bottles of liquor from a lower hidden place in the cabinet and filled all the glasses for those people who were sitting at the bar counter. Meanwhile, he said unwillingly, "This is Fiery Blade, a special, orthodox liquor from Eastern Continent. I always keep it. Try it. It's my treat today. You will not have such a chance to later on."

Fiery Blade was a Hebrew saying. As a Hua people, Zhang Tie didn't know that it had another orthodox Hua name——Burning Blade! According to Donder, the best Burning Blade had to be soaked in a fiery lava crystal, which grew underground, for longer than half a year after being brewed. The lava crystal would grant that sort of liquor a special taste and power.

Zhang Tie didn't know whether the Fiery Blade was the very Burning Blade as was mentioned by Donder. He took the glass and bottomed it up. It was like drinking a ball of flames. Closely after that, he was impulsive to chop off something's head with a saber.

Everybody in the bar had bottomed up the liquor. Someone's face turned red while others' faces turned pale. After putting down the glass forcefully, everybody straighten their clothes and took their weapons before walking out of the bar silently.

When Zhang Tie walked out of the bar, he looked back and found the Demon Hunters Bar had been empty. The bartender let out a deep sigh before spreading the Burning Blade over the bar, including its counter.

After coming outside, the demon hunters and paladins didn't say anything. They just departed and headed in different directions.

Being different from them, Zhang Tie just walked towards the north city gate. At this moment, the streets became vacant. Being barehanded, Zhang Tie carried that shell-shaped equipment which contained a lot of special ax boomerangs. Until he saw the opening arsenal nearby the north city gate did he walk in.

An elder ranking first sergeant was sitting outside the gate of the arsenal while smoking a cigarette. He was cutting off those uniformed swords and sabers from their handles and heads with a set of steam cutting machine, making them ineffective. They were surplus weapons stored in Mocco City. As it was close to the north city gate, if not destroy them at this moment, they would be used by demonized puppets to kill humans.

"They are all good weapons. What a pity!"

Each time the arsenal keeper took a saber or a javelin from his side, he would touch it gently by hand and let out a sigh. After that, he would use the simplest method to turn it into scrap iron.

In the afterglow of the setting sun, the old man looked special while holding that cigarette languidly and revealing a sad look. Those broken parts of javelins, sabers, and swords were lying all over the ground like corpses.

Watching the old man, Zhang Tie suddenly felt like watching a shepherd dropping his tears and slaughtering his own lambs. The spraying flames were like spurting fresh blood after the weapons were cut through their throats.

"I want to f*ck demons on the city wall. Give me two weapons, one in one hand. I don't care what they are. My requirements are that they're heavy and durable!" Zhang Tie said.

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, the old man raised his head and threw a glance at Zhang Tie while a shiny light flashed by his cloudy eyes. Closely after that, he grinned as he stood up in front of the steam cutting machine. "Come with me!"

The old man led Zhang Tie into the warehouse. Zhang Tie caught sight of a huge crate which was longer than 2 m on a trailer. The old man pried off the cover using a shovel and exposed the weapon inside. That's a pair of huge swords being fixed on a simple wooden frame. There were some fillers between two huge swords. At the sight of it, Zhang Tie smiled as he felt like seeing a partner whom he had lost contact with a long time ago. Zhang Tie had a similar one before, which was called Man's Certificate.

"This is a very special item among the batch of weapons which were transported here from Heizfar Kingdom. It contains star iron. As it didn't meet its owner, I just put it in the warehouse. If you don't come here, I will have to break it into pieces after a couple of hours. It would take me at least half an hour and 6 grinding wheels to break it apart." The old man sighed as he stroked the sword gently. "Each of them weighs 298 kg. Do you want a try?"

Heizfar Kingdom was a small country in the south of Waii Sub-continent. Like Hoorn Republic's gliders, this country was famous for its metallurgy and a special iron ore called star iron. As a result, the Heizfar Kingdom was almost the most powerful weapons manufacturing nation across Waii Sub-continent after Huaiyuan Palace. Huaiyuan Palace was famous for its rune equipment and crossbows while the Heizfar Kingdom had a super great power on producing conventional weapons.

Zhang Tie put his hands in the crate and tore off the package over their handles. After that, he took the pair of huge shiny swords easily. Each of the two huge swords was a bit lighter than the Man's Certificate. However, the total weight of the two huge swords was over 500 kg for sure. Their length was a bit shorter than that of the Man's Certificate. However, each of the two huge swords was longer than 1.8 m, which was of course much longer than that of common swords. Additionally, being evidently different from Man's Certificate, this pair of huge swords looked smoother and more harmonious. Although being not as

exaggerating and grim as Man's Certificate, they were more magnificent. They looked more like what swords should be as they were full of aesthetic feeling combining masculinity and power.

If Man's Certificate was the work of a weapon craftsman who suddenly had an aspiration, the pair of huge swords in front of him would feel like masterpieces that pursue perfection in each detail after being hammered thousands of times.

The moment he held the pair of huge swords Zhang Tie realized that they were more powerful than Man's Certificate for sure. They were even sharper and firmer than Man's Certificate. In order to support the Selnes frontline, the Heizfar Kingdom indeed had spent a lot of efforts.

Watching that Zhang Tie could take this pair of huge swords so easily, the old man revealed a smile. "Can you chop off 1,000 demonized puppets' heads with it?"

"1,000? Too few. Maybe 10,000." Zhang Tie told the old man.

The old man saw Zhang Tie off the gate of the arsenal. Before Zhang Tie left, he suddenly told Zhang Tie, "Young man, live well. Don't die in Mocco City. I feel you might chop off more demonized puppets' heads in the future!"

Zhang Tie nodded towards the old man before striding away with the two huge swords.

...

"Green. Promise me to go back alive and settle down in a safer place. You could give birth to more sons in the future. I always protect you since we were young. From now on you need to protect yourself. You should be strong-willed. Our family is relying on you." The elder brother, inside the turret, was telling the younger brother, who was dropping tears outside the turret as they were holding hands tightly. The steam centrifugal turret was going to be closed from inside when food and drinking water had been moved

into the turret. Half of the gate of the turret had been sealed with steel plates.

"If you see Louis, remember to say sorry to her on behalf of me."

The elder brother then drew back his hands as he waved his hands towards outside. The last gap of the gate was then sealed with steel plates. At the sight of this, the younger brother burst out tears.

Actually, on the way here, Zhang Tie found all the centrifugal wheel turrets had been sealed from inside. All the human fighters who defended in the turrets were showing their decisive will using their actions... they were average, yet great human fighters!

When he passed by these centrifugal wheel turrets, Zhang Tie held his huge swords more tightly while his killing intent gradually rose.

Chapter 644: The Bravest Man

Zhang Tie arrived at the north city gate of Mocco City in the silence before the arrival of the thunderstorm.

At this moment, hundreds of thousands of human fighters were gathering all over the north city gate. Each human fighter was holding weapons in armor and waiting to launch an attack. Looking in the distance, he found armored steel woods in the nearby streets and behind the large area of buildings which had been demolished. There were many banners of countries among the woods.

The north city gate which had been closed for 10 days was going to be opened from inside so that the troops inside the city could rush out. At this moment, after the city wall of Mocco City lost its advantage in height, it became meaningless for the city gate to be further closed.

Zhang Tie was very eye-catching with two huge swords in hands. Additionally, as he always fought demonized puppets on the north city gate these days, he could penetrate through the thick steel woods and walk to the height point of the city wall.

At this moment, rows of terrifying, tough men with long beards as lofty as mountains were standing arrogantly on the north city wall in full-body armors like steel puppets. Each of them was holding a huge ax which weighed more than 100 kg.

Zhang Tie felt familiar with those tough figures and their long beards. When he caught sight of the banner behind those tough guys, Zhang Tie remembered that they were Taklin Empire's Imperial Heavy-armored Infantry which he had met in the railway station when he came to Mocco City for the first time.

They were the best heavy-armored infantry across Blackson Humans Corridor.

These people stood on the city wall at the most dangerous moment.

A silver-haired imperial priest of Taklin Empire was walking through this powerful heavy-armored infantry while spraying a handful of sacred water on each of these fighters from a silver bowl. At the same time, he kept muttering something. When the priest passed by them, these fighters would kneel down on one knee and slightly kiss the own crucifix on their chest. At the same time, they would pray piously before standing up firmly.

At this moment, the population of demon hunters and paladins at the north city gate was even less than 1/10 of that in usual.

Zhang Tie was standing on a part of the city wall with some paladins and demon hunters.

The demonized puppets were still waiting for something quietly in the distance. Zhang Tie found that the huge matrix of demonized puppets was in a small adjustment.

The atmosphere on the north city gate of Mocco City within 10 miles was frozen, which made all these human fighters' hearts pound. Even the vultures hovering in the air might have felt it. In usual, dauntless, roguish vultures would always bite those rotten corpses on the ground whenever they wanted. However, at this moment, although numerous corpses were piling over the open land which covered about 5 square km between the north city wall and the demonized puppets corps, none of the vultures dared land there. Because the rising killing intent from there was deterrent to those scavengers.

Watching the millions of demonized puppets in the distance, Zhang Tie, standing on the city wall, became as tranquil as water. Few people could be as brave as him at this moment. Few people could have such an experience. At this moment, Zhang Tie was just thinking about his three babies. He wondered about their looks. If he could see them one day, he would tell them that their dad had

already stood on the city wall of Mocco City with huge swords in hands at the age of 20. He was the first one who faced the collision of millions of demonized puppets not for the purpose of resisting them but for conquering them. Perhaps humans might lose Mocco City in the end. So what? There is no stage in this world which would not collapse. However, each person, big or small could be an everlasting hero as long as they dared face the coming troubles.

A spirited aspiration was crashing Zhang Tie's chest...

Empires would become dust; rivers would change their colors. Only human fighters who dared brandish their swords towards dark forces would keep their strong will as forever as the land and the sky!

Everyone was waiting there...

Zhang Tie was waiting there...

Reinhardt was waiting there...

...

An old man with a resolute look was standing on the highest point of the highest gate tower of the north gate of Mocco City and watching the endless demonized puppets corps in the distance while faintly frowning his eyebrows.

"Leo, have you really made the decision?" Another old man asked solemnly while sitting on the opposite of that old man.

"It would be pitiful if no human knight fought here till death when the human defense line in Selnes Theater of Operations was broken by demons!" The old man replied frankly.

"There are other chances!" Another old man sighed faintly before adding, "You know that you will have other chances. If you could make further improvement in your battle force, you would be in a new realm!"

"No, Marcus, it took me too long time to promote to a knight. I

was above 180 years old when I became a knight. I'm average in talent. Through hard work and efforts, I've already obtained the favor of the God once and entered this sacred realm. There won't be the second time. You still have a chance, but not me!" The resolute old man watched the other old man, "Black Iron Knight is my terminal. Over these years, I've enjoyed all the honors brought by the rank of a human knight; I should also sacrifice myself for the honors of a human knight at this moment. It's fair!"

The other old man then became silent. It indicated that he had agreed with the resolute old man out of his respect to the latter, "Do you have any will?"

"No!" The resolute old man smiled as he pointed at those dense fighters on the city wall, including Zhang Tie, "Actually, it doesn't matter even if I die here. Look at those people down there. Perhaps, after witnessing the final battle between a human knight and a demon, some of them might be able to reach farther than us in the future!"

The other old man became silent as he stood up firmly, "There are two knights in the opposite, when the Iron Plough Corps breaks out, I will wrestle with one of them, you can deal with the other one!"

The old man called Leo nodded. After that, they departed.

...

The distant demonized puppets launched an attack only after a short while. In the shrill clarino, millions of demonized puppets uttered miserable roars towards the sky, which could be heard within dozens of square kilometers. Meanwhile, the dense demonized puppets' vanguards darted towards the city wall like a rolling tide.

The entire land started to shake. Standing on the city wall of Mocco City, everyone could see numerous blades and grim looks of demonized puppets.

The vanguard of demonized puppets corps soon arrived at about 4 miles away from Mocco City, from where the centrifugal wheel turrets in Mocco City started to take effect. Therefore, a lot of blackspots were tossing out of the turrets and disappeared in a blink of an eye like pebbles being thrown into the water pool. They could never slow down the speed of demonized puppets at all.

The demonized puppets accelerated their footsteps while the faces of demon hunters and paladins on Zhang Tie's side had turned pale.

"Put down your face mask..." The commissioned officers of the Taklin Imperial Heavy-armored Infantry sent the order. With a cracking sound, all the steel-like warriors put down their face masks from their helmets at the same time.

"Prepare your ax..."

With a sound of "whula...", rows of huge, shiny axes were put in front of the chests of that infantry precisely by the pairs of steel gloves which indicated that they were ready for the attack silently and steadily.

After a short while, the vanguard of demonized puppets had already been 3 miles away from the city wall...

When everybody else on the city wall was so intense that they even became breathless, with a cracking sound, Zhang Tie inserted the pair of terrifying sword into the ground on the city wall; closely after that, he jumped onto an arrow mound beside an embrasure and slowly pulled down the zipper on his pants under the gaze of numerous people; closely after that, a water arrow was shot towards the demonized puppets corps.

"After drinking too much in demon hunters bar, I've not gone to the toilet yet. Therefore, I will have a pee right here just in case I have no time to do that when I f*ck you b*stards. Why are you sc*mbags that anxious? Easy, easy, you will all share it..." Zhang Tie burst out into laughter on the city wall. After that, he

forcefully ejected the water arrow more than 10 m away.

After being teased by Zhang Tie's deed, the vanguard of demonized puppets corps seemed to be not that terrifying in other fighters' eyes.

All the demon hunters and paladins near him felt relaxed while they also burst out into laughter.

On the gate tower, the old man called Leo focused on Zhang Tie for the first time when he noticed that such a young man dared behave in this way facing millions of demonized puppets at this critical moment.

Of course, the vanguard of the demonized puppets corps would not stop just because of Zhang Tie's pee. They soon reached 1 mile away from the city wall. At the same time, a lot of bolts were shot out of the crossbow army behind the city wall and hit the vanguards of demonized puppets...

Some demonized puppets fell down. However, more demonized puppets rushed over here with bolts on their bodies, causing an earthquake near the city wall of Mocco City.

"Ready..." The commissioned officers of Taklin Imperial Heavy-armored Infantry roared hoarsely.

With a sound of "Whua...", the heavy-armored infantry raised half of the blade of their huge ax above head and prepared to launch an attack.

Zhang Tie shook his head and pulled up the zipper on his pants. After that, he pulled the two huge swords out of the ground. With the drunk feel caused by the Burning Blade, he raised his head and took a deep breath before jumping off the city wall ahead of others. Zhang Tie stretched out his hands like how a roc flapped its wings and launched an attack towards the millions of demonized puppets...

At the sight of this scene, all the human fighters on the city wall

felt blood boiling all over their bodies while the fighters of Taklin Imperial Heavy-armored Infantry roared at the same time...

With long growls, the demon hunters and paladins followed Zhang Tie one after another...

Chapter 645: A Fierce Battle

"Kill..."

When Zhang Tie jumped off the north city wall of Mocco City, the other southern city gates of Mocco City were opened at the same time. With a roar, Reinhardt rushed out, followed by the cavalries of Iron Plough Corps of Norman Empire.

At this moment, all the other vanguards beside Reinhardt had shown their Iron-blood Battle Qi totems. Almost half of the powerhouses who had formed Iron-blood Battle Qi across Iron Plough Corps had joined the vanguards.

The most ferocious collision happened near the city gates of Mocco City at once.

This was the cruelest contest between the strong will of humans fighters and the demonized puppets' undying bodies. Iron Plough Corps, the former trump card troop of Norman empire was not the trump card anymore; similarly, the former commoners had become monsters under the control of demonized puppet worms.

...

With a battle call "Kill...", Zhang Tie crossed the huge swords in front of his chest, causing more than 10 demonized puppets' heads fly off in a split second.

At this moment, Zhang Tie felt like a lonely canoe that sailed against the mountain torrent. He could be flushed off and crushed into pieces by the great inertia of the numerous demonized puppets rushing over here.

He had to paddle the canoe forcefully lest it was flushed away by the mountain torrent. When its speed of advance and power could offset that of the mountain torrent, it could stay wherever it was; when its speed of advance could surpass that of the mountain torrent, it could sail against the mountain torrent.

The double paddles of the canoe were Zhang Tie's huge swords. Besides greater power, he should also wave his swords faster than the speed of the advancement of demonized puppets so as to defend the latter's strike.

Zhang Tie waved his huge swords very fast, each of which weighed about 300 kg. He could wave each of his hands 16 times per second, namely 32 times in total. He kept sweeping over his swords around himself. Only in such a high speed could he smash the demonized puppets...

Looking down from a high place, one would find the demonized puppets corps were like a black piece of bloody cloth. Zhang Tie just sheared off the complete piece of cloth like a pair of sharp scissors, causing fresh blood spray in all directions.

There seemed to be an invisible meat grinder around Zhang Tie with a radius of 2 m. Any demonized puppets, once came in touch with the edge of this circle would be shattered by Zhang Tie's shadowy swords.

There were too many demonized puppets. When Zhang Tie was grinding demonized puppets, more demonized puppets passed by him and the other demon hunters and paladins behind him before arriving at the foot of the city wall. They rushed onto the city wall of Mocco City along the slope which was as long as hundreds of meters.

At this moment, the fighters of Taklin Empire's Imperial Heavy-armored Infantry launched an attack...

In a split second, the killing qi of the axes on the north city wall formed a tidy, shiny line while a large area of demonized puppets' bodies was split open from the middle of their bodies. They then rolled down from the city wall while their fresh blood tinted the hundreds of meters' long city wall red. At this moment, more demonized puppets rushed onto the city wall. The shiny, white line flashed on the north city wall of Mocco City at a fixed

frequency. Numerous javelins were stabbed in and out of the bodies of the demonized puppets through the gaps on the white, shiny line like the woods of javelins.

Demonized puppets fell down constantly; however, more and more demonized puppets rushed onto the city wall.

Zhang Tie didn't know how many demonized puppets had he killed. After only 10 minutes, he had been covered with the disgusting blood of demonized puppets.

Facing the powerful resistance of human corps on the north city wall of Mocco City, the demonized puppets became less aggressive.

Although having rushed into the corps of the demonized puppets dauntlessly and having just tided over the most difficult moment, Zhang Tie was aware what sort of figures were in this demonized puppets corps; he also knew the limit of his ability and strength. Therefore, he didn't continue to rush forward regardless of any risks. He attempted to not leave 500 m away from Mocco City. He then turned around and started to sweep back along the north city wall of Mocco City. Like chopping melons and vegetables, he chopped off the heads of a lot of demonized puppets on his side or just tore them into pieces.

In the early 10 minutes, the demonized puppets' fierce momentum seemed being curbed. However, as the pile of corpses of demonized puppets near the north city wall grew higher, Taklin Empire Imperial Heaven-armored Infantry's defense line was gradually rocked while the pleasant tidy, shiny, white line started to become disordered. Fighters of Heavy-armored infantry were hit down by demonized puppets one after another. Whenever a heavy-armored fighter fell down, the surrounding demonized puppets would swarm up and stab into the gaps of armors using sharp weapons until they killed him.

Because their helmets were movable and could be opened from outside, soon after the heavy-armored fighters fell down would a

lot of demonized puppets start to tear off their helmets; after that, the demonize puppets would smash their weapons onto the fighters' heads or directly widely open their bloody mouths and bite the faces of the fighters...

Those demonized puppets who were crazier would hold some heavy-armored fighters and directly roll down with them from the city wall.

More and more demonized puppets rushed onto the city wall and fought human fighters, causing a greater chaos and more casualties. Facing the ceaseless strike of the demonized puppets, all the sections on the north city wall of Mocco City gradually entered chaos while battle calls, roars, killings and fresh blood spread everywhere.

When it gradually turned dark, the battle calls of human fighters and the shrill utterances of the demonized puppets across Mocco City grew fiercer. Battle qi totems in different shapes and colors started to roll across Mocco City.

Zhang Tie's dark vision also activated at this moment.

When Zhang Tie was chopping demonized puppets, he suddenly felt a danger on his back. Therefore, he rapidly slid aside; meanwhile, he blocked his back using his huge swords.

With a huge loud sound "Bang...", Zhang Tie felt that his hands trembled. It was a response to a long-distance battle qi attack.

Zhang Tie turned around right away when he saw a human standing 10 m away among demonized puppets. With a grim look, the 4-star fighter punched him using his battle qi just now.

Demonized puppets were unable to use battle qi. Even human fighters above LV 9, after being converted into demonized puppets, would also lose their ability to use battle qi besides maintaining their original physical strength and some of their battle instincts. Each person's battle qi was spiritual, which would disappear with

his or her life. Therefore, fighters above LV 9 among demonized puppets would be either demons or members of Three-eye Association like those in Senel Clan.

Watching Zhang Tie turning around, that guy punched him once more as a ball of battle qi flew towards Zhang Tie rapidly. Zhang Tie jumped away instantly. After that, he tried to get rid of his opponent. After revealing a grim smile, the guy darted towards Zhang Tie with a look of determination to tear Zhang Tie into pieces.

When Zhang Tie stayed in Mocco City these days, he had not shown his ability to launch battle qi strike through the air. He was fully relying on his great strength. This could easily cause a false judgment to others—This guy is just a LV 9 fighter with some brutal force.

This effect was what Zhang Tie wanted.

When Zhang Tie was chopping demonized puppets to relieve the stress on the city wall, he was also angling.

When he was shaping his dauntless image, he was also setting a trap for some b*stards of Three-eye Association in the demonized puppets corps. After killing a LV 10 b*stard of Three-eye Association, he could at least obtain a powerful fruit of brilliance which contained the full spirits of that guy; he might obtain a fruit of judgment. How come Zhang Tie miss such a chance. Given the current situation, as the demonized puppets corps and the Three-eye Association were taking the initiative of the battle, Zhang Tie could only wait for the arrival of those powerhouses above LV 9 among Three-eye Association. After reaching this purpose, he had to meet two conditions: first, he had to make a small trouble for them; second, he had to make them think that a LV 10 or LV 11 powerhouse could defeat him.

If he showed his real strength as a 5-star battle master at the beginning, he might face more tricky figures like Scala. If a 5-star

battle master appeared in front of him, he could do nothing but escape right away. Therefore, being low-key when necessary was more powerful than being always arrogant. However, as was told by Donder, when one pretended to be arrogant while covering his real battle force, it would even be more mysterious. This was a wise tactic in battle.

Real force counted the most. However, sometimes, it was more important to show one's force properly in proper time and place than just having a great force.

Who could imagine that the one who jumped off the city wall of Mocco City and rushed towards the demonized puppets corps could be so insidious?

...

Only after 10 seconds, the guy who chased after Zhang Tie had exploded two headless corpses that Zhang Tie threw towards him by his huge swords in a ferocious and imposing way. After exploding the 2nd corpse, the moment that guy wanted to kill Zhang Tie with the 3rd punch, he suddenly found that Zhang Tie had disappeared right in front of him. Before he realized what happened, his body had been split into three pieces...

...

At the sight of this, the old man who had been watching Zhang Tie silently on the gate tower of the north city gate of Mocco City since Zhang Tie jumped off the city wall instantly revealed a brilliant look...

Chapter 646: Angling

Soon after killing a LV 10 b*stard had Zhang Tie flashed across the demonized puppets and left the "spot" in a split second.

In such a large-scale battle with millions of attendants, few people would pay attention to a guy who was even below LV 10. Compared to Zhang Tie, those demon hunters and paladins who could punch a demonized puppet into pieces within 10 m with rolling colorful battle qi totems were more attractive to powerhouses among the demonized puppets corps.

Zhang Tie knew that it was just the beginning and a signal for him to kill that LV 10 strong fighter. It indicated that more and more powerhouses of demons and Three-eye Association were going to join the battle. As a result, those who could dominate this battlefield would not be those inferior demonized puppets any longer.

'It's time to reap.' Zhang Tie told himself. 'Demons would find me angling here sooner or later. Before powerhouses above LV 13 appear in front of me, I have to kill as more b*stards above LV 10 as possible. This also indicates a growth of my battle force. What a rare chance!'

When the powerhouses of Three-eye Association joined the battle, many demon hunters and paladins also met powerful enemies at this moment. Since few people paid attention to Zhang Tie, Zhang Tie just kept chopping those demonized puppets while stealthily drooling and drawing close to those powerhouses who were fighting the other demon hunters and paladins.

Of course, Zhang Tie would not just rush towards those powerhouses of Three-eye Association. He chose to f*ck them when they paid attention to fight other demon hunters or paladins using his unrivaled precise throwing skill or precisely the bolts in his palm.

How did he release his bolts in his palm when he was holding a huge sword. The solution was very simple——high speed.

After dropping his huge sword, he could release the bolts in his hand before catching his sword once again, even if it only took him 0.1 s or less time. Likewise, Zhang Tie could release bolts with two hands along the directions of his strength while chopping the demonized puppets.

Zhang Tie could easily do it.

In the process of fighting real powerhouses, if one's hand left his weapon or lost its control of the weapon, it would be a fatal mistake. Even though it was only less than 0.1 s, it would also cause a severe outcome. However, the threat only existed when your enemy was almost as powerful as you instead of being demonized puppets who were much worse than your battle force.

When Zhang Tie chopped those demonized puppets on his side, he found those demonized puppets became his best cover. He was covered by the pair of huge swords in his hands, even the chaotic situation in the battlefield was dark. Nobody could imagine that Zhang Tie was still able to release bolts at this critical moment. However, Zhang Tie's bolts could immediately kill any powerhouse below LV 12 within 150 m.

When chopping demonized puppets, Zhang Tie was also watching and listening to the battlefield.

Zhang Tie noticed that a LV 11 b*stard of Three-eye Association was fighting a LV 11 paladin fiercely over 100 m away. He kept glancing at that battle situation stealthily. With his powerful spiritual energy, Zhang Tie found that all the demonized puppets on the battlefield were moving slowly. While chopping demonized puppets, Zhang Tie gradually adjusted the angle between him and that b*stard. Within less than 0.01 s, Zhang Tie caught the special "release window" through a gap between him and that b*stard. Therefore, he loosed the handle of one sword and released the first

bolt almost at the same time.

After leaving Zhang Tie's hand, like following the summon of the Grim reaper, the mini bolt passed by numerous silent raising arms of demonized puppets, weapons, necks with bulged veins and grim faces like a canoe in the river and struck the head of the LV 11 powerhouse of Three-eye Association who was moving as slowly as a nail, spurting out his bloody brains.

Closely after that, Zhang Tie heard a low boom. However, on a battlefield full of loud booms, that low boom was like a peddle being thrown into a stormy ocean. Few people would pay attention to it.

"Go die..." That LV 11 paladin punched the same LV 11 powerhouse into pieces. The whole process was too short that many people thought the powerhouse was killed by that paladin. Only the paladin knew that the powerhouse's head had been exploded 0.1 s before he touched the powerhouse's body.

'Who's that?' The paladin became amazed as he looked around. However, besides those dense demonized puppets within 40-50 m, he could see nobody else. Some human powerhouses were at least 70 m away from him. Additionally, they were all busy fighting. The guy who was having a pee on the city wall just now was over 100 m away and was sweeping horizontally with his two huge swords. 'Are there any human powerhouses hiding on the battlefield?'

Before that paladin figured it out, a lot of grim demonized puppets had already rushing towards him with bloody eyes, pushing him into the chaotic battle once again.

In the next over 10 minutes, Zhang Tie killed one LV 9, two LV 10 and one LV 11 powerhouses of Three-eye Association, relieving the stress of paladins and demon hunters greatly.

However, at this moment, the steel defense line composed of the Taklin Imperial Heavy-armored Infantry was finally broken

through by demonized puppets. As a result, more and more demonized puppets rushed onto the city wall. The north city wall of Mocco City was gradually occupied by demonized puppets.

With a "boom", the entire land rocked. Zhang Tie, who was fighting demonized puppets, looked into the distance and found a strong qi rose into the sky from the demonized puppets corps with the sense of Iron-blood Fist, causing a great chaos in the camp of demonized puppets. With a shrieking roar that rocked all the eardrums across the battlefield, Zhang Tie saw a familiar one surging towards the strong qi from the back of the demonized puppets corps.

Zhang Tie found that one was the very elder employed by Senel Clan, a real knight-level powerhouse that he had seen in Tokei City.

Closely after that, the two figures being wrapped by flames started to crash in the air over 100 m above the ground like two meteors. Each time they collide with each other would they cause a thunder-like sound and strong firelight like how two powerful and terrifying giants fought...

'Is this the battle between Knight-level powerhouses?' Zhang Tie was obsessed with that battle. It was completely out of his imagination.

However, before Zhang Tie recovered his composure had he seen another strong qi rising to the air from the north gate tower of Mocco City over hundreds of meters away. Closely after that, a figure being wrapped with surging blue flames flew off the north city gate tower towards the demonized puppets corps.

Wherever that person being wrapped with blue flames passed by, numerous demonized puppets would start to freeze before exploding.

Zhang Tie felt that person glance at him for a short while while flying over.

At this moment, another strong qi appeared in the demonized puppets corps and darted towards this one.

The two figures crashed over 1000 m away from Mocco City, clearing all the demonized puppets within 100 m in a split second.

Knights were fighting too fast to be identified even by Zhang Tie. He could only hear the loud booms.

At this moment, the 4 knights were fighting in a group of two. Compared to others, knights could cause destructive strikes from 100 m away.

As the knights joined the battle, the entire battle became white-hot. Demonized puppets and human fighters' roars spread across the battlefield.

At this moment, Zhang Tie felt dark all over. He then raised his head and found batches of wing demons were flying over the city wall, clearing a lot of human fighters in a blink of eyes. As a result, more demonized puppets rushed onto the city wall while uttering obscure sounds.

When the wing demons flew into Mocco City, they threw down the jars, causing big fires all over the city.

Chapter 647: Re-encounter

At this moment, most of the air-defense weapons on the north city wall had become ineffective. The two human knights had left the city while the human corps and demonized puppets corps were in a chaos. Right then, the wing demons launched their lethal attack.

Those wing demons were all LV 9 demon fighters. Compared to the most human fighters, these wing demons had evidently more strength in battle force.

The wing demons seemed to drop gel combustible bombs. The moment they fell to the ground or buildings had they started to burn. Many turrets near the north city wall of Mocco City had started to burn and became ineffective.

The big fires on the ground made the crossbow soldiers matrix chaotic in the city. Many crossbow soldiers were rolling and wailing on the ground with flames all over their bodies. The demons soon took the initiative on the battlefield. As a result, more and more demonized puppets climbed onto the city wall.

At this moment, Zhang Tie had intended to retreat.

Even knights and demons among the demonized puppets corps had shown themselves, Zhang Tie, as a LV 11 5-star battle master, could never determine the result of this battle which had millions of attendants. Even though he had tried his best for the benefit of Mocco City. If the demonized puppets completely occupied the north city wall, he would not be able to retreat anymore. It was not worthwhile for him to sacrifice himself here.

At this moment, powerful human knights were still fighting in front while the north city wall behind them had not been completely occupied. It was time to retreat.

Those demon hunters and paladins who jumped off the city wall

together with him had also figured out the battle situation as some of them had started to retreat.

Zhang Tie shattered the demonized puppets behind him with huge swords. The moment Zhang Tie was going to retreat had he seen a person darting towards him. At the same time, that person chopped his sword towards him as he yelled, "Are you thinking about escaping at this moment? Go die!"

The guy who rushed towards Zhang Tie was much more powerful than those Zhang Tie met just now. This guy was at least a LV 11 battle master. When he was still 10 m away, his aggressive sword qi had already arrived in front of Zhang Tie.

The sword qi was an attack triggered by saber or sword through the air. It was a variant of battle qi. One could not produce sword qi unless being a LV 10 strong fighter. Only when one could launch a battle qi attack through the air could he or she produce a sword qi. One needed to practice the correct cultivation method for a long time before producing sword qi. Although sword qi was evolved by battle qi, it was greatly different than battle qi. Compared to battle qi, sword qi was usually more condensed and sharper, which made it more powerful.

Therefore, the cultivation world above LV 10 was more colorful and would bring more possibilities to each cultivator.

Although Zhang Tie was already LV 11, he still had not practiced his sword qi. However, Zhang Tie was not afraid of the sword qi triggered by other LV 11 battle masters as he was cultivating Iron-blood Fist and Iron-blood Battle Qi which were more powerful.

Having not imagined that he could have another fish in hook before retreating, Zhang Tie was very happy. However, at this moment, Zhang Tie didn't have time to play hide-and-seek with that sc*mbag. He preferred to end the battle as soon as possible.

Zhang Tie then crossed that pair of huge swords in front of his chest and blocked that sword qi, causing a crispy loud boom.

However, Zhang Tie's hands didn't even quiver at all.

At this moment, if that guy was smart, he should have turned around and escaped as soon as possible; however, he was slow-witted. He didn't even think that he himself could not resist his strike; however, the guy in front of him could easily and steadily resist it using his swords without suffering any harm. How could a LV 9 fighter have such a great ability?

"Enjoy one more..." That guy triggered another sword qi towards Zhang Tie.

"Idiot..." Zhang Tie revealed a killing qi as he punched towards his opponent through the air.

When Zhang Tie triggered his punch, he didn't even put down his sword. With his sword in front of him horizontally, he triggered his punch towards his opponent.

With only a red flashlight, the fist-shaped battle qi had flown out. After breaking the sword qi triggered by that guy, it struck that guy's body and exploded him into a cloud of blood.

The power of the secret knowledge of the imperial household of Norman Empire could not fully play its role until LV 10. Iron-blood Fist, "King Roc Sutra", fruits and Zhang Tie's realization about Iron-blood Fist made Zhang Tie almost unrivaled at the same level. Meanwhile, the Iron-blood Fist looked supreme on Zhang Tie.

After exploding a fish into pieces, Zhang Tie instantly turned around and rushed towards Mocco City. When he passed by a paladin and a demon hunter, he killed a LV 10 and a LV 9 opponents just by his huge swords instead of using his battle qi or Iron-blood Fist. Meanwhile, he asked the paladin and the demon hunter to retreat together with him. At this critical moment, the two people didn't have time to figure out how Zhang Tie became so sharp at once. They just retreated towards the north city gate of Mocco City together with Zhang Tie while chopping demonized puppets.

When Zhang Tie boomed that LV 11 powerhouse of Three-eye Association, he exposed himself due to that flash red battle qi. Although his punch was transient, he was still noticed by someone in the evening. Seeing Zhang Tie retreating, that guy then accelerated towards him.

More than 100 m away from Mocco City, Zhang Tie had already sensed a great crisis and killing intent. He then turned around and saw a figure darting towards here from 100 m away while his feet almost left the ground.

'Scala?' Zhang Tie's heart raced as he had not imagined that he could re-encounter this guy here.

Likewise, Scala also noticed that the guy who used Iron-blood Fist just now was Zhang Tie when he was drawing closer to the latter. At the beginning, Scala just felt that the opponent looked a bit familiar. When he looked at the opponent carefully, Scala's heart pounded too, 'Zhang Tie? Is that him?'

Zhang's look didn't change except for the colors of his hair and face. Of course, Scala could recognize him easily.

Scala sped up once again.

Zhang Tie also knew that Scala had recognized him. Zhang Tie was clearly aware of the terrifying battle force of a LV 14 battle demon. Abyan in the shadow demon's cell had not been defeated by Zhang Tie until today. Facing such a powerful enemy, it was a joke for Zhang Tie to win the battle. What he could only do was to postpone the time for him to touch Scala.

"Hurry up!" Zhang Tie roared towards the paladin and the demon hunter who were retreating together with him as he tossed one huge sword towards the city wall.

With a humming sound, the terrifying, rotary huge sword chopped off a lot of demonized puppets on the way back to the city wall after flying more than 100 m as it inserted 2 m into the city

wall of Mocco City, causing a cracking sound; meanwhile, it kept quivering heavily.

The paladin and the demon hunter were startled by such a terrifying strength and throwing ability. However, they didn't waste any second; they instantly rushed towards the city wall. When they were close to that long sword, they instantly jumped onto the handle of the long sword and flew onto the city wall.

Zhang Tie tossed the other huge sword towards Scala. When the rotary sword cut all the way towards Scala, Scala didn't even dodge away from it. He just triggered a punch towards it and pushed it to the ground more than 10 m away. Closely after that, Scala continued to dart towards Zhang Tie at a full speed.

When Zhang Tie was still about 60 m away from the city wall, Scala had appeared in front of him.

Although enemies' eyes would turn bloody when they saw each other, Zhang Tie's eyes didn't turn red; instead, he recovered his composure instantly.

The moment Scala appeared, all the surrounding demonized puppets stayed away from Zhang Tie.

"Long time no see, Zhang Tie, I've not imagined that you're still in Selnes Theater of Operations!" Scala grinned like seeing an old friend; however, there was a weird luster in his eyes.

"As the battle in Selnes Theater of Operations has not come to an end yet; how could I leave out of here so easily?" Zhang Tie smiled.

"Were you involved in the accident in Tokei City a few days ago?" Scala asked abruptly while he glanced over Zhang Tie carefully from his head to his toe in a blink of an eye.

"Ah? What happened in Tokei City?" Zhang Tie became stunned as he sneered, "What? Have your family met any trouble? How did the alchemist's bombs of the allied human forces feel?"

When Zhang Tie asked Scala about that, his heart raced, 'Scala is

too cunning. I've not imagined that anyone could doubt me on what I did in Tokei City a few days ago. However, Scala had started to doubt me the moment he re-encountered me. What a terrifying person! If I were a bit innocent, I might have exposed many secrets because of this.'

Scala watched Zhang Tie with his narrowed eyes as he could not see any information from Zhang Tie's look. 'How could Zhang Tie have that sort of rarity. If he had, I must have already searched it out last time. I was told that the rarity always existed in the form of finger rings or bracelets. I might have thought too much.' Scala then revealed a smile, "Nothing, we've just lost something. But it's a compensation for that to re-encounter you here!"

"Really?" Zhang Tie smiled as he suddenly exclaimed, "Master!" towards the back of Scala with a surprising look.

Scala was shocked as he instantly flashed over dozens of meters away like a ghost. At the same time, Zhang Tie rushed towards Mocco City...

When Scala realized that he had been cheated, Zhang Tie had already been more than 20 m away. Having not imagined that he was cheated by Zhang Tie once again even in such an overwhelming situation, the face of Scala, who was always conceited, turned pale; with a growl, he chased after Zhang Tie...

Chapter 648: A Narrow Escape

After throwing two swords, Zhang Tie aided himself with a rapidly moving skill. At his maximal speed, it seemed that he would arrive at the city wall of Mocco City in a blink of an eye. However, having fought Abyan, a LV 14 battle demon numerous times, Zhang Tie understood that the result of a battle was always determined in a blink of an eye. He should not have any fluke mind.

Therefore, although it was just a distance of dozens of meters, Zhang Tie still treated it as risky as a natural chasm as he exerted his full strength.

After rushing 30 m ahead, Zhang Tie had felt the fine hair blowing on his back. Closely after that, Zhang Tie accomplished the movement that could barely be done by most of the powerhouses at his level——He just turned back and retreated at the same speed while facing the strike of his enemy.

It was a powerful battle qi flying towards him from a LV 14 battle demon. Scala looked a bit grim as he sped up towards Zhang Tie. At the sight of Scala's face, Zhang Tie had realized that Scala would never allow him to leave alive at this moment.

Right then, Zhang Tie roared as he punched towards that battle qi with his Iron-blood Fist.

Although spurting a mouth of blood, Zhang Tie didn't fall down; instead, he retreated faster than ever.

Some demonized puppets wanted to block Zhang Tie while waving their arms. Zhang Tie just ignored them as he crashed them into pieces with his shoulders and back.

At this stage, Zhang Tie had been able to launch his Iron-blood Battle Qi through many parts of his body. That was to say, the effect of his body parts onto those demonized puppets was same to

that of his punches. Of course, the average demonized puppets could never resist him.

Scala had never imagined that his furious blow would be blocked away by Zhang Tie's punch; instead of exploding Zhang Tie into pieces. Scala was so shocked like how a mad ox stomped onto an insect and found that the insect under its hoofs was still as energetic as before.

In a split second, Scala had realized that Zhang Tie was not the same one being captured by Senel Clan several months ago. He was already many times different. Scala didn't know what happened to Zhang Tie during the past months; however, Zhang Tie's progress drove Scala's killing intent boiling inside. 'What a terrifying person! If I keep him alive a few years longer...'

——I will never let him escape alive.

A whim flashed across Scala's mind.

Watching Zhang Tie being close to the city wall, Scala sped up abruptly with a grim look. When he was going to launch another attack, the demon hunters and paladins who were watching Zhang Tie on the city wall launched their attacks towards Scala at the same time at their full strength.

In a split second, a bolt triggered by a heavy crossbow, a flying ax, a javelin and a sharp steel needle were shot towards Scala.

Only by raising his arm, Scala had already swept all of them away. In 1/3 of a wink, Zhang Tie had already been 5 m away from the city wall.

It seemed that Zhang Tie was going to jump up...

With a roar, "Wolf Punch...", Scala pushed out a purple "wolf-shaped" battle qi towards Zhang Tie with his hands as fast as a lightning bolt after flying above 10 m, covering the upper space of Zhang Tie.

However, Zhang Tie didn't jump up as it was just a fake

movement. The moment Zhang Tie's feet left the ground had Zhang Tie squatted abruptly. Closely after that, he rolled back on the ground.

Scala's punch struck the city wall close to Zhang Tie's scalp. After a loud boom, Zhang Tie felt an earthquake while the shattered stones fell onto his body like the rain.

As a result, there was a 5-m high pit on the city wall. The layer of bricks and concrete structure which was about 1 m in thickness covering the city wall was completely destroyed, exposing the twisted steel bars and the defensive steel plate inside the steel bars along with the surrounding steel transportation tunnels, spurting too much steam vapor at once...

After seeing the effect of this strike, Zhang Tie indeed realized the great power of the battle skill of a LV 14 battle demon. If he had jumped up just now, he must have been exploded into pieces.

In the covering dust, Zhang Tie rolled to the foot of the city wall. At the sight of those exposed, broken steel bars, Zhang Tie felt chilly inside. In the misty steam vapor, Zhang Tie shoved against the ground and jumped up like a huge eagle.

Until Zhang reappeared in the covering dust and misty steam vapor had Scala realized that he didn't kill Zhang Tie just now. Therefore, he changed his look and rushed towards Zhang Tie once again. However, he had not imagined that Zhang Tie triggered consecutive battle qi punches towards him like shooting red shells, forcing him a few steps back. Therefore, Scala had to block Zhang Tie's battle qi strikes.

When he wanted to launch another strike towards Zhang Tie, a growl drifted from the top of the city wall when a tall human leader in battle armor had charged towards him like a lofty mountain. Before the person arrived, a ball of powerful battle qi which could almost match his battle qi had been triggered towards Scala.

Scala racked his mind about 0.001 seconds before choosing to retreat while watching Zhang Tie jumped onto the city wall.

After arriving at the top of the city wall, Zhang Tie swept some more demonized puppets off the city wall by waving his arm. Closely after that, he turned around and revealed a sneer towards Scala. At the same time, he thumbed down towards him and made a hand gesture to cut through his throat before disappearing from the top of the city wall...

Scala looked pretty bad while a rich sense of frustration and shadow covered his mind.

...

"You b*stards from Three-eye Association, how could a battle demon bully a battle master? Come here to have a duel with me if you're a real man!" The human leader jumped off the city wall as he swore with bloody eyes. At the same time, he raised his huge ax and darted towards Scala...

...

"Whua..."

Zhang Tie spurted a mouth of fresh blood towards the ground. After that, he felt much better. He then wiped off the blood from his mouth corners and kept running forward.

About 2 miles away from the north city gate and that chaotic region, Zhang Tie flashed across the dim alleys and streets in Mocco City. All the houses in front of his eyes were empty. In usual, some fighters might live here; however, all the fighters had already gathered at this moment. They were preparing for the coming battle or breakout, leaving these old residential areas empty at once.

Wing demons were still hovering in the air. Many places had been burned down. Zhang Tie didn't know whether those wing demons could notice him. He tried to be careful. Therefore, he

dodged from main roads and preferred hidden routes.

There was a semi-old 3-storey house in front of him with a brand of a hotel on its facade. The gate of the hotel was widely opened. After confirming that nobody noticed him, Zhang Tie just slid into that hotel.

The hotel was in a mess while broken glasses, dirty magazines and papers were covering the ground. Two rats were running across an empty gradevin. They were not afraid of Zhang Tie at all.

Zhang Tie realized that this hotel had been closed for a long time. Closely after that, he went upstairs slightly.

There were some guest rooms on the 2nd storey and the 3rd storey. Behind that hotel were an empty kitchen and a courtyard. Zhang Tie then came to the 3rd floor.

Most of the rooms on the 3rd storey were opened while all sorts of items were covering the floor, including broken vials, jars and kids' old toys. Zhang Tie came to a messy room and checked inside; after finding no issues, he closed the door from inside while facing inside in a customary way. He then leaned against a wall and panted heavily.

The darkness inside the room brought him a sense of safety and tranquility. Zhang Tie fumbled out 2 vials of all-purpose medicament and bottomed up them all at once. After 1 minute, with a warm feeling in his chest, Zhang Tie felt a bit comfortable. If not that he had been extremely strong, he might not have resisted Scala's strike at all.

Zhang Tie had a great achievement tonight at the risk of his life. He chopped many demonized puppets; however, more and more demonized puppets rushed onto the top of the city wall. He had tried his best; however, the destiny of Mocco City remained unchanged...

After taking some rest in the dark, Zhang Tie felt that he had

recovered a bit. After glancing at the sparkling skyline, he ran his spiritual energy and returned to Castle of Black Iron.

It was also evening inside Castle of Black Iron. However, compared to Mocco City at this moment, the tranquil space inside Castle of Black Iron was more like a sweet dreamland.

In the dark, Heller looked pretty solemn...

Chapter 649: Watching the Battle as a Beetle

"Castle Lord, you were too risky tonight. You almost couldn't come back alive. You knew that Senel Clan members were on this battlefield and might encounter them at any time; if you met such a dangerous situation again, later on, I'd suggest you to retreat from the battlefield as soon as possible and try not to get mired in that dangerous situation!" Heller suggested solemnly.

Zhang Tie scratched his head bashfully, "Hmm, you're right. I almost died this time. There were many uncertain factors on the battlefield. Thankfully, I've got some achievements!"

"As long as you're alive, you will always have some chances to make achievements. Only when you could retreat from dangerous situations would you have a bright future!"

Heller's advice was very valuable. Therefore, Zhang Tie accepted it modestly. Heller then looked better, "Castle Lord, it will take you at least 2 days to fully recover your injuries. I suggest you to not leave Castle of Black Iron before full recovery!"

"Fine, I will not leave Castle of Black Iron. I will keep my body inside to recover. But can I take a look outside in my incarnation? As the battle has not come to an end, I want to take a look outside there..." Zhang Tie revealed a smile.

Heller then forced a bitter smile.

Zhang Tie then ran towards the small tree and sat down there.

As it was not the right moment to eat fruits, Zhang Tie just glanced at the new fruit of brilliance and the fruit of judgment before sitting down satisfactorily. Closely after that, he ran his spiritual energy and summoned that exotic LV 2 beetle.

Only after a few seconds, that beetle had already appeared as it was flying around the small tree jubilantly. At the sight of that

beetle, Zhang Tie smiled as he closed his eyes. In the next second, he incarnated into that beetle who was still flying around the small tree. Thus, he left Castle of Black Iron...

The moment Zhang Tie reappeared in the room of the hotel had he flown out of the room through a broken window.

The fiercest battle was still near the north city gate. Therefore, Zhang Tie flew towards there...

Zhang Tie kept flying a bit faster than sparrow 10 m above the ground. However, compared to the size of a sparrow, the small beetle was more agile as its fingernail-sized black body could almost not be noticed by people in the evening.

The entire Mocco City was covered with earsplitting battle calls and flames. In the north of Mocco City, two extremely remarkable, powerful battle qis were rushing into the air, one blue, one cyan.

This was Zhang Tie's 2nd time to witness an abnormal phenomenon when the two knights were fighting each other. When Huaiyuan Palace raided Heavens Cold City, Zhang Tie saw knights' battle qis for the first time. Last time, when Zhang Tie was outside the city, he saw two volumes of shiny battle qi which were similar to wolf dung smoke rising into the air inside the Heavens Cold City. This indicated that the knights had made real fire. Compared to that in the daytime, when in the evening, knights' battle qi would have more amazing effects.

As Zhang Tie had not reached that level, Zhang Tie didn't know whether the battle qi effects behind the knights were battle qi totems. Zhang Tie was even not sure whether that strength was a battle qi or not. Compared to the battle qi totems below knights, Zhang Tie saw obscure images in the two light volumes, which were more like the knights themselves instead of being magical beasts. Zhang Tie wondered everything about knights. What attracted him most outside Castle of Black Iron was the battle between the two knights outside the city.

It was a very rare opportunity to witness a battle between two knights. This was the only time that Zhang Tie had encountered since he was born. Anyone who had a dream on the path of cultivation would never miss such an opportunity.

When Zhang Tie reached the north city gate, he found the north city wall had been occupied by demonized puppets while more and more demonized puppets were swarming up onto the city wall and starting a fiercer battle with human corps. Human fighters fought demonized puppets one step after another backward along the stairs and one bartizan after another. Fresh blood sprayed in each second.

The north city gate had been opened while a human troop had already rushed out of it. They formed 3 powerful pikemen matrices in the shape of the Chinese character "品".

All the human fighters of the 3 pikemen matrices were wearing metal armors. Each fighter was holding a 3-m long pike, making each pikemen matrix a steel hedgehog. Any demonized puppet who rushed in front of any one of the 3 pikemen matrix would face a cluster of pikes instead of only 10 pikes. In the blink of an eye, the demonized puppet would be torn apart by numerous pikes.

Zhang Tie was shocked as it was his first time to witness the great power of human pikemen matrix.

Among the 3 pikemen matrices, there was a matrix of crossbow soldiers. The 4 square matrices could play a powerful effect when in coordinated work. As a result, those demonized puppets near the north city gate suffered a great loss. Gradually, the corpses of demonized puppets were as thick as 3 m in front of the pikemen matrices...

If they only needed to deal with the common infantry of demonized puppets, the human pikemen matrices had an overwhelming advantage. However, there was no "if" on the battlefield, especially for the common arm of services below LV 6,

the mutual-restraint relationship between the different arm of services was evident. When human pikemen matrices cracked down the fierce demonized puppets, the large batches of demonized puppets shot down their short javelins towards the pikemen matrices from dozens of meters away.

As a result, the human fighters were penetrated through one after another.

However, in the air, from a height which could not be reached by bolts from the ground, other wing demons were throwing down burning jars towards the pikemen matrices. As result, more and more human fighters were swallowed by the blazing fire, causing a chaos in the matrices. However, even being baptized by blazing fire and short javelins, the human fighters were still moving forward, turning left and turning right in a fixed frequency at their commissioned officer's order so as to constantly clean all the enemies in front of them.

Even if the commissioned officers fell down, someone else would soon take over the command and continue the battle...

The luster of battle qi totems rose up or diminished constantly, which indicated the terror of the holy war...

After sighing inside, Zhang Tie flew over the city wall and the battlefield towards the two light volumes in the distance.

Ants only needed to solve their battle in their hole; birds could end their battle on the twigs; tigers solved their battle in the woods while knights fought regardless of the battlefield...

Zhang Tie could only see 2 knights at this moment. The other 2 knights had already disappeared. Even the rest 2 knights had been more than 10 miles away from the general battlefield.

The beetle soon got closer to the battlefield of the two knights. On the way there, Zhang Tie was stunned by a lot of odd-look, miserable corpses of demonized puppets.

After arriving at their battlefield, Zhang Tie just landed on a broken steam tank more than 700 m away.

Although the muzzle of the ballista was not thick for a person, it was like a lying, towering tree which was as thick as dozens of times of his arm length. Although the body of the ballista was shiny in the eyes of a person, it was full of fine grains and pits like huge anti-slippery mattresses in the eyes of the beetle. Therefore, the four feet of the beetle which were covered with fine burrs could stand on it steadily. He could even hang upside down on it as steady as Mount Tai.

After putting away his wings, Zhang Tie widened his eyes and started to appreciate the battle between the two knights.

Knights moved so fast that Zhang Tie could not clearly see their movements. He could only feel the battle effect. The center of their battle was like a terrifying thunderstorm being wrestled with blue and cyan luster. With sharp booms, powerful killing qi and afterwinds of their battle qi escaped from that thunderstorm. Even though it was 700 m away, Zhang Tie could still feel the wind as chilly as icy bolts or powerful qi as sharp as javelins flying across the wrecked tank.

Zhang Tie really broadened his vision by such a battle, 'What a valuable trip! If not see how real powerhouses fight, I will always be short-sighted.'

Two currents of powerful qi even struck the tank, causing loud booms. Like being struck by real sabers, swords or long javelins, Zhang Tie was shocked. However, as he was too small, it was hard for the escaping powerful qi to strike him. Therefore, he was safe.

Only after less than 10 minutes, the two knights had flown towards the mountains in the west while colliding with each other ferociously.

In less than one second, Zhang Tie had hurriedly flapped his wings and chased after them.

Zhang Tie almost used his full effort while his speed was at least 2-3 times faster than that of a sparrow. However, he was still farther and farther away from the two figures in front of him. Even if they were flying across the mountains and fighting each other, they still didn't slow down.

Zhang Tie kept chasing them for 2 hours. After flying across many mountains, he finally could not see the two figures. Zhang Tie flew across the dense ridges for quite a while; however, he could not find his target anymore. When he was considering to return to Mocco City or incarnate into the thunder hawk to look for a long while, he saw a blue luster rushing in the air from the valley over 10 miles ahead. Closely after that, he heard a thunder. Then, it recovered its tranquility once again like nothing had happened.

Being ecstatic inside, he hurriedly flew over there. When he arrived at that valley and saw what happened, Zhang Tie was amazed...

Chapter 650: A Resolute Attack

When Zhang Tie arrived at the valley, he saw a huge pit as deep as 10 m at the bottom of the valley, where the two knights' brilliant battle qi totems were gradually fading away.

What a fierce battle situation! When they tightly clutched the opponent's hand with one hand, the long sword of the human knight was penetrated through the chest of the knight of Three-eye Association. When the knight of Three-eye Association was covered with blue ice dregs, he inserted his right hand into the human knight's lower abdomen, causing a huge bloody hole on the back of the latter...

Standing at the bottom of the deep pit, they constantly shed fresh blood, causing a blood pond at their feet...

At the sight of this scene, Zhang Tie realized how powerful were the two knights. As a result, Zhang Tie quivered once all over as he almost wanted to turn around and escape.

'Should I leave?' Zhang Tie struggled for 2 seconds before gritting his teeth and landing on a small tree beside the huge pit. The beetle then stretched out its little head through a leaf and watched the battle situation in the huge pit.

In such a remote valley, the two knights seemed to have not noticed such a trivial insect landing on the tree beside them. Even if they did notice it, they would not care.

"Wh...why?" The knight of Three-eye Association asked in a furious, regretful and hoarse voice as he glared at that human knight opposite him.

Zhang Tie remembered that this guy was standing with that knight who was employed by Senel Clan last night when he flew over the camp of demonized puppets.

"You...won't understand it!" Leo replied as he spurted out a

mouthful of black fresh blood, "Even though you're a knight, you're just...a lackey of demons, it's...worthwhile...for me...to die in Mocco City together with you..."

"Lunatic...lunatic..." The knight of Three-eye Association swore loudly as he also kept spurting out blood. After falling to the ground, his fresh blood turned into dark blue ice dregs...

"This is...the commitment...of a real knight!" Leo revealed a tranquil smile...

"Do you think...you could die together with me only in this way? Heh...heh..." The knight of Three-eye Association revealed an insidious smile, "You're too naive, without enough benefits...do you think I will...help Three-eye Association?"

Leo suddenly narrowed his eyes as something occurred to him; however, he didn't say it; instead, he just used up his remaining battle force, "Go die..."

The long sword inside the chest of the knight of Three-eye Association suddenly became more brilliant as it cut downwards his belly, seeming to cut that knight into halves. As a result, a terrifying wound about 10 cm long appeared on that knight's body...

After suffering another severe injury, the knight of Three-eye Association suddenly opened his mouth while a cyan flame flew out of his mouth and fell onto Leo's body. As a result, Leo's body froze before burning into ashes only in a few seconds in front of Zhang Tie's eyes although the flames didn't look hot.

The battle instantly came to an end in the huge pit. If not that long sword which still stayed inside that knight of Three-eye Association and the terrifying huge pit at present, almost nobody could imagine that there was another [human] knight here just now...

It was Zhang Tie's first time to witness the death of a powerful

human knight.

Even till now, Zhang Tie still didn't know the name of the dead human knight.

Zhang Tie's blood boiled...

The knight of Three-eye Association knelt down at once as he started to spit blood. After a while, he struggled to pick himself up and attempted to draw that long sword blade out of his body. However, the moment he moved had he uttered a muffled harrumph while sweat dropped off his forehead heavily. Finally, he abandoned that thought as he just kept the sword blade inside his body.

Although only with an attempt, he had almost exhausted his full physical strength. He swayed his body for a few seconds before throwing himself onto the ground with his legs crossed. After that, he took out a vial of medicament and drunk it. He then closed his eyes and entered meditation.

At this moment, a crazy thought occurred to Zhang Tie. However, when Zhang Tie recalled the cyan flame flying out of the mouth of that knight of Three-eye Association and his terrifying battle force, Zhang Tie hesitated at once.

All the actions were too risky. He would be safe and sound if he just left out of here at this moment; however...

The reply "This is...the commitment...of a real knight!" filled Zhang Tie's mind...

Only after thinking for less than 5 seconds, Zhang Tie had gritted his teeth and flew off the leaf...

...

Right then, the knight of Three-eye Association seemed to feel that something was wrong as he turned around. When he found that it was just an insect, he ignored it and continued his meditation.

When that guy turned around, Zhang Tie was so scared that he almost wanted to turn around and flew away. He had not imagined that such a person could still have such a great perceptive ability even now. What a knight!

Nevertheless, Zhang Tie was controlled by his adventurous gene once again.

...

At the final moment, the knight felt something behind him. He looked back once again...

This time, he didn't see an insect anymore; instead, he saw Zhang Tie's decisive look which was full of killing intent. As a result, that person widened his eyes immediately.

"Go die!" Zhang Tie exclaimed the same words which the human knight roared just now like he was going to finish the will of the human knight. Meanwhile, he struck onto the knight's ears and temples with his punches which were full of his physical strength and his fierce Iron-blood Battle Qi.

As a result, each hole on the head of the knight of Three-eye Association spurted out blood while his head was distorted...

Being afraid of his cyan flame, after striking his head, Zhang Tie teleported a dagger from Castle of Black Iron and stabbed him dozens of times on his back in a blink of an eye...

When Zhang Tie stopped, he found the knight was already dead with his eyes widely opened. Zhang Tie didn't know whether that guy was smashed to death by his punch or by his dagger.

Only after such a short while, Zhang Tie found that he had already been oozing sweat all over. Meanwhile, he panted as his chest was rising and falling.

'F*ck, it's really intense to kill a knight.' Zhang Tie mumbled.

Soon after killing that guy had Zhang Tie teleported the corpse

along with the long sword on the corpse into Castle of Black Iron. After that, he glanced over the bottom of the pit with a complex look and confirmed that nothing was left except for the ash. Then, Zhang Tie entered Castle of Black Iron. A few seconds later, that black beetle reappeared. It changed the direction and flew away.

Only after less than 20 seconds, before Zhang Tie left the valley had another figure arrived.

At the sight of that figure, Zhang Tie was too scared that he started oozing sweat all over even in Castle of Black Iron.

That person was Koz...

Koz darted here as fast as a lightning bolt with gleaming eyes and started to check the huge pit carefully. As the bottom of the huge pit was full of gravels, Zhang Tie was not worried about leaving any footsteps on it.

After finding no clue, Koz finally paid attention to that small pile of black ash and blood stains. He squatted and rubbed the black ash and blood stains with his fingers. Closely after that, he revealed a dubious look. After standing in the pit for a few seconds, he jumped out of it. After a couple of seconds, he passed by Zhang Tie as fast as the wind.

At that moment, Zhang Tie was only less than 10 m away from Koz. However, Koz didn't pay attention to such a small insect behind the trunk of a tree, the color of whom turned as same as that of the trunk.

'If I waited another 20 seconds before attacking the knight or stayed 20 seconds longer in the pit after killing him, the result would be completely different.'

Zhang Tie felt fortunate inside.

After flying off the trunk, Zhang Tie was not in a hurry to return to Mocco City; instead, he kept flying dozens of miles away towards the west before landing in a palm-sized crevice on a low

cliff. After that, the beetle returned to Castle of Black Iron.

In Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie opened his eyes when he found Heller watching him with a weird look. It was like how a math doctor watched a passer-by clearing the lottery pool which contained the total prize of 5-6 billions of gold coins by purchasing 50-60 lotteries with the same number. If not the passer-by had colluded with the lottery seller, it could only owe to the luck.

Zhang Tie had no time to consider the meaning of Heller's weird look; instead, he directly ran towards that knight of Three-eye Association pleasantly.

After turning over the corpse by his foot, Zhang Tie instantly drew that long sword out of the corpse. Of course, the knight's weapon was unusual. The moment he held the long sword had Zhang Tie realized that it was a rarity...

Chapter 651: Reap the Booties

After injecting some spiritual energy into that long sword, Zhang Tie had seen the attributes of the long sword——

Autumn Frost Golden Sword——

Surplus rune effect: LV 3 sharpness; LV 3 consolidation.

Rune effect on strike: increases LV 2 freezing damage effect and the sword qi striking distance by 3 percent.

Special effect: rapid recovery——by holding the sword's handle, one could increase his strength recovery speed by 10 percent.

Alchemist's gem inlaid: LV 1 brave gem.

State: perfect combination.

Effect of alchemist's gem: LV 1 brave gem could increase one's courage by two times and help its owner to prevent from being afflicted by doubts, restlessness, fear and spirit-shocking secret skills.

In the autumn of the 851st year of Black Iron Calendar, it was produced by Gongye Qianqiu in Swords Cleansing Pool, Taixia Country, Eastern Continent.

...

'How lofty it is!' Zhang Tie kept his mouth widely open when he read the message one line after another. 'What a knight's equipment! It's really unrivaled. It contains 5 rune effects, one of which is the same as that carried by my ring of vitality that I obtained for the first time, namely accelerating one's "recovery" ability. However, compared to that ring of vitality which could only increase recovery speed by 4 percent, this sword's surplus recovery effect is much greater.' Zhang Tie sighed with emotions.

The same kind of rune effect could not be accumulated on one's body. If one rune equipment's rune effect increased by two times,

the price of the rune equipment would at least increase by 5 times; the price of a few rune equipments might increase by more than 10 times. Therefore, given only the rapid recovery effect, the sword would be worth at least 100,000 to 200,000 gold coins, not to mention the other rune effects on this sword.

As to the LV 1 Brave Gem, the alchemist's gem being inlaid on the sword, it must be more expensive; the alleged Brave Gem was a tiger's eye. It was inlaid on the top of the sword's handle. It looked like a golden tiger's eye. Common tiger's eye was just a semi-gem, which was not expensive; however, after being processed by alchemists, it would also have a terrifying, great value.

Although the effects of Brave Gem were not displayed on the sword, the moment Zhang Tie held it had he felt being full of strength, braveness and very clear-minded.

'Great!' That thought filled Zhang Tie's mind. Zhang Tie was not familiar with the craftsmanship of the rune equipment and was confused about many rune effects on the sword. For instance, he didn't know the effect of "LV 2 freezing damage effect" and the special "perfect combination". However, undoubtedly, this sword was extremely valuable.

Zhang Tie casually waved the long sword in the air, causing a chilly light and a desolate killing intent.

Even the knights in Blackson Humans Corridor were using weapons which were produced in Taixia Country. Thus, Zhang Tie understood the influence of Taixia Country.

Of course, Zhang Tie put away this long sword.

Zhang Tie threw the long sword to Heller who was right on his side.

"You can tell Edward to make a proper sheath for this sword. Edward could slightly change its look while keeping its rune effects and power lest of being recognized by others." Heller suggested.

"Does Edward have such a talent?" Zhang Tie asked with a surprised look.

"Castle Lord, have you forgotten about his talent? As long as you give him the opportunity, he will surprise you for sure!" Heller answered.

'Surprise. Sure, I'm very surprised now.' Zhang Tie mumbled inside.

"Hmm, we will talk about it later!"

Zhang Tie was full of respect towards that human knight who fought to the death. As this was the human knight's weapon, Zhang Tie was not anxious about changing the look of the Autumn Frost Golden Sword. It would arouse others' doubts for sure if he took this sword out of Castle of Black Iron at this moment. There would be no problem if he took it out when he arrived at the Eastern Continent or after a couple of years. Additionally, based on his current battle force, it would be too eye-catching if he used such a valuable sword which was worth at least 1 million gold coins. Such a priceless treasure was favored by too many people. If someone killed him just for the sake of the sword, it would be a tragedy.

'I'd better be low-key.' Zhang Tie thought.

"As you wish!" Heller seemed having understood Zhang Tie's thought.

After achieving a super weapon, Zhang Tie became vigorous as he rubbed his hands, crouching down and started to search over the corpse of the knight of Three-eye Association.

Zhang Tie took off the corpse's finger ring for the first time.

It was a bronze finger ring with rose grains on it. As it was a bit wider than common finger rings, the finger ring could cover a greater half of a dactyl.

The moment Zhang Tie took the finger ring had he injected some

spiritual energy into it.

Rose Finger Ring——this finger ring could increase the recovery speed of the wearer's physical strength by 10% and improve the wearer's effect of meditation by 15%. Additionally, it could accelerate the blood circulation of your fingers and gradually improve the wearer's physical strength.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that it could have a rune effect of rapid recovery, 'It seems that the rune effect of rapid recovery is very popular and practical. Whereas, the rapid recovery effect of this ring was a bit better than that of the Autumn Frost Golden Sword as it could reach 11%.

By contrast, the other two rune attributes were rarer. 'At least I've not seen them before; especially the blood circulation acceleration effect, which is really great. Although very little blood could flow through that finger per second, with this blood circulation acceleration effect, it could accelerate my blood circulation per second. Gradually, it could improve my physical strength.'

'What a treasure!' Zhang Tie exclaimed inside.

He then threw the rose finger ring to Heller, "How long would it take Edward to change its look?"

"One day at most!" Heller smiled as he replied.

Zhang Tie revealed a smile as he continued to search over the corpse.

Zhang Tie remembered that that guy carried a medicament container. He then found it in his waist. Zhang Tie opened it and saw some vials of pills and medicament. Besides different colors, he saw special symbols which looked like trademarks on those vials. There was no introduction about their names or functions. Therefore, Zhang Tie started to scratch his head as he glanced at Heller with a desiring look. Heller almost knew and could control

everything that appeared in Castle of Black Iron.

Heller walked over and took the medicament container from Zhang Tie's hand and introduced those items to Zhang Tie one after another.

"This is a super recovery medicament; it's a bit more effective than senior recovery medicament. The very medicament that he drunk just now which had not fully taken effect in his body!" Heller explained after taking out the two black vials of medicament.

Zhang Tie revealed a big smile.

"This is a long lasting night viewing medicament. With one vial, you will have dark vision capability within 2 years!"

Heller then took out another one.

"This is a secret knowledge medicament; it could make it more possible to succeed in cultivating some battle skills and secret methods above knight!"

...

"This is a concealing medicament. After taking it, your heat source and infrared signature would disappear completely. Within a short period, your skin would look like being stonified!"

"Ah? What's the function of this medicament?"

"In a special state, some magical beasts which seek for their targets based on the heat source and infrared signature cannot find you easily after you take this medicament. Of course, some secret method can also realize such an effect; however, before you grasp that secret method, it's nice to choose this medicament!"

"Is there any magical beasts which seek for targets based on the heat source and infrared signature?"

"There are so many such magical beasts in the deep underground world, some of them are very powerful!"

"Being so powerful that even knights have to disguise themselves in front of them?" Zhang Tie goggled at Heller.

"Right, you will understand it when you think about the levels of the living beings that could be controlled by the Great Wilderness Sutra. You cannot imagine how powerful some living beings are in the universe!"

Zhang Tie nodded.

Heller continued introducing about the other vials which contained special pills. Besides one of the pills which could rapidly supplement one's spiritual energy, Zhang Tie had not even heard about all the others which were not useful at this moment. There was even a rank poison called bone erosion in a red vial. According to Heller, a bit of that rank poison could kill over 100,000 people. Even knights could not survive it. It had no antidote at all. Additionally, it was as colorless and tasteless as water.

"F*ck you, b*stards of Three-eye Association. Look at what you have!" Zhang Tie started to swear after Heller's introduction.

"Do you want to throw it away?" Heller asked innocently.

"No!" Zhang Tie hurriedly stopped Heller as his eyes gleamed stealthily, "Just keep it, I might have to use it in the future!"

Heller immediately coughed heavily like being choked...

Chapter 652: Fruit of Bloodline

Besides that medicament container, Zhang Tie found a purse on the corpse. There were gold checks inside the purse which were worth more than 1 million.

Since he robbed Senel's warehouse in Tokei City, Zhang Tie had been immune to wealth. Therefore, at the sight of these gold checks, Zhang Tie was not excited at all. However, Zhang Tie felt strange about finding gold checks on a knight's corpse, 'Money is really irresistible. Even knights are obsessed with it.'

Besides these items, the dead knight of Three-eye Association also had a special waistband.

It was a shiny black waistband whose buckle was like two crossed bright moons. It seemed to be specially three-dimensional, classical and delicate. It might be made of an animal's hide. However, when Zhang Tie held it, he realized that it was metal as it felt icy and heavy. It was perfectly sealed with numerous black hexagonal, metal scales, which were both as soft as silk and as firm as steel. Zhang Tie was shocked by its perfect craftsmanship.

After being an assistant in Donder's grocery store for a few years, at least Zhang Tie had formed a sharp judgment. However, Zhang Tie had never seen such an exquisite craftsmanship of this waistband.

Out of curiosity, Zhang Tie injected some spiritual energy into the waistband while the information of the waistband appeared in Zhang Tie's mind.

Full-moon Dragon Soul Waistband——

——Bronze Secret Item.

——Knight's Equipment.

——This waistband contains a lost rune effect. Its craftsmanship and raw material are unknown. But I'm sure that it has been

quenched by the blood of an underground dragon and has been injected with the soul fire of an underground dragon.

——This waistband's effect is closely related to the moons' looks. At the double full moons, it would have a maximal effect when it could increase the full strength of an underground dragon for the wearer. At the double two crescents, it would have a minimal effect when it could increase 10% of the full strength of an underground dragon. As to the other periods, its effect would determine on the looks of the two moons.

——Authenticated by Fang Xiaobai from Treasures Pavilion, Taixia Country, Eastern Continent.

As there was too much information, Zhang Tie had many questions.

Zhang Tie didn't know what was an underground dragon or how powerful was an underground dragon. However, he knew that he had never touched such an item before; especially the words "Bronze Secret Item" "Lost" "Unknown" and "Authenticated by Fang Xiaobai" which reminded Zhang Tie of one possibility——this waistband was not the product of this age at all; instead, it came from a distant age which was discovered by the modern people. Now that it was produced in a distant age, of course, it had a lot of secrets. That was also why the information was left by the jewelry appraiser instead of its producer.

After being shocked for more than 10 seconds, Zhang Tie instantly thought it through as he recovered his composure, 'Now that I could get a rarity like Castle of Black Iron, of course, someone else could also get something special.' Given that information, Zhang Tie understood that there were a lot of rarities that were out of his imagination in this world, 'Perhaps, I'm not qualified to know more information until I promote to a knight.'

Zhang Tie attempted to wear that waistband. When he buckled it up, he felt a special wave spreading across his entire body from the

waistband; at the same time, the flames of those surging points that he had lit jumped faintly. Closely after that, the waistband recovered its tranquility. Zhang Tie then did not feel it special anymore, not to mention the increasing strength for him, 'It seems that this waistband is indeed only available to knights.'

After this waistband, Zhang Tie found no more valuable items from this knight of Three-eye Association.

Zhang Tie reaped a lot today——Autumn Frost Golden Sword, Rose Finger Ring, Full-moon Dragon Soul Waistband, gold checks that were worth more than 1 million gold coins and a lot of vials of pills and medicament.

Zhang Tie gave the Full-moon Dragon Soul Waistband to Heller and told him to put it away.

"Castle Lord, do you need Edward to change its look?" Heller asked.

"No need!" Zhang Tie took a deep breath before hiding his smile. At the same time, he narrowed his eyes with a brooding look, "I can't use this waistband until I promote to a knight. When it's available to me, it doesn't matter even if others know that this is of a knight of Three-eye Association! What the f*ck a knight would do if he could not even protect such an item?"

After hearing Zhang Tie's domineering words, Heller nodded, "Hmm, this waistband is indeed a good item. At the full moons, it could increase one's strength by the full strength of an underground dragon; thankfully, this waistband could only increase the knight's strength by a bit more than 1/5 of the full strength of an underground dragon; otherwise, the guy of Three-eye Association would be more powerful!"

"Heller, what's an underground dragon? How powerful is an underground dragon?" Zhang Tie asked.

"An underground dragon is a LV 14 magical beast which lives in a

special underground environment. An average adult underground dragon would be almost twice of your strength"

'Twice?' Zhang Tie faintly drew in a mouth of breath as he had never imagined that a waistband could increase one's strength by two times, 'That's great! Although there are only 3-4 days all the year round when there are full moons, it's already amazing.'

"What about the bronze secret item?"

"It's a concept of modern people about the past. You could only discover those secrets and knowledge by yourself!"

Zhang Tie knew that Heller stuck to his bottom line and would not tell him everything that he knew. Therefore, after hearing this answer, he soon transferred his attention.

'After reaping a lot of booties from this knight of Three-eye Association, it's time to look at the rewards from the small tree.'

In the dark, an amber luster was running across the tree leaves of the small tree, making it pretty majestic and splendid. However, Zhang Tie felt that the small tree was a bit different than usual. The moment he was close to the small tree had he seen the tree leaves swaying, causing a euphonious bell ring. It seemed to be greeting Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie had not enjoyed such a kind treatment before. Besides delicate music, Zhang also smelt a strong, exotic fragrance. Only after a sniff had he felt being spirited while all of his fine hair seemed being opened.

Zhang Tie smelt the fragrance of fruit of judgment, the fruit of brilliance and another special fragrance.

Meanwhile, Zhang Tie's heart started to pound.

When standing under the small tree and watching all sorts of fruits hanging over the small tree, Zhang Tie felt so happy that he almost passed out.

At the sight of the 7 cross-star shaped fruits of judgment, Zhang Tie felt thirsty as he panted and torn open his collar.

Zhang Tie then checked the effects of those fruits of judgment by his quivering hand one after another.

——Fruit of judgment; already ripe. This fruit contains an advancement rune whose effect is "Medium-level Rapid Moving skill"...

——Fruit of judgment; already ripe. This fruit contains an advancement rune whose effect is "Medium-level Hiding Skill"...

——Fruit of judgment; already ripe. This fruit contains an advancement rune whose effect is "Senior Binding Skill".

——Fruit of judgment; already ripe. This fruit of judgment contains an advancement rune whose effect is "Senior Rapid Moving Skill"...

——Fruit of judgment; already ripe. This fruit of judgment contains an advancement rune whose effect is "Senior Hiding Skill"...

——Fruit of judgment; already ripe. This fruit contains a god's rune whose effect is ——"cracking"...

——Fruit of judgment; already ripe. This fruit contains a god's rune whose effect is ——"Stabilize Spirit"...

Zhang Tie remembered that there were already two fruits of judgment on the small tree when he left the battlefield of Mocco City. He had never imagined that he could have 5 more fruits of judgment after killing one knight.

With the 7 fruits of judgment, he could not only promote the effects of the three current god's runes to senior level but also obtained another two new skills.

Zhang Tie really had a fruitful achievement this time.

Besides the fruit of judgment, the fruit of brilliance also changed its look.

Since the first fruit of brilliance appeared on the small tree,

Zhang Tie had fixed his eyes on the fruit of brilliance which could completely store one's spiritual energy in his mind—round, smooth and shining a dark golden luster. No matter how many people's spiritual energy it contained, its look remained unchanged. However, at this moment, Zhang Tie realized that he was wrong. The fruit of brilliance would always change. The fruit of brilliance was almost 1/2 bigger than its previous look while its dark golden luster also disappeared. It turned transparent like a senior crystal ball. Additionally, Zhang Tie could also see the running colorful brilliance inside the fruit.

Zhang Tie did not believe that it was a fruit of brilliance until he touched it and read the information.

Undoubtedly, its changing look was owed to the knight. The moment Zhang Tie imagined the powerful spiritual energy of the knight had he drooled.

Additionally, he obtained two trouble-reappearance fruits tonight, one from the battlefield of Mocco City, the other from that knight of Three-eye Association whom he killed in the valley. The two trouble-reappearance fruits were the only ones that Zhang Tie had expected.

Besides, Zhang Tie smelt a special fragrance around the small tree. After walking around the small tree for a short while, Zhang Tie finally saw a wholly new fruit on one twig.

That fruit was half bloody and half black. It was a special gyroelongated square dipyramid which looked like a bright, perfect artwork that combined well-polished red gems and black crystals.

Zhang Tie touched it and saw its information at once.

——Fruit of bloodline; already ripe; Usage: Pick and directly eat it. Notice: The fruit cannot be taken out of the Castle of Black Iron. After picking it off, you could preserve it in crystal ware forever.

——You can freely allocate the strength in this fruit. It could awaken your ancestral bloodline or help evolve the bloodline that you've already awakened.

——The brave man who dares to wave saber towards the dark force, when you conquer your fear, everything would be possible. When you create a marvel in the dark, the marvel would manifest itself in the brightness for sure. This fruit of bloodline is your marvel and your greatest reward, with which you would acknowledge the secrets of the endless treasures of your body and have the power of determining your own fate. The power doesn't come from your punch but from your strong will and heart of being a brave man.

'Fruit of bloodline?'

'Awaken my ancestral bloodline or help evolve the bloodlines that I've already awakened?'

Zhang Tie became shocked. After a short while, he couldn't wait to pick off that fruit of bloodline...

"Castle Lord, as you've not fully recovered from your injuries. I suggest you to rest two days until your body is fully recovered. After that, you can enjoy these fruits. In this way, those fruits could fully play their effects!" Heller said on Zhang Tie's side.

Zhang Tie then stopped. Watching the fruits all over the small tree, he swallowed his saliva forcefully before nodding.

...

'Two days, just two days then...' Zhang Tie mumbled.

'I wonder about the battle situation in Mocco City.'

'No matter how it proceeds in Mocco City, based on my current battle force, I cannot change anything else besides killing some small figures.'

'I will wait a couple of days then...'

'Mom said, being patient is a virtue.'

Zhang Tie then recovered his composure...

Chapter 653: A Surging Comprehensive Force

Two days flew past.

During the past two days, Zhang Tie lived a very comfortable life. When he got up in the morning, he would drink some all-purpose medicament. After that, he would take a bath in the hot spring and take a noontime snooze. He would also fly around Castle of Black Iron in the incarnation of that black beetle and experience the marvelous world from the eyes of an insect.

In the past two days, Zhang Tie didn't even cultivate the endless true words of the Great Wilderness Sutra.

Before eating so many fruits, Zhang Tie intended to relax himself spiritually and physically and adjust himself to the optimal state.

Zhang Tie even wanted to take a look at Mocco City in the incarnation of that small beetle; however, he finally abandoned this thought.

Heller had a proverb——Only when you learned to calmly retreat yourself from dangerous situations could you have a bright future.

'Before being calm, I have to learn to relax myself and free myself out of the bizarre environment in the outside world. I have to face my true heart.'

'My true heart is to be dauntless.'

'I've already tried my best. I rushed towards millions of demonized puppets firstly and almost lost my life. After that, I killed a knight of Three-eye Association bravely. I've already faced my true heart dauntlessly and have no regrets.'

Over the past two days, Zhang Tie not only healed his wounds, but also improved his spiritual realm.

In such a spiritual realm, Zhang Tie forgot about Mocco City and

Senel Clan. He even forgot about those fruits on the small tree. He just enjoyed traveling everyday in the incarnation of the small beetle. In the special perspective of that insect, a common small tree was like a vast and exotic world that he had never experienced before. Entering the small tree, he felt pretty pleased that he almost forgot everything else.

Sometimes, Zhang Tie couldn't help but think that the Great Wilderness Sutra was created by some extremely powerful people who wanted to experience and sense this world in different incarnations. Perhaps, on a far ancient day, when one of those extremely powerful people suddenly became tired of observing and experiencing this world in the perspective of a human, he wondered what this world would be in the eyes of insects, birds or beasts. Therefore, he created the "Great Wilderness Sutra"

——'Is that possible?'

——'Is that impossible?'

Hahahaha...

In that relaxed state, Zhang Tie found his mind became agile and fully energetic.

...

On the morning of the 3rd day since he entered Castle of Black Iron, when those villagers in the town started a new day, Zhang Tie, who had been fully relaxed, appeared below the small tree.

"Choose fruits which could be easily absorbed firstly; eat the fruit of brilliance and the fruit of bloodline in the end. Pay attention to the order of fruits of judgment. The lower level ones first; otherwise, it won't work!" Heller suggested aside.

"Okay, I see!" Zhang Tie then picked off that trouble-reappearance fruit and swallowed it instantly. After digesting that trouble-reappearance fruit, Zhang Tie continued to gnaw other fruits.

It took Zhang Tie 24 hours to digest all the 7 fruits of judgment. After that, his comprehensive strength surged greatly.

Senior binding skill could freeze all the fighters below LV 9. Its striking radius reached 85 cm. Zhang Tie could store 36 senior binding chains. That was to say, if there were 36 LV 9 powerhouses in a room, the moment he entered the room could he freeze all the 36 fighters with senior binding chains.

Zhang Tie had never imagined that he could have such a great ability.

With the blessing of senior rapid moving rune, Zhang Tie could increase his moving speed from 120% of that granted by preliminary rapid moving rune to 360%. If Zhang Tie encountered Scala outside Mocco City at this moment, with the blessing of the senior rapid moving rune, Zhang Tie could move 2 times faster than that he did three days ago. Even Scala could only see him off and eat dust as his speed had already reached the upper limit of a battle demon.

With the blessing of senior rapid moving rune, Zhang Tie tested his speed in Castle of Black Iron and was really stunned by that. At his full effort, Zhang Tie was as fast as a gust, leaving behind a constant shadow. It only took him less than 2 seconds to finish the distance of 100 m. It was Zhang Tie's first time to be fully confident about his ability to escape.

With the blessing of the senior hiding rune, in Heller's words, Zhang Tie's life qi became a bit weaker than that when he had just drunk the concealing medicament. Concealing medicament could only conceal one's heat source and infrared signature and make one look like being stonified; however, the senior hiding rune could even conceal one's entire life qi and energy besides concealing ones' heat source and infrared signature. Undoubtedly, senior hiding rune was greater than concealing medicament. Besides, senior hiding skill could also be used on one's incarnation.

Especially that black beetle. It was trivial itself and was able to change its color. If it was applied with a senior hiding rune, it would almost be impossible to discover it when it wanted to hide itself.

The "cracking" god's rune was a powerful aided striking skill. Zhang Tie could apply it on his weapon, a bolt or a javelin. Given its preliminary effect, it would cause a cracking effect on the skin near the wound of his opponent. It could increase his weapon's physical striking effect. Even if the opponent didn't die, this effect would make his opponent lose his blood more rapidly. It would take his opponent two times longer to heal his wounds. If his opponent was a demon, this "cracking" effect would additionally increase by 30%. This effect seemed to be targeting at demons.

The god's rune "Stabilize Spirit" could form a shield in front of his spiritual realm.

With the help of "Stabilize Spirit", Zhang Tie would be greatly resistant to some spiritual strikes. "Stabilize Spirit" was the first passive god's rune that Zhang Tie had. After eating that fruit of judgment, Zhang Tie saw the god's run in his mind. It was a light, transparent shield.

On the next morning he digested all of his fruits of judgment, After picking off the exotic fruit of brilliance, Zhang Tie crossed his legs and engulfed it.

Zhang Tie closed his eyes. In a split second, he had felt the golden spiritual energy swirling in his mind. A river abruptly appeared above that spiritual swirl. After that, the golden river dumped off from the river and converged into that spiritual swirl. It was like how a waterfall poured into a lake. The lake then rippled and spread in all directions. At the same time, it expanded and became deeper.

When the spiritual energy gradually suffused in his mind, Zhang Tie felt an extremely cold sense spreading across his body. It was

like how a dry land being as thirsty as a desert suddenly was drown by an ocean. The sense of happiness and satisfaction was even 10 times sharper than an orgasm.

The golden river kept dumping off while Zhang Tie was intoxicated in that extreme happiness.

Not knowing how much time had passed, the river in his mind disappeared when Zhang Tie's mind sea became a real golden ocean!

When Zhang Tie woke up from that sweet state, he found his spiritual energy had increased at least 10 times than that of before. When Zhang Tie looked around, he felt his surging spiritual energy expanding in all the cells across his body like how sea waves flapped the beach. Even though the land was far from the coastline, he could still hear the sound of sea waves.

Zhang Tie opened his eyes and saw Heller standing in front him.

In the process of cultivation, Zhang Tie had forgotten about time. It was in the morning when he closed his eyes. However, at this moment, it was already dark in Castle of Black Iron. Zhang Tie asked Heller, "How long has it been?"

"37 hours!" Heller answered.

"37 hours? It's one and a half days." Zhang Tie then let out a sigh and picked himself up from the ground.

During the process when he stood up, Zhang Tie felt that he became lighter. He even wanted to fly...

Chapter 654: Knight's Consciousness

Besides being lighter, Zhang Tie's vision was also improved as he could see distant items clearly. Additionally, he could further identify the fragrance of different flowers and grasses. Furthermore, he had a sharper auditory sense when he could even obscurely hear the boisterous sounds of villagers in the distant town at the foot of the mountain. When he focused on the small town, he could hear the boisterous sounds clearly; when he focused on the gurgling brook on the mountain, he found it was as clear and loud as a symphony; by contrast, the boisterous sounds in the small town faded out and became a background sound. What a marvelous feeling! When Zhang Tie gazed at the colorful clouds in Castle of Black Iron, he found the clouds slowed down while the whole world seemed to be agile and tranquil, which could be known by telepathy.

Zhang Tie tried to move his limbs and found that he could better control his body. It seemed that he had tapped greater potentials of his body. He could make many things which could not be imagined or made at this moment. For instance, as long as he focused on his heart, he could control his heart's contraction force like controlling the muscle on his palm so as to control the blood circulation speed across his body. It was really out of Zhang Tie's imagination. Previously, Zhang Tie always thought that he could not control his heart's beating frequency. Now he understood that as long as his spiritual energy was high enough, he could also control the muscle on his heart.

Zhang Tie tried to suspend his heartbeat for a short while, during which period he found his blood circulation also stagnated; additionally, he felt his blood sinking down due to gravity. Zhang Tie instantly remembered an old Hua saying—When one grew elder, one's feet function would decline first. As one's feet were farthest from one's heart, due to gravity, the qi and blood in one's

feet would be harder to be pumped up by one's heart. Therefore, feet function would decline first.

Zhang Tie stopped his heartbeat for 5 minutes before feeling a bit dizzy. Then, he loosed his control and had his heart beat freely.

"Bang...bang...bang..." Only after contracting 3 times, Zhang Tie's blood started to run across his body once again.

'What a nice feeling to control my body freely! If some part of my body begins to bleed, I can have my heart beat at a lower speed. By slowing down my blood circulation, I can reduce the potential danger caused by the excessive loss of blood.'

'Great. Very great.'

After warming up his limbs, Zhang Tie directly jumped away from the small tree and started to perform his Iron-blood Fist on the top of the mountain.

Zhang Tie performed it according to his previous battle force first.

Based on his previous judgment, Zhang Tie thought that his Iron-blood Fist was already very sharp and almost perfect. However, this time Zhang Tie found that his Iron-blood Fist was indeed crude. He was more like a simple-minded muscled guy slashing and surging forward by a sharp saber in the street while there were a lot of problems in the rhythm, coordination, coherence, footsteps, speed, strength, movement, transfer, defense and his control of time and space.

'Why is it crude?' Zhang Tie felt bashful.

After finishing Iron-blood Fist, Zhang Tie stood still and faintly frowned as he carefully recalled those problems on his Iron-blood Fist. He then immediately thought it through that it was not because his Iron-blood Fist had declined but his insight and cognitive ability had improved.

The surging spiritual energy not only increased Zhang Tie's

ability to control his body unimaginably but also greatly improved his cognitive mode, cognitive ability and sensing pattern about the objective world unconsciously. He experienced such great changes because he devoured the spiritual energy of the knight of Three-eye Association. Perhaps in the eyes of knights, the Iron-blood Fist that he was always proud of was just mediocre, which, although being much greater and more majestic than that of common cultivators, was full of loopholes.

"This is knight's heart!" Heller 's voice sounded aside, "Perhaps you can call it knight's consciousness. Because of such a great spiritual energy, knight's consciousness and spiritual realm have already expanded into a very vast and deep realm. Their cognitive and sensing ability to this world are greatly different than commoners. It's a foundation for the power of a knight."

"You mean what I'm sensing now is what that knight could sense?" Zhang Tie asked.

"Yup, because your spiritual energy has already reached the level of a knight, which is even greater than many common knights; your sensing ability and cognitive state have already entered the knight's consciousness. That's to say, you've already entered the threshold leading to the knight's world with one foot. What a great progress and leap!"

"Ah? You mean there's no difference between my spiritual energy and knight's consciousness?"

"Only a bit. Because knights have already lit all of their surging points and further tapped their physical potential, they would have deeper sensing ability, making their knight's consciousness more acute. Given this point, your knight's consciousness is a bit weaker. Some knights could even produce a powerful 6th sense in knight's consciousness. As a result, they have exceptionally great sensing ability towards special things and people!"

"You mean my consciousness and the cognitive state could be

regarded as would-be knight's consciousness or would-be knight's heart?"

Heller smiled, "Would-be consciousness, what a precise appellation."

Zhang Tie also smiled as he started to further cultivate his Iron-blood Fist.

This time, he corrected all the loopholes that he could find. As a result, his Iron-blood Fist gradually became majestic and grand, entering a wholly new realm.

After practicing it another 3-4 hours, Zhang Tie stopped and stood still solemnly. He then frowned. After thinking for a few seconds, he moved once again. After half an hour, he stopped and stood still with a dubious look...

He felt that he could make it better; however, he could not make further progress anymore no matter how hard he tried. Therefore, he felt pitiful about this.

"Castle Lord, don't worry. It indicates that your physical level and ability cannot catch up with your knight's consciousness at this moment. Although your spiritual energy and cognitive ability have already reached would-be knight's consciousness, your level is still LV 11. Your physical abilities on all aspects cannot catch up with your knight's consciousness. It's a chasm that you cannot stride over at least now."

After hearing Heller's explanation, Zhang Tie understood it right away. 'This was like driving a sports car. Previously, it was enough for me to drive a Faerie Dragon T9; however, if my driving skill was 10 times stronger, I could play more tricks. If so, a Faerie Dragon T9 might not meet my driving will on performance sometimes.'

Zhang Tie revealed a bitter smile as he had never imagined this. He felt that he could do better; however, his physical conditions

could not meet his will. What a regret!

'Thankfully, it's not a permanent regret. With my rising level, I could further increase the power of my Iron-blood Fist. In the past few hours, if I did not have knight's consciousness, I would not find the loopholes in my Iron-blood Fist; if so, I would not push my Iron-blood Fist to a new realm in such a short period.'

After owning his knight's consciousness, Zhang Tie found that he could easily find his own shortcomings in the insight of a knight. Therefore, he could further improve his battle skills through pure empiricism guidance.

Although his experiences worked, they restricted his progress. If he could cultivate Iron-blood Fist with the guidance of knight's consciousness, he could easily make further progress for sure and grasp the essence of this battle skill in the shortest period.

Similarly, he could cultivate other battle skills like this.

'It seems that this is not all the benefits that could be brought by the ocean-like spiritual energy in my mind sea and my knight's consciousness. I will explore them later.' Zhang Tie mumbled.

After cultivating Iron-blood Fist a few hours, Zhang Tie's battle qi was boiling all over. He was fully spirited and very excited. How could he go to bed in such a state? Therefore, he gradually moved his eyes on the fruit of bloodline hanging on the small tree...

Chapter 655: Treasury

The red and black fruit of bloodline was like an artwork. After observing it for quite a while in his hand, Zhang Tie finally ate it.

It tasted sour and salty. However, after eating it, Zhang Tie felt being still as an exotic energy rose from his stomach before spreading across his body. Being affected by that energy, Zhang Tie felt very sleepy. Only after resisting it for a few seconds had Zhang Tie closed his eyes...

'F*ck, will this fruit of bloodline help me awaken a bloodline in the dream?' Zhang Tie thought before falling asleep.

...

Zhang Tie felt like entering a grotesque world, which was covered with white clouds of mist, large or small, which looked like the marshmallows.

'Is this a dreamland?' Zhang Tie asked himself. Closely after that, Zhang Tie denied his presumption as he saw the fruit of bloodline in a clear-minded way inside.

The fruit of bloodline was floating above Zhang Tie's head in the shape of gyroelongated square dipyramid while giving out looming luster. This fruit of bloodline seemed to be much larger than that before. Suspending above Zhang Tie's head, it reminded Zhang Tie of being in an odd-looking lighthouse in the ocean composed of the marshmallows.

When Zhang Tie looked around, a group of messages appeared in his mind, reminding Zhang Tie of his current situation.

He was not in a dreamland but in a mysterious spiritual world similar to the virtual situation manifested by the trouble-reappearance fruit. This world was half real. Zhang Tie didn't know why he was here. Neither did he want to think too much about it. He only knew it was an effect of the small tree or Castle of

Black Iron.

The trouble-reappearance fruit manifested the external world while the Fruit of Bloodline manifested his internal world, in which, he could freely choose which ancestral bloodline to activate or evolve.

The marshmallows in different sizes were various ancestral bloodlines which were hidden in his genes and had not been activated yet.

Zhang Tie then watched the ocean of marshmallows and almost passed out. Watching those marshmallows, Zhang Tie finally realized why everyone's body was a treasury.

Zhang Tie waved his hands towards the red and black fruit of bloodline; then, the huge gyroelongated square dipyrmaid floated towards him at once. Zhang Tie touched it with one hand and obtained a message immediately—bloodline's energy: 316 points.

"Show me the two ancestral bloodlines that I've already activated..."

Soon after Zhang Tie finished his words had a red marshmallow and a golden marshmallow flown towards him from afar and floated in front of him.

Compared to other dim marshmallows, both the red one and the golden one were giving out a comfortable, tender light.

There was a shadow of the javelin in the red marshmallow. Zhang Tie immediately recognized that it was the precise throwing bloodline. There was a humanoid shadow which was changing its color constantly in the golden marshmallow, at the sight of which, Zhang Tie knew it was the color changing bloodline.

It seemed that the red marshmallow had been completely activated while the greater part of that golden marshmallow was still grey.

Zhang Tie put his hand on the red marshmallow and saw a line of

the message at once.

——Precise throwing bloodline; already been fully activated.

After checking the precise throwing bloodline, Zhang Tie moved his hand on that color changing bloodline.

——Body changing Bloodline; 1/3 activated. 2 more levels to be activated.

——LV 1, color changing bloodline; already been activated. This bloodline could change the color of your skin, eyes and hair.

——LV 2, bone changing bloodline; not been activated yet. After activating this bloodline, you could change your figure. It could be activated with 78 points of bloodline energy.

——LV 3, face changing bloodline; not been activated yet. This level could not be activated unless the LV 2 bloodline is activated. After activating this bloodline, you could change your face. It could be activated with 135 points of bloodline energy.

After reading this message, Zhang Tie was so thrilled that he kept rubbing his hands. He had not imagined that he could have such powerful genes. Bone changing effect could be reached by some secret cultivation methods such as bone contracting skill. With the help of some pills or medicament, one could also realize the same effect in a short period; however, that face changing bloodline was really great. As the color changing bloodline, bone changing bloodline and face changing bloodline belonged to the same series, only when all the 3 bloodlines were activated would the entire body changing bloodline awaken completely.

'What an immortal bloodline!' Zhang Tie thought it was a bit excessive by listing the color changing bloodline as an immortal bloodline previously. Until then did he understand that the color changing bloodline was just a beginning of a powerful bloodline. It would be more powerful if the later bloodlines could be further awakened.

'Why Huaiyuan Palace are so concerned about the ancestral bloodlines that their disciples have awakened? Maybe the elders of Huaiyuan Palace have already guessed that there might be more special bloodlines to awaken after these rare immortal bloodlines.' Zhang Tie thought.

'I have 316 points of bloodline energy after eating that fruit of bloodline. I will still have 105 points left if I completely activate the body changing bloodline. Do I need to activate them?'

Watching the marshmallows in front of him, large and small, Zhang Tie soon made a decision——just take a look first.

In the next half an hour, Zhang Tie was wandering in the ocean of marshmallows. He checked the ancestral bloodline in each marshmallow. As a result, Zhang Tie was so shocked that he could not even utter a word.

There were inclusive ancestral bloodlines in his genes. As long as he activated any one of them would he gain a new ability. He found that the precise throwing ability was only a very common ancestral bloodline being related to javelin. There were many other bloodlines concerning the abilities to use weapons, the most common one among was called "***Affinity" such as "Sword Affinity", "Sabre Affinity", "Stick Affinity" and "Ax Affinity". According to the introduction, after awakening "***Affinity" bloodline, he could use that weapon adroitly.

However, these "***Affinity" bloodlines were just a start as many weapons would manifest their unique and powerful bloodline abilities in later stages. For instance, Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace paid more attention to the ancestral bloodline concerning crossbow. After reaching "Crossbow Affinity", there were dozens of other ancestral bloodlines to be awakened, such as "Crossbow Proficiency", "Crossbow Identification Skill", "Unification of Human and Crossbow", "Shooting through Tree Leaves from 100 m away", "Long-distance Shoot", "Shooting in Wind", "Shooting through Clouds", "Mountain Drilling Shoot", "Heart Shoot", "Shoot

after Lightning Bolt ", "Breaking Sun Bow", etc. Those ancestral bloodlines of the same series would have complex links with each other more or less. It was a bit like bloodlines tree which had a rigid hierarchy.

These ancestral bloodlines reminded Zhang Tie of Lan Yunxi, who said she had awakened some ancestral bloodlines concerning crossbow at a young age. Perhaps, they were contained in these bloodlines.

Among all the ancestral bloodlines, crossbow, sword, saber and javelin were the most powerful series concerning weapons, each of which had developed into a verdant bloodlines tree, on which there were always a lot of ancestral bloodlines to be awakened.

Zhang Tie found that those marshmallows containing ancestral bloodlines of crossbow series were whiter while those marshmallows of saber, sword and javelin were grayer. It required 27 points of bloodline energy to activate a "Crossbow Affinity". However, it required 62 points of bloodline energy to activate a "Sword Affinity" or "Sabre Affinity", which was almost twice that of "Crossbow Affinity".

Zhang Tie thought, 'Perhaps this was influenced by the ties of the blood of Zhang Clan. The most powerful ancestral bloodline of Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace is related to the crossbow. Therefore, such an ancestral bloodline could be easily manifested by the offspring of Huaiyuan Palace. The Clan's mark has been staying in my body since I was born.'

Besides the above ancestral bloodlines, Zhang Tie learned many other strange ancestral bloodlines on insects' language, beasts' language, flowers' language, etc.

Some bloodlines, after being activated, could make you a good gardener.

Some bloodlines, after being activated, could enable you to identify ground qi and fengshui.

Some bloodlines, after being activated, could enable you to respond to aspect astrology and meteorology.

Some bloodlines, after being activated, could grant you with the talent of mathematics and financial management.

Some bloodlines, after being activated, could make you a cook or a blacksmith.

Some bloodlines, after being activated, could grant you with an ability to pluck up the morale of the army when you beat a drum. Zhang Tie was deeply impressed by this ancestral bloodline and its name——Fiery Dance.

Zhang Tie was stunned by its message when he checked a grey marshmallow which was as large as a small room.

——Dragon Herding Bloodline; not activated yet. After activating this bloodline, you could gain the secret method of herding dragons. It could be activated with 1134 points of bloodline energy.

'Is that real? Is that dragon herding skill hiding in my gene?'

Zhang Tie was shocked.

'I remember that an elder of Huaiyuan Palace said it was a bloodline of Dong Clan. The ancestor of Dong Clan was called Dragon Herding. As Dong Clan had been married to Hua people for tens of thousands of years, the ancestral bloodline was maintained in my gene...

After being stunned for a few seconds, Zhang Tie shook his head as a question appeared in his mind, 'It took me quite a long while to only read 1/10 of these ancestral bloodlines, which ancestral bloodline should I activate then?'

Chapter 656: Kuafu Bloodline

Sometimes, you would sigh if you didn't enter a treasury; however, when you entered, you would feel confused as you didn't know which treasure to choose.

There were thousands of bloodlines to be activated. If the Fruit of Bloodline contained countless energy, Zhang Tie, of course, would activate all the bloodlines, by doing which he would be unrivaled in a split second and crush all the sc*mbags of demons and Three-eye Association into pieces; however, the Fruit of Bloodline only contained 361 points of bloodline energy. Therefore, Zhang Tie had to choose which bloodlines to activate among the thousands of bloodlines.

Different ancestral bloodlines required different points of energy, which varied from dozens of points to over 1,000 points. Therefore, it was hard to choose with only 361 points of energy.

Zhang Tie didn't continue to check the remaining ancestral bloodlines; instead, he stood still and started his consideration.

'Which bloodline is the most useful to me?'

'It's a tricky problem. Each bloodline has its own function. All of them could improve my ability and grant me with one unimaginable ability. But which one could maximize my battle force at least for the time being?'

Zhang Tie couldn't work out a solution after thinking for quite a while. He felt all the bloodlines were very useful. Suddenly, an old Hua saying flashed across his mind—the truth lies in the extreme strength!

'The truth lies in the extreme strength!'

Zhang Tie quivered all over as it was the first line in the "Preface" of the secret knowledge "Iron-blood Fist". Any strength, as long as being exerted to the utmost, would be able to conquer everything

else.

The moment Zhang Tie recalled this line had he become clear-minded and reached a conclusion——The bloodline that could combine with my current situation perfectly and make my advantage more prominent and powerful is what I want.

'It's better to exert my current ability to the utmost rather than waiting for a new ability.'

'What's my most powerful and prominent ability now?'

Zhang Tie closed his eyes and thought for a short while before reaching a conclusion——speed!

'With the combination of the strength granted by various fruits that I've eaten, the effect of the "King Roc Sutra" and the senior rapidly moving skill, I could already reach a very terrifying, high speed. Although I'm just a LV 11, with the effect of a senior rapidly moving rune, I would not even fear Scala even if I met him.'

'This is my strength. I have to make this strength my trump card so as to be unrivaled.'

Zhang Tie opened his eyes as a light flashed across his eyes...

"I need a bloodline which could be activated right now. It should make me run faster, move swifter and jump higher and farther. In one word, it should grant me with a higher speed." Zhang Tie spoke to the air.

Soon after his words had the clouds started to roll. Almost at the same time, a grey marshmallow flew towards him from afar and finally suspended in front of Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie recovered his composure before reaching out his hand to check the function of this bloodline.

——Kuafu bloodline; not activated yet; you will have the strength of [Kuafu](#) after activating this bloodline. You would move as fast as a lightning bolt and could even chase after the sun and the moon.

It requires 129 points of bloodline energy.

'Kuafu bloodline? The Kuafu who chased after the sun?' a Hua legend flashed through Zhang Tie's mind, driving Zhang Tie excited at once.

"Confirmed, activate Kuafu Bloodline..."

After Zhang Tie confirmed his request, that huge Fruit of Bloodline on his side suddenly brightened up as a red and black energy beam of light injected into the grey clouds from the fruit. It took over 1 minute for the beam of light to disappear. The huge marshmallow then turned blue while giving out a tender light. At the same time, an obscure shadow ran and jumped as fast as a lightning bolt in the marshmallow.

——Kuafu bloodline; already activated.

As the one standing here was not Zhang Tie's original body but a projection of his spirit and consciousness, Zhang Tie didn't know how his original body felt at this moment. If he wanted to know the real effect of this bloodline, he had to return his spirit and consciousness to his original body.

Zhang Tie then took a deep breath. The moment he thought about combining senior rapidly moving skill with this Kuafu bloodline had he became excited.

After activating this Kuafu bloodline, Zhang Tie had 232 points of energy left in the Fruit of Bloodline.

'What next then?'

After closing his eyes and thinking for a short while, Zhang Tie opened his eyes with a wisp of a smile at his mouth corners. He then chose to activate the rest two levels of the body changing bloodline, namely the bone changing bloodline and the face changing bloodline.

'My body changing ability is exclusive. Once I mastered it, I could cover my traces with the help of Castle of Black Iron and the

incarnation ability of the "Great Wilderness Sutra"

'If I only used color changing skill, those who're familiar with me might still recognize me; however, after mastering the 3 levels of body changing skill, I could never be recognized by those who're familiar with me even if I stood in front of them. This ability serves as the largest protection for me. In special cases, I could do things which even knights could not do.'

'Although the body changing bloodline could not bring me greater battle force, it could bring me the most possibilities, with which, I would have a bright future.'

After the rest two levels of the body changing bloodline were activated, there were only 19 points of bloodline energy left in the Fruit of Bloodline.

'What can I do with such a little energy? It could not even activate the commonest weapon affinity.'

With a casual thought, Zhang Tie delivered an order to this space, "Hmm, show me all the ancestral bloodlines which could be activated by 19 points of bloodline energy!"

Soon after he finished his order had a grey marshmallow flown towards him from afar and suspended in front of him. Compared to other marshmallows, this one was too tiny that it was even smaller than the real marshmallow.

'Amazing!' Zhang Tie became a bit dumbfounded as he reached his hand over there.

——Imitating bloodline; not activated yet. After activating it, you would have a super great ability to perform and imitate others. It could be activated with 18 points of bloodline energy.

Zhang Tie widely opened his mouth, 'Is the function of imitating bloodline only to activate the one's gift to be a performer? Actually, many people have such an ability; but they are not good at it. Those professional performers on stages are most excelled at

the performances. I've not imagined that I could have such a bloodline.'

'It means that there was a person among my ancestors who lived by performing on stages many generations ago. It's not a senior vocation, which is even always despised by people.' However, Zhang Tie didn't mind it as he felt that he was also a commoner.

Now that there was an ancestral bloodline left by Hua ancestors who herd dragons, it was not bizarre for actors or clowns to leave an ancestral bloodline for their offspring.

It was said to be the heyday of actors or performers before the Catastrophe. In that age, actors and performers were treated as social elites and successful men. They were even awarded as emperors or queens. How bright and hilarious they were! However, the real cultivators in that age were not favored by the public. They were even repelled out of the mainstream society. As a result, many real cultivators were extremely poor; some of them were even treated as lunatics. This looked unimaginable in this age as the value of these people was completely put upside down.

According to the theory of conspiracy in this age, the absurd things before the Catastrophe were completely caused by Three-eye Association and demons. As a result, many young people preferred pursuing the actors or performers who were packaged by agencies; at the same time, they scoffed the cultivators who studied the secrets and truths of humans and this universe.

'After the body changing bloodline was awakened, the rest bloodline energy was only enough to awaken such a trivial bloodline. The body changing bloodline plus imitating bloodline, fabulous! What a God-given arrangement!'

In laughter, Zhang Tie activated the imitating bloodline. As to the last one point of bloodline energy, he threw it into the marshmallow of sword affinity. Of course, the marshmallow remained unchanged, but it's better than not doing that.

The Fruit of Bloodline then disappeared while the world of marshmallows became observable...

Like waking up from a dream, Zhang Tie's senses and consciousness returned to his original body.

Zhang Tie picked himself up under the small tree as his body started to crack. It started from his skull, then his meridians, veins and muscles; finally all the cells over his body sounded. The whole process lasted about 5 minutes, during which period, Zhang Tie twisted his limbs and made different gestures while being driven by his instinct of stretching himself. He felt pretty comfortable and natural only in that state.

Zhang Tie just followed such a change although he didn't know whether it was benefited from his body changing bloodline, or Kuafu bloodline or imitating bloodline or all of them.

After 5 minutes, the disordered sounds stopped, so did Zhang Tie's body. He didn't feel anything uncomfortable.

Zhang Tie raised his foot and prepared to get off the small tree. However, only after a casual stride, he felt a bit dazzling as he had been standing on the grassland over 5 m away.

'What the hell?' Zhang Tie was startled. He then felt an exotic energy surging in his body, especially his legs stimulated him to run and jump rapidly——Kuafu's strength, Kuafu bloodline.

Zhang Tie then started to run using his instinct. Only after a slight move, before reaching his full speed, Zhang Tie had heard the wuthering wind while all the items beside him were flowing backward as fast as a lightning bolt...

'Fast, it's too fast.' Zhang Tie soon reached the effect after he used a rapidly moving rune. He didn't feel hard under his feet anymore; instead, he felt like stepping on springs. The moment he landed had he stridden more than 10 m forward like riding the wind.

In a split second, Zhang Tie had arrived at the hillside. Zhang Tie

directly jumped off the hillside from the height of 50-60 m. After landing on the foot of the mountain, he felt stepping on a huge resilient jelly. Closely after that, he sprung up 50 m high. Then, he landed and sprung up once again...

'Argh...' Zhang Tie exclaimed out of excitement like how a kid played on a trampoline. Each time he sprung up would he casually stretch or roll himself and do various movements. After a few times, he didn't spring up anymore; instead, he kept running on the land as fast as a lightning bolt...

After half an hour, Zhang Tie suddenly gritted his teeth as he activated a senior rapidly moving rune...

Within 0.01 second after he activated the senior rapidly moving rune, Zhang Tie saw a big tree rushing towards him as fast as a lightning bolt...

"Dodge away..." Zhang Tie roared towards that "huge tree which flashed in his vision".

Of course, the big tree would not dodge away itself...

Thus...

A thunder-like boom sounded in Castle of Black Iron, waking up all the villagers who were sleeping soundly in the town.

Heller revealed a smile at the sight of the distance on the top of the mountain, 'Castle Lord really made a wise choice this time. The Rapidly moving skill plus the Kuafu bloodline would exert its power to the utmost after being driven by the powerful physical strength. But I'm afraid that Castle Lord has to adapt to such a high speed. Thanks to his knight's consciousness, he will not have any problem with it.'

No more special sounds occurred in Castle of Black Iron after the loud boom.

...

Until 2 hours later...

With another boom, Zhang Tie appeared on the grassland in that courtyard on the top of the mountain in a very majestic look. A pair of pits as deep as 16 cm appeared under his feet...

At this moment, Zhang Tie looked completely like a beggar in shabby clothes. He raised his shoes from the pits and found that one sole had disappeared.

With a big smile, Zhang Tie took off the pair of worn shoes and threw them away.

"I'm going to bed. Wake me up after 24 hours. I will f*ck those sons of bitches in Mocco City!"

After saying that, Zhang Tie returned to his room and fell asleep instantly...

Kuafu, an ancient Hua people which liked to chase after sun and moon.

Chapter 657: A Dead City

In the moonlight, a black small beetle flew over ridges, woods, cliffs, grasslands, rivers swiftly...

This time, Zhang Tie felt much easier in flight.

As this small beetle enjoyed various variant plant fruits in Castle of Black Iron these days, it looked spirited and excited everyday.

With the cultivation and management of Heller, many of those fruits that Zhang Tie threw in Castle of Black Iron a few years ago had completed variation. Some fruits became completely inedible after variation while some became more yummy. According to Heller, those yummy fruits contained more aura values.

These days, the black beetle became the frequent visitor of that variant strawberry farm on the mountain in Castle of Black Iron. It would eat a lot of variant strawberries over there everyday. When Zhang Tie called it, the little thing drilled out of a strawberry with a sweet juice all over its body.

The little thing was very happy as it indeed treated Castle of Black Iron as the paradise.

Zhang Tie was happy too.

Therefore, even though Zhang Tie was going to make another raid in Mocco City at this moment, he still felt pretty relaxed.

With an upsurging battle force, Zhang Tie became more calm. Zhang Tie didn't care whether Mocco City was collapsed or not. After all, he could not alter the overall situation alone. This time, Zhang Tie had three targets: first, he wanted to get one wing demons' fruit of source and one iron-armored demons' fruit of source; second, he determined to exterminate Senel Clan. Even though he could not clean Senel Clan completely but this time, he aimed to damage their foundation at least; third, Zhang Tie expected to kill another knight of Three-eye Association or

demons, which would be great.

During the process of killing that knight of Three-eye Association, Zhang Tie remembered a very interesting board game, the process of which was determined by throwing dices, that he used to play with other students when he was in Blackhot City. In the game, if an inferior player could kill the Boss by skipping a rank, according to the calculating rules of the bonus of the game, the player would become rich at once.

After killing that knight of Three-eye Association, Zhang Tie felt like killing the Boss in the board game. With the rich reward, his battle force was greatly improved.

Zhang Tie returned along the route that he came to the valley.

Even though it was already a few days, Zhang Tie could still see the traces of the battle of the two knights.

When he came to Mocco City, Zhang Tie was startled as many big fires had not died out. However, compared to those big fires, the colorful smoke that covered this city were brighter.

The north city gate of Mocco City had been covered with corpses, which belched the most weird smoke.

When Zhang Tie saw the smoke, a word occurred to his mind——poison!

Zhang Tie dared not enter the smoke. Instead, he flew above them and started to observe them.

The smoke came from those rotten corpses. Compared to that of a few days ago, those corpses of demonized puppets had been rotten completely, especially those corpses of demonized puppets which were piled up, which turned into a rotten mire while dirty fluid flew everywhere with a heavy stink. Meanwhile, bubbles broke out from those corpses constantly, releasing a colorful gas.

Zhang Tie realized that it was a terrifying ptomaine.

The closer he was to the downtown, the more corpses of demonized puppets would he see. Each corpse of demonized puppet became a source of ptomaine. All the sources of ptomaines turned the entire Mocco City into a huge gas chamber.

On the almost ruined urban streets, Zhang Tie saw numerous corpses of demonized puppets. Although many of them had no scars, given their extremely grim looks, Zhang Tie knew that they were poisoned to death. Some of them even maintained the posture to tear open their necks and windpipes, which looked pretty terrifying.

There were also corpses of human fighters among them. However, compared to that of demonized puppets, Zhang Tie could see evident injuries and damages on human corpses. He could also judge that all of those human fighters fought to the death.

There were more than 1 million of corpses of demonized puppets, fighting to the death or being poisoned to death and about hundreds of thousands of corpses of human fighters in Mocco City.

The entire city had already become a dead city full of corpses. Because of those corpses which were releasing ptomaine, although demons corps had occupied this place, they could still not take this place as their stronghold and supply base.

After circling around the city, Zhang Tie didn't see any alive demonized puppet at all. It was so quiet in the downtown that he could not even hear the barks of strayed dogs or meows of strayed cats.

Watching the scene, Zhang Tie instantly recalled an unsentimental, arrogant woman in a black robe—Tirsiris, the terrifying voodoo pharmacist who was awarded as the Snake of Selnes.

When Zhang Tie came to Mocco City last time, he even encountered this woman in the Demon Hunters Bar. When the city

was besieged by the demonized puppets corps, this woman disappeared. Zhang Tie thought that she had already left. It was really out of his imagination that the woman always stayed in Mocco City and gave such a "great" gift to the demonized puppets corps when they occupied this city.

Even Zhang Tie felt chilly about such a brutal means.

Watching the tomb-like city, Zhang Tie realized how terrifying was a voodoo pharmacist for the first time. Each voodoo pharmacist was the most terrifying biochemical weaponer. 'I've just poisoned two b*stards of red-scarf burglars since I was born.' Compared to such a scene, it was like the fireflies in front of the bright moon.

It was Zhang Tie's first time to recognize the great effect of the poison on the battlefield.

Perhaps such ptomaine was nothing severe for powerhouses as they could directly leave when they found it; however, it was lethal to millions of common human fighters and demonized puppets.

After circling around the downtown for a short while, Zhang Tie flew towards the warehouses of allied human forces in the city. He wanted to see whether he could get something there. Zhang Tie remembered that there were piles of materials a few days ago. Zhang Tie even thought about teleporting them into Castle of Black Iron before the city fell instead of seeing them falling in the hands of demons.

The warehouses were covered with ptomaine. It seemed that the warehouses were the last stronghold of urban garrisons. Zhang Tie saw the fortifications and a great number of corpses of human fighters near those warehouses. By contrast, there were more corpses of demonized puppets. Zhang Tie realized that a fierce battle happened here.

The warehouse's area of food had been burned into ruins while the food had turned into black carbon slags. Similarly, the

warehouse's area of weapons had turned into plain ruins, which was covered with fragmented corpses of demonized puppets. There were even some terrifying huge pits on the ground in the center of the warehouses. At the sight of those huge pits, Zhang Tie imagined how some alchemist's bombs exploded there.

The human fighters near the warehouses resisted demonized puppets until the last moment; additionally, they destroyed the entire warehouses' area with the alchemist's bombs that were stored in the warehouses. It was hard to measure the loss of the demonized puppets corps; however, after such explosions, it was also hard to imagine how many available weapons could still be explored from the ruins.

Watching such a tragic scene, Zhang Tie felt complicated. He also felt fortunate about avoiding from such a destruction; at the same time, he showed his respect to these human fighters who defended the warehouses at the cost of their lives. If he had rushed over here and plundered all these items away before the city fell, such explosions might not even happen.

'It seems that it's predestined.'

Many human fighters had already fought to death here. Given the quantity of the human corpses here, Zhang Tie predicted that a part of human fighters had broken out of the city.

When Zhang Tie prepared to leave Mocco City and continued to fly southwards, a team of wing demons flew over Zhang Tie's head.

When he saw those wing demons, Zhang Tie instantly realized that he had been noticed by them. Until those wing demons flew over his head rapidly did Zhang Tie realize that he was just a trivial beetle, 'How could those wing demons pay attention to a beetle?' Zhang Tie smiled.

After leaving Mocco City a few miles, those wing demons started to hover above an area. Closely after that, they dove sharply downwards with shrill sounds. In a split second, Zhang Tie had

witnessed gleaming luster of battle qi and booms in the area where the wing demons hovered above...

Zhang Tie's heart pounded as he hurriedly accelerated towards that place.

Chapter 658: A Reality Show

Those wing demons hovered above a skyscraper which had more than 30 floors. There were a signboard of a shopping center and a signboard of the hotel below the skyscraper. After this city became a theater of operations, everything in this city had been ruined except for the skyscraper being composed of steel bars and cement.

Zhang Tie saw two people over there, a familiar one, Scala and a half strange one, Tirsiris.

After a few weeks, Tirsiris in a black robe and black hair was still aggressive and unsentimental, who looked exceptionally charming under the moonlight. A wisp of fresh blood flew off her mouth corners; however, this woman still raised her head and watched her opponent with an icy look. By contrast, her skin looked pretty white which contained a killing intent...

There were already 3 corpses of demonized puppets lying on her side. Half of the corpses were slowly melting into a pond of blood. Although the other wing demons were hovering and shrieking in the sky, they dared not dive towards her any longer.

Scala stood 20 m away from Tirsiris. Narrowing his eyes, he was watching the woman while his battle qi was faintly rolling. One of his sleeves had already fallen on the ground. Being weird, his sleeve on the ground was bluish green, which was different than his black warrior costume and another sleeve.

Glancing at the sleeve, then the wing demons who had gradually melted into a pond of blood, Scala looked a bit scared.

Scala and Tirsiris then just faced each other on the roof of the deserted 6-storey shopping center.

"Tirsiris, you cannot escape. None of those who oppose demons and Three-eye Association could escape. Additionally, you've not recovered your old injuries. Now you have new injuries. We've

spent a lot of efforts in catching you these days. I've not imagined that you're still hiding in Mocco City. How fortunate I am!" Scala said.

"Really? You can try it once again. Even if I couldn't escape, it would be no problem for me to have someone accompany me to the death!" The woman said arrogantly while whipping her hair. Even at this critical moment, the woman still maintained calm while her voice was womanly, hoarse and wild.

Watching the woman whipping her hair, Scala hurriedly moved his body to dodge away. However, he found the woman didn't attack him at all.

Seeing his intense look, Tirsiris revealed a sarcastic and disdainful look.

Scala didn't take anything for granted. He had just experienced the terror of this woman. This woman could launch an attack or release poison gas through any part of her body. After being struck by this woman, the outcome would be unimaginable, which could be seen from the wing demons on the ground whose bones had been melt.

"Perhaps, we can make a deal!"

"Deal what?" Tirsiris narrowed her eyes at once.

"You can surrender to us!"

"No way!"

"How about giving me your evolved ptomaine miasma? You give it to me, I will let you go!" Scala revealed a smile.

"You know that?" Tirsiris asked as a killing intent flashed across her eyes.

"You destroyed our plan in Misty Woods last time. This is the second time. If we still didn't know that your ptomaine miasma had evolved once, our Senel Clan would be too incompetent!" Scala

replied as a weird light flashed across his eyes, "I remember that your ptomaine miasma was not that destructive in the underground space of Misty Woods. This time, your ptomaine miasma not only turned it into a dead city, but also caused a great loss to us. If Senel Clan didn't create conditions for you in the underground space last time, your ptomaine miasma would not complete its evolution. Therefore, you leave the ptomaine miasma here, and I will let you go. It's a fair trade!"

"You want my ptomaine miasma?" Tirsiris revealed a sneer as he suddenly threw a vial onto the ground, which was only 10 m away from both of them, "Take it if you want. Can I leave now?"

Watching the vial, Scala became hesitated at once...

...

After landing on a rail being far away from the two people, Zhang Tie found the two people didn't notice him; therefore, he moved his attention to those wing demons hovering above the skyscraper.

Hovering about 50 m above the top of the skyscraper, those wing demons dared not descend. It seemed that they were monitoring Tirsiris in case that she escaped away once again.

While being gazed by a team of demonized puppets, if she did not run faster than wing demons' flight speed, she would hardly dodge away from them. To a certain degree, the demonized puppets were indeed the best scouts of demons.

Zhang Tie counted those hovering wing demons using his index finger and became excited.

There were totally 21 wing demons; a LV 10 wing demon and 20 LV 9 wing demons. However, he only needed to kill another 17 wing demons to make his first fruit of source ripe. What a surprise!

Even though he was incarnated into a beetle, Zhang Tie still swallowed his saliva forcefully.

'How could I kill those wing demons then?'

Zhang Tie rolled his eyes as he glanced over the roof of the shopping mall. Finally, he focused on the main building of this skyscraper which was linked with this shopping mall. These wing demons were flying about several storeys above the top of that main building.

After seeing that Tirsiris dropped a vial onto the ground, Zhang Tie didn't waste time any longer. He flapped his wings and arrived at the back of that skyscraper after making a detour. After that, he elevated his height.

Only after 10 seconds, the small insect had entered a disordered, hidden room on the 22nd storey of the skyscraper through an air vent.

It seemed to be an office storey; however, nobody was inside it now while it was scattered with paper and furniture and broken files which were covered with dust.

The room where Zhang Tie entered was a conference room. There were some broken chairs and a set of sofa. Realizing that nobody was in the room, Zhang Tie instantly entered Castle of Black Iron; almost at the same time, his original body walked out of Castle of Black Iron.

Zhang Tie carried the shell-shaped equipment which was filled with axes while holding 2 axes by his hands. It was pitch-dark in the storey; however, Zhang Tie was not influenced by that because of his dark vision. Instead, it became Zhang Tie's best cover. Zhang Tie licked his lips silently as he fumbled towards the other end of this storey as agile as a civet cat. After opening two half-closed doors, Zhang Tie had already come to an office which contained nothing but some wooden partitions. It occupied more than 1,000 square meters.

When Zhang Tie entered the office, Zhang Tie heard a loud collision from downstairs while the wing demons' shrill shrieks outside the windows of this office grew louder. Two wing demons

even flashed through the floor-to-ceiling windows outside the office.

Zhang Tie revealed a grim look as he immediately came to one side door of the balcony, from where, he could see all the wing demons flying below his eyes while watching the battle on the ground. The distance between them and Zhang Tie varied from 10 m to 100 m.

Based on Zhang Tie's previous spiritual energy, he might find that those wing demons were hovering rapidly; however, based on his current spiritual energy, with the knight's consciousness, he realized that those wing demons were crawling as slowly as a tortoise in the sky.

At such a short distance, these wing demons almost became the dish in Zhang Tie's bowl. Therefore, Zhang Tie just opened the side door and entered the balcony.

At the same time, the side door made a faint "cracking" sound, which aroused the attention of a close wing demon at once. The wing demon noticed that Zhang Tie was revealing a faint sneer...

The moment the wing demon opened its mouth and wanted to utter a shrill shriek had Zhang Tie launched the attack.

"Go die!" Zhang Tie narrowed his eyes as he instantly threw out the 9 axes, including the 2 in his hands and the 7 on his back. If the 9 axes were like javelin boomerangs two weeks ago, now, with the knight's consciousness, Zhang Tie felt like casting a net, an extremely sharp, changing net composed of flying axes.

The moment Zhang Tie launched the attack had the two people on the top of the shopping center realized the abnormal phenomenon below them. As they didn't know who was there, they both thought that it was the opponent's helper. Out of caution, they hurriedly jumped away. At the same time, they raised their heads and looked up...

There were 2 moons, one was semicircular while the other was like a sickle...

Under the moonlights of the two bright moons, Scala instantly saw another 9 moons flying and splitting wing demons' bodies one after another in the sky like spirits.

In the blink of an eye, the fresh blood, headless corpses of wing demons had fallen down from the sky like transplanting rice seedlings into the field. Most of them fell on the top of the shopping center.

The LV 10 wing demon who was farthest from Zhang Tie struggled in vain. Finally, the 9 moons split his body into a pile of fleshes from different directions like butterflies. Before the fleshes fell down had Zhang Tie appeared on the top of the shopping center with a "boom". Watching Scala, Zhang Tie smiled, "Long time no see..."

"Zhang Tie!" Scala said Zhang Tie's name while gritting his teeth.

At this moment, the moons that had cleaned all the wing demons in the sky returned to Zhang Tie's metal shell from a height of more than 50 m like spirits, causing consecutive cracking sounds...

After that, the blood rain fell down...

Zhang Tie would never dare to do that before. He could have those axes fly back in his hands; however, he could not have all the 9 axes fly back into that shell-shaped equipment on his back automatically. With any mistake, for instance, If one ax flew by his neck, it would be a tragedy. Whereas, under the control and domination of the knight's consciousness, it was easy for Zhang Tie to do this. When his physical strength and skills met the requirements, those things which could be easily done by knights were also easy for Zhang Tie...

At the sight of this scene, Tirsiris' eyes brightened up at once. However, Scala contracted his pupils at the same time...

Chapter 659: Chopping a Powerful Enemy

Standing on the top of the shopping center, Scala saw a calm and confident look from Zhang Tie's eyes...

The headless corpses and fleshed of wing demons that fell down from the sky like rain was the best certificate of Zhang Tie's battle force. Scala knew that even he could not kill so many wing demons in such a way in such a short period. Although the ax boomerangs were sharp weapons, Scala had never seen anyone who could use them in such a high realm.

Zhang Tie cleaned all the wing demons, LV 9 or LV 10 in the blink of an eye like slaughtering livestock.

'A guy who was almost killed by me a few days ago could still stand calmly in front of me at this moment. He must have a powerhouse on his back.' Scala felt a bit dangerous. However, he forgot about this hypothesis at once as he didn't believe that Zhang Tie could make any great progress. 'He's promoted to a higher level at most. So what? How could a LV 11 Tirsiris and a LV 12 Zhang Tie defeat me?' Scala mumbled.

'If not Tirsiris who has terrifying voodoo skill and weird movements, I've long caught her. As to Zhang Tie.' Scala sneered, 'His flying axes might be sharp; however, it's still not enough for him to deal with me. But he went downstairs so fast just now that I couldn't see it clearly. Perhaps because I paid too much attention to Tirsiris just now.'

'Zhang Tie's too cunning and dangerous. He might want to stress me by showing himself in this way; after that, he will save this woman.'

The light flashed across Tirsiris' eyes didn't escape from Scala's eyes. After capturing Tirsiris' abnormal look, Scala realized that Tirsiris and Zhang Tie might have long known each other or have any intimate relationship. That was why Zhang Tie appeared in

this way and wanted to save her. 'In Misty Woods, soon after Zhang Tie appeared had this woman arrived to make troubles. This time, when this woman is in trouble, Zhang Tie also jumps out. It seems that they have a special relationship.'

Thinking about this, Scala gradually calmed down. He looked at Zhang Tie, then Tirsiris and thought about killing the two troubles at the same time.

Of course, if Zhang Tie knew what Scala was thinking about at this moment, he would roll his eyes at once. 'As Scala is too smart, he might make simple things complex sometimes.'

Actually, Zhang Tie only thought it was the best time for him to kill Scala. Perhaps Zhang Tie was not sure whether he could kill Scala alone; however, with one voodoo pharmacist on his side, Scala was already dead in Zhang Tie's eyes.

"Hahaha..." Scala burst out into laughter after thinking for a few seconds. He didn't think it was severe after the wing demons were killed by Zhang Tie. Scala slightly adjusted his location to make the three of them form a triangle in case of being attacked from both front and back. Although Zhang Tie's flying axes were not lethal, they were destructive. Therefore, he had to defend them. 'It seems that I'm lucky today. I see two human heroes, the Selnes Eagle and the Selnes Snake, at the same time. If I killed or captured two of you this time, I would get a lot of rewards!'

"Idiot!" Zhang Tie rolled his eyes towards Scala. Closely after that, he told Tirsiris, "Beauty, given that we had a drink at the same bar counter, how about killing this b*stard together..." Zhang Tie then glanced at Scala like watching a corpse, especially paying more attention to his waist and the finger rings, "I don't want to take advantage of you, you can pick his items first, how about that?"

After killing those wing demons, Zhang Tie did not feel bad. Therefore, he became "generous". Additionally, as he had obtained

the items of two knights some days ago, he had a potential greater foresight.

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Scala felt that Zhang Tie was swashbuckling. He faintly narrowed his eyes while revealing a faint sneer. At the same time, he felt being filled with killing intent, 'I've been cheated by Zhang Tie on the day we attacked Mocco City. How could I fall into the same pit for the second time?'

"You're Selnes Eagle?' Tirsiris asked Zhang Tie as she watched him.

"Yup!"

"Can you prove that? As far as I know, Selnes Eagle is a Hua man..."

Zhang Tie scratched his head as he had not imagined that this woman was so meticulous, "Hmm, I was almost killed by Senel Clan last time. Therefore, I used a concealing medicament when I came back to Selnes Battle Theater of Operations this time..." Zhang Tie told a lie, "It's easy to prove it. If we can cooperate to kill this guy, it will be the best proof!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Tirsiris' eyes gleamed as she nodded, "Fine! That ring on his right 3rd finger belongs to me!"

"No problem!" Zhang Tie waved his hand as he replied generously.

Hearing the two people treating him as a dead person and discussing the distribution of his personal belongings, Scala burst out laughing out of extreme fury, "I will see how you two kill me..."

After saying that, Scala launched his attack towards Zhang Tie. In Scala's opinion, it's best to kill the weaker one in such a situation. Additionally, Zhang Tie made him restless faintly; he wanted to prove his judgment using his fist.

The moment Scala moved had the 3 people's battle started...

Compared to that a few days ago, Zhang Tie had a different feeling towards Scala who was rushing towards him with a killing intent.

Several days ago, when Scala rushed towards him, Zhang Tie felt that Scala was moving as fast as a lightning bolt who carried an irresistible powerful qi. At that time, Zhang Tie could not even make any judgment about Scala's next movement and time. By contrast, at this time, Scala's movement and aggressiveness remained unchanged compared to that a few days ago; Scala even became more resolute and decisive; however, in Zhang Tie's eyes, Scala was not that threatening anymore. Besides, Zhang Tie felt that Scala was moving so slow!

In knight's consciousness of Zhang Tie, Scala's movement was not only slow but also resistible. Due to his low speed, he lost his aggressiveness completely. In people's senses, no matter how powerful the opponent was, as long as the opponent was slow enough, he would lose his threat to you, not to mention any aggressiveness. Therefore, the reason that a fat guy was not terrifying while disguising as a ghost in Halloween laid in his frame, which reminded people of his low speed.

The terrifying, powerful LV 14 battle demon could never imagine that he became a silly fat disguising as a ghost in the eve of Halloween in the eyes of a person whom he thought was very weak previously.

When Scala was just 10 m away from Zhang Tie, the LV 14 battle demon's powerful battle qi flew over Zhang Tie's body. When Scala thought that he had killed Zhang Tie, he realized that his battle qi had just passed by Zhang Tie's shadow. However, Zhang Tie had already dodged away from his first attack by striding aside when the battle qi was close to him.

'How could that be?'

Scala almost thought that he was dazzling as Zhang Tie moved

too fast, which even shocked Tirsiris who also moved at the same time.

"Too slow..." Zhang Tie shook his head towards Scala with a sneer.

"Go die!" Scala roared as he released two battle qi. In a split second, he dodged away from a sharp battle qi from his side which was released by Tirsiris. Scala always paid a high attention to any attack launched by that woman. Even if it was a battle qi, it might also contain some rank poison, which could never be touched by his body.

Zhang Tie dodged away from Scala's two battle qi once again. When Scala realized that something was wrong, Zhang Tie had already launched a battle qi towards the part below Scala's heart.

It was so fast that Scala was unable to respond to that. As a result, he could only block it with his punch. As the battle qi rightly stroke against Scala's loophole, Scala had to block it. Whereas, due to poor angle and timing, Scala could only play 30% of his full strength at most.

With a sound "bang", Scala offset this punch; as a result, he retreated three steps back.

Before Scala responded, a rain-like battle qi had fallen onto his body...

At this moment, Scala almost lost his thinking ability...

Zhang Tie moved so fast that Scala thought that he was not facing Zhang Tie but his own father...

Moreover, Zhang Tie's punch skill was extremely sharp and terrifying as each of his punch was launched towards Scala's loopholes and key joints, making him uneasy to deal with...

Perhaps Zhang Tie's battle qi was not as powerful as that of his, however, it was very tricky. Although Scala could break Zhang Tie's battle qi each time, he could still feel an exceptional

destruction even after he broke Zhang Tie's battle qi attack. Gradually, Scala felt his skin being scorched and painful like being pricked by hot red needles. 'Iron-blood Battle Qi' such a battle qi skill flashed across Scala's mind. Only the most famous Iron-blood Battle Qi could be so aggressive across Blackson Humans Corridor.

Scala felt so bad that he almost wanted to spurt out blood. He found that he could only wait to be beaten when Zhang Tie launched his attack. His aggressiveness was greater than Zhang Tie's; however, his speed was slower; therefore, he could not strike Zhang Tie. Nevertheless, Zhang Tie could strike him.

At the beginning, Scala could counterattack Zhang Tie's battle qi attack a couple of times; however, he gradually found that it became more difficult to launch a counterattack. Each time he tried to launch a counterattack towards Zhang Tie, it was like a boor throwing a boulder towards a fly. If he could make it, of course, he could break Zhang Tie's body into parts. However, the problem was that he could not make it. The roof of the shopping center was demolished due to Scala's powerful battle skill. Whereas, Zhang Tie didn't even lose any of his fine hair.

'How could that be? How could Zhang Tie move so fast? How could Zhang Tie find the loopholes in my movements and gestures? His punch skill and battle skill also promoted to a new level. It's impossible for Zhang Tie to gain such a great speed and ability only after a few days. What happened to Zhang Tie during the past few days?'

At this moment, Scala remembered those wild oxen who were torn into parts by agile wild wolves in Selnes Plain. Although wild oxen were extremely powerful with sharp horns, they moved too slowly and were not as agile as wild wolves. Therefore, this kind of animal would always be the food of wild wolves.

Scala found himself a wild ox while Zhang Tie became a wild wolf. Tirsiris was still that terrifying viper. Scala realized that Zhang Tie was able to catch and bite him while Tirsiris kept

moving on the edge of the ring with ghost-like steps. Although Tirsiris reduced her striking frequency, she became more threatening. Gradually, Zhang Tie and Tirsiris became more tacit. At the same time, Scala felt an upsurging stress. In the blink of an eye, he was in a dilemma...

It was not the right moment to ask why; instead, he should consider how to survive himself...

At this moment, a battle qi luster rushed out of Scala's body and reached dozens of meters in height. There was an image of burning magic leopard in the luster...

It was Zhang Tie's first time to see Scala's battle qi totem. Not each cultivator above LV 10 had battle qi totem; instead, many cultivators above LV 10 only had "white board totem".

"We're gonna defeat him. He's asking for help. Kill him as soon as possible before his reinforcements arrive..." Zhang Tie roared as he accelerated his strike...

After 2 minutes, Scala roared as he blocked Zhang Tie's punch. As a result, he flew backward horizontally. With the inertia, he jumped off the roof of the shopping center.

How could Zhang Tie just watch Scala escape under his eyes?

Zhang Tie immediately released his 9 ax boomerangs towards Scala like a huge net, causing thunder-like booms...

Trying his best to buffer from his shocking innards, Scala swept away Zhang Tie's axes with a few punches. However, the ax boomerangs were very annoying, which could not kill him but blocked wherever he arrived. Therefore, he had to treat those powerful axes carefully.

Soon after he swept away the flying axes had Scala felt his right shin numb. Closely after that, he felt as chilly as ice while a fine needle silently drilled out of his shin through the gap of his armor over his shin.

'That woman...'

Scala glanced at Tirsiris while he found a sneer on her look.

Chasing after this woman for so many days, Scala didn't know that this woman could release hidden weapons silently until now. If he fought this woman alone, he would never be wounded by this woman's hidden weapons. But now...

Scala suddenly remembered that the flying axes were completely silent when Zhang Tie tossed out them for the first time, 'But he caused such loud sounds with his flying axes just now. Did he intend to make me perplexed?'

'A voodoo pharmacist's hidden weapon? I'm over. That dead woman...'

Scala's eyes turned bloody at once while he charged towards Tirsiris, "I will kill you..."

The moment he moved had he found that his battle qi was frozen all over, making him faintly stagnated in 0.1 s.

However, such a transient moment was enough for Zhang Tie to find his loopholes. In Zhang Tie's eyes, Scala's face almost turned into dark green in a split second.

"Go die!"

7 Iron-blood Battle Qi broke Scala's helmet and stroke onto his body at the same time.

Scala kept spurting blood out of his mouth. Zhang Tie caught an ax boomerang and flashed through Scala's body as fast as the light...

Zhang Tie moved so fast that he didn't stop until he drew a long trench with the ax on the steel-concrete...

The battle came to an end...

Zhang Tie looked back and found that Scala was watching him. Although Scala was moving his lips, seemingly asking why he

couldn't utter a sound in the end; instead, he was chopped into three sections and scattered on the ground.

'I've killed Scala? I finally have killed Scala?' Zhang Tie became stunned for a few seconds as he didn't believe that he could do that until now...

At this moment, a meteor flashed towards here from afar, which had already flown over the south city wall of Mocco City which was less than 3 miles away from here. At the sight of that light, Zhang Tie changed his face at once. He put away his ax boomerangs immediately. After that, he rushed to Scala's side and took off all the finger rings and valuable items on Scala's corps. Meanwhile, he shouted at the woman, "Hurry, leave out of here, a demon knight is coming!"

Watching Zhang Tie, the woman faintly frowned. Closely after that, her face blushed as a wisp of blood flew out of her mouth corner. After letting out a sigh, she laid on the ground...

'F*ck!' Zhang Tie swore inside.

Zhang Tie rushed to her side and instantly cradled her and ran away...

Chapter 660: Escaped by a Trick

Zhang Tie knew that that knight had already paid attention to this place when he entered Mocco City. However, due to the colorful ptomaine miasma which was covering Mocco City like a dense fog, the knight's vision was covered partly. As a result, he could not see what happened here clearly.

Even for the time being, Zhang Tie knew that he could still not match knights on speed, although his speed was much faster than that of Scala. Additionally, he was carrying a female.

The moment Scala's battle qi totem disappeared had that knight realized that something was wrong as he accelerated towards here abruptly.

Zhang Tie was also moving rapidly. Closely after he cradled Tirsiris had he stridden onto the ground from the top of the 6-storey shopping center with the effect of the ancestral bloodlines that he had awakened and the rapidly moving skill.

The moment he landed on the ground had he sprung up and come to the north of that skyscraper.

The knight headed towards them after flying over the south city wall. Zhang Tie then came to the north of the skyscraper, from where he could cover himself and Tirsiris by that skyscraper and that ptomaine miasma while on the same line with that knight.

In the blink of an eye, Zhang Tie had already rushed out more than 100 m. After that, he picked up a piece of broken tile and threw it towards the low residential area in the block ahead.

The rotating tiles uttered sharp sonic booms like how a powerhouse friction with the air when he escaped at the full speed. With Zhang Tie's delicate throwing skill, the piece of broken tile made two turns along the direction of the alley in the air...

When Zhang Tie threw out that piece of broken tile, he applied a

senior hiding rune on both him and that woman in his cradle. Closely after that, he returned to the foot of the skyscraper in a few seconds along the route that he came from. After that, he jumped onto a balcony of a room on the 3rd storey of the skyscraper while cradling that woman by one hand. The moment he touched the balcony had he covered that pair of obscure footprints with his battle qi.

Zhang Tie entered the skyscraper secretly once again. Closely after that, he rushed upstairs like a curl of smoke. Each step he moved upward would he cover his footprint with Iron-blood Battle Qi.

There were stairs in the skyscraper. Zhang Tie flashed upstairs, one step for a half floor. Although the stairs were covered with dust and some sundries, Zhang Tie could still silently dodge away from them carefully in his dark vision.

Zhang Tie strode over 20 steps and arrived at the 13th floor, namely the middle floor of this skyscraper. He then flashed into a room on that floor and hid there with that woman.

It was a deserted, messy office of a company or a commercial organization which contained some abandoned desks for business. Zhang Tie and Tirsiris hid in the empty space below the desk on the left side the moment they entered the office. Even If someone entered, he could still not easily find Zhang Tie.

When Zhang Tie applied his senior hiding rune to Tirsiris, she actually had already woken up. Although keeping her eyes closed, she could still sense that Zhang Tie was playing a trick who returned to the skyscraper again after leaving out of there.

The moment Zhang Tie squatted down in the empty space of the desk had they became close to each other. Tirsiris was completely sitting on the place between Zhang Tie's lower abdomen and his thigh and was in Zhang Tie's cradle.

"Hurry, put me down!" Tirsiris murmured to Zhang Tie as she

twisted her body in Zhang Tie's cradle.

"Hush..." Zhang Tie made a hand gesture with a solemn look as he pointed at outside and murmured, "Don't move, don't talk if you don't want to die!"

Tirsiris shot a killing intent through her eyes. At the same time, she moved her fingers while one black fine needle appeared in her hand. The fine needle could touch Zhang Tie at any time...

However, Zhang Tie was closing his eyes and quivering his ears. He was evidently observing the situation outside the skyscraper.

At the sight of Zhang Tie's look, the killing intent in Tirsiris eyes disappeared. However, she didn't put the fine needle back. When she wanted to say something, she heard a sharp sonic boom from outside, which landed on the top of the shopping center where they fought Scala just now.

Tirsiris instantly closed her eyes. She even dared not breathe.

Until then did Tirsiris realize the marvel of the secret method that Zhang Tie had applied to her just now. She knew that she was alive while her heart was beating; however, she could not hear her heart beat and that powerful rhythm. Additionally, she felt that the body temperature of her and Zhang Tie had cooled down and became as same as that of the surrounding environment. However, she didn't feel uncomfortable at all.

Tirsiris knew that it ought to be a secret skill which was used to conceal one's body and qi.

With a roar outside, the knight seemed to have found Scala's corpse. Closely after that, another sonic boom occurred while the knight headed northwards.

After a few minutes, with the 3rd sonic boom, the knight came back. After circling a short while around the skyscraper, it landed on the roof of the shopping center. After 10 seconds, the sonic boom headed southwards...

After 10 minutes, when there was no sound outside, Zhang Tie and Tirsiris let out a sigh at the same time.

When the knight arrived here, it indeed chased northwards as Zhang Tie had predicted. After finding no target, the knight returned and checked the skyscraper. However, it didn't find any trace here; therefore, it could only leave out of here. Scala's corpse probably had been taken away by the demon knight. If not, Scala's corpse would finally become a pool of rotten fester which produced ptomaine like the corpses of other demonized puppets.

"Sweetie, can you put away your needle? We're not in the hospital. I don't want to have an injection." Zhang Tie opened his eyes as he glanced at that woman in his cradle.

Zhang Tie didn't know whether this woman had sensed it just now. Zhang Tie felt a strange spiritual wave when the knight circled around this skyscraper for the second time; however, the knight didn't find any problem. It seemed that the senior hiding rune could indeed cheat the spiritual consciousness of the knight to a certain degree.

The woman threw a glance at Zhang Tie. After that, she moved her hands away and concealed her needle at once.

"I've not imagined that you could make a narrow escape even at this moment!"

"It's us. If I didn't escape away, you wouldn't either. As the old saying goes, the safety always lies in the most dangerous place. That knight would never imagine about our trick. Actually, we've not left yet at all!"

"Aren't you afraid that he would come back and search over this place again?"

"He's a knight, not a granny who's cleaning the skyscraper. If a knight indeed wants to search over each room of the skyscraper which consists of dozens of storeys, I will admit that it's really

great!" Zhang Tie answered in a relaxed way as he was not worried about that at all. If that knight really did that, Zhang Tie would flash in Castle of Black together with this woman the moment that knight entered this room and found them. In the worst scenario, he would keep this woman living in Castle of Black Iron for the rest of her life. In that case, as he had saved the woman's life, Zhang Tie would not feel guilty about that at all.

"You're brave!"

"Nothing like that. I was just making a bet. Do you have any other methods except for this one in that case?" Zhang Tie asked as he stood up while cradling that woman. The woman struggled in Zhang Tie's cradle for a while before ordering, "Let me off!"

Zhang Tie instantly loosened his hands, dropping the woman to the ground.

With a "muffled sound..." Tirsiris watched Zhang Tie with a bashful and furious look, "B*stard..."

"You told me to let you off. I'm always selfless. I don't offend woman; neither would I bully people when they are in a disadvantageous state. If not the emergency just now, I would even have a blush on my face when I touched your hand!" Zhang Tie shrugged with an innocent look.

Tirsiris wanted to pick herself up; however, after a faint struggle, her face blushed once again. It seemed that she had not fully recovered in such a short period. After struggling twice, seeing Zhang Tie looking at him with crossed arms, she glared at Zhang Tie as she gritted her teeth, "Pull me up!"

"Doesn't a female need to use the word 'please' if she wants to invite a gentleman for help?"

"Could...you...give...me...a...hand...please?" Tirsiris squeezed out the words one after another with burning eyes.

"It's my pleasure!" Zhang Tie stretched out his hand and pulled

her up from the ground.

After standing up, Tirsiris fumbled over her body and took out of a vial of medicament. She opened its lid and bottomed it up.

Zhang Tie glanced at that medicament before revealing a smile as it was all-purpose medicament...

After watching Tirsiris taking that medicament, Zhang Tie took out that finger ring which he took off from Scala's right middle finger and threw it to Tirsiris without even glancing at it.

Finding that Zhang Tie still followed the agreement that they made before, Tirsiris' eyes gleamed, 'Although this guy is disgusting, he's barely reassuring and masculine.

"Don't you want to know the usage of this finger ring?"

"It doesn't matter. It's just a rare rune finger ring at most. Now that you've told me that this item belongs to you. I will not go back on my promise and rob a woman's belonging!"

Holding the finger ring, Tirsiris became silent for a few seconds before saying, "I want to make a deal with you..."

...

Chapter 661: The Dark Parliament

"A deal?" Zhang Tie glanced at Tirsiris before revealing a jeering smile, "Is there anything on you worth attractive to me? If I wanted it, I've long gotten it!"

"Don't you want to know what I want?" Tirsiris asked patiently.

"Fine, go ahead!" Zhang Tie said calmly.

"Do you know what Three-eye Association want from me?"

"No!"

"Ptomaine miasma. It's a very terrifying poison. It could spread with corpses as the media; it could constantly turn the living things into corpses and make them new sources!"

"Like how Mocco City looks like now?"

"Yup!" Tirsiris nodded. As she had just started to recover, she still looked a bit pale, "Ptomaine miasma is a rare poison, which is barely cultivated. After the battles in Misty Woods and Mocco City, my ptomaine miasma had mutated successfully. It's more destructive to common demonized puppets than before. Additionally, it has a great potential. Besides, it could mutate for the second time. I want to make a deal with you. If you can protect me for the next two months and coordinate with me to complete the second mutation of my ptomaine miasma in Selnes Theater of Operations, I can gift this finger ring to you along with some other benefits, if you like!"

"Why do you prefer Selnes Theater of Operations?"

"There are the most corpses in this theater of operations. The more corpses there are, the more raw materials will be and the more bountiful the gene samples of corpses will be and the more possible the mutation of ptomaine miasma will be!"

Zhang Tie nodded as the entire Selnes Plain had almost become a

land of terror which was piled with numerous corpses of human fighters and demonized puppets. Perhaps this explained why this woman stayed here.

"Why me?"

"It was out of my imagination that you could escape from a knight's chase and kill a LV 14 battle demon with me. You have the ability to make a deal with me!" Tirsiris recovered her arrogance.

"Hmm, I have another question. Who are you? Where are you from? Each voodoo pharmacist is well-known, but I've not heard about you before. I don't remember there's a figure in Blackson Humans Corridor!"

"Is it related to our deal?" Tirsiris faintly frowned as she was dissatisfied with Zhang Tie's question.

"Of course it is. If I promise you, I have to know whom I am working with to complete the mutation of the ptomaine miasma?" Zhang Tie smiled.

Tirsiris became silent for a short while before putting it straightforwardly, "You're right, I'm indeed not from Blackson Humans Corridor. I'm from the Western Continent, a member of the Dark Parliament in Western Continent!"

"The Dark Parliament?" Zhang Tie was stunned. Zhang Tie didn't feel strange that Tirsiris came from the Western Continent. Due to the special profession of the voodoo pharmacist, it's impossible to cultivate a voodoo pharmacist without a great amount of investment and a deep background. According to Zhang Tie's knowledge, this profession originated from pharmacists; only some schools in the Eastern Continent and the Pharmacists Association in the Western Continent could cultivate some voodoo pharmacists. Other places could cultivate one or two voodoo pharmacists at most. Therefore, after knowing that a voodoo pharmacist came to Selnes Theater of Operations, Zhang Tie presumed that Tirsiris didn't come from the Eastern Continent,

but from the Western Continent.

Zhang Tie was not completely right. He had not imagined that Tirsiris was from the Dark Parliament. Zhang Tie only learned something about the Dark Parliament in the Western Continent from some books that were accessible to students at his level when he was in Hidden Dragon Island.

The Dark Parliament was a mysterious and powerful organization. Those who could join this organization were all elites in Western Continent. The appearance of this organization was closely related to the control of Three-eye Association and demons to Western Continent. Before the Catastrophe, the countries in the Western Continent were all heavily-stricken by Three-eye Association clans and shadow demons. According to the historical record, in a period before the Catastrophe, 3/4 of the royal households in Western Continent had the bloodline of shadow demon. Rulers of over half of the countries across Western Continent originated from Three-eye Association. The force of Three-eye Association and demons almost controlled the entire Western Continent from all aspects, including politics, economy, culture and religious system. In that age, human society had been brainwashed too long by Three-eye Association and demons. Anyone, who dared declare that there were other high-end intelligent species besides humans in the world, would be labeled as lunatic and heretic by the mainstream media. If anyone dared reveal the existence of Three-eye Association would he be framed as being a paranoid and a conspiracy theorist or directly disappear from this world.

Demons and Three-eye Association almost locked all the information and messages concerning them. In that age, not even one out of a million people believed that demons indeed existed in this world. Additionally, demons were controlling humans on their back. However, few elites and intelligent people in Western Continent still found the existence of demons and Three-eye

Association and the truth that they were ruling humans. These elites in Western Continent who awakened first then started to form an association secretly so as to resist the ruling of demons and Three-eye Association towards Western Continent, which was the embryo of Dark Parliament.

As of now, the Dark Parliament had already developed into a mysterious and powerful organization in Western Continent, which also hid itself like Three-eye Association. However, few people knew where did its tentacles reach. The relationship between this organization and Three-eye Association in Western Continent had almost been concerning about assassination, death, conspiracy, terror, dark, blood and war during the past 1,000 years.

In Western Continent, the fiercest and the latest collision between Dark Parliament and Three-eye Association happened in the period of the Holy War II, which was known as "Bloody July", also known as "Ten Days of War" or "100-year War"—on July 6th, the 684th year of Black Iron Calendar, the Dark Parliament cleaned all the Three-eye Association clans in 26 countries across Western Continent, which included 9 royal households, 11 clans of presidents, prime ministers and senior officials, 8 millennium noble clans, 6 clans of business giants and 2 pope's clans. Within 3 days, all the clans of Three-eye Association were cleaned by the Dark Parliament, regardless of age. As a revenge, on July 15th of the same year, the powerhouses of Three-eye Association and demons raided the headquarter of the Dark Parliament. This time, one speaker, two deputy speakers and over 30 parliamentarians of Dark Parliament fought to the death. As a result, the Dark Parliament was heavily stricken while its secret headquarter also suffered a destructive blow.

The outcome and aftermath of "Bloody July" were still influencing the situation of Western Continent until 5 decades later. However, the Dark Parliament kept hunting those traitors in

the management of Dark Parliament for 136 years. Nobody knew how many people died during this period.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that he could meet a member of the Dark Parliament. 'Is the Dark Parliament paying attention to the war in Blackson Humans Corridor?' Zhang Tie shook his head as he smiled, 'It's not strange. For those continents and forces that have not been involved with the war, it's normal if they dispatched someone to take a look at the situation of demons in Blackson Humans Corridor. Perhaps someone also came here from the Eastern Continent. For instance, Donder was always staying in Blackhot City and collecting information over there, who didn't leave until the war broke out. Although Donder had left, his organization and force should also dispatch people here to keep an eye on what's going on in Blackson Humans Corridor in the future.'

"How about it, do you agree?" Tirsiris asked Zhang Tie.

"I'm sorry, I cannot accept this deal!" Zhang Tie replied frankly.

After hearing Zhang Tie's reply, Tirsiris became stunned for a few seconds. She had not imagined that Zhang Tie would deny her after asking so many questions. 'This b*stard!' Tirsiris took a deep breath and controlled his fury before asked, "Can you tell me why?"

"It's very simple. If I promised you, I would be in a great danger along with you. I'm afraid of death very much. None of your benefits would be more valuable than my life. The greatest guarantee to my life is my freedom." Zhang Tie told Tirsiris with a smile, "You've hidden a reason for this deal. Actually, you want to get the secret concealing method that I applied to you just now. After killing Scala, if you continued to stay in Selnes Theater of Operations, Three-eye Association and demons would input greater strength to search for you surely. You're now a living target. Therefore it's impossible for me to sustain risks for you with only a bit benefit!"

Tirsiris narrowed her eyes and thought for a short while. She then slowed her tone, "If my ptomaine miasma completes its mutation once more, it will bring a great loss to demons and demonized puppets corps. Don't you think that you should do something for that?"

"It's nothing to do with my business. Ptomaine miasma doesn't belong to me. If it is really such important, the Dark Parliament should dispatch a knight to give you a hand. As a human fighter, I think I've contributed too much to Selnes Theater of Operations. I will be full of confident wherever I go. Therefore, don't regard me as a patriotic idiot. I agree with your stance against demons and Three-eye Association; however, it doesn't mean that I want to risk my life for you. If you need encouragement, I will support you to stay in Selnes Theater of Operations spiritually!"

"You b*stard!" Tirsiris swore as she had not imagined that Zhang Tie was such a timid guy.

"Hmm, thanks for your praise!" Zhang Tie said casually with a shrug.

Tirsiris threw a glare at Zhang Tie as her face became merciless once again. After that, she walked aside. After casually cleaning the floor, she just sat down against the wall with crossed legs and started to recover his injuries. Now that Zhang Tie saved her and didn't offend her when she lost her capability to resist, she didn't worry that Zhang Tie would be disadvantageous to her.

This was where they killed Scala. Additionally, that knight had searched over here. Even though the powerhouses of Three-eye Association and demons wanted to find him and Tirsiris in Mocco City, they would not search here for the second time. Therefore, this place became the safest place in Mocco City. Zhang Tie also wanted to wait here for a while. Even though nothing in Mocco City was worth his nostalgia, if he left out of here now, he might encounter that knight. Therefore, the best way was to stay here for a while. When it was convenient, he would incarnate into a beetle

and fly wherever he wanted.

This room was in the middle storey of the skyscraper which had no windows. Therefore, they were not afraid that light could be seen from outside. It was already deep evening when it grew colder. After throwing a glance at Tirsiris who was dealing with her wounds, Zhang Tie directly removed some wooden slabs and broke an old wooden chair before setting a fire in the room.

The flames soon drove away the coldness in the room. Being close to the warm flames, Tirsiris gradually looked pale.

It seemed that Tirsiris' face looked warmer as she opened her eyes. She found Zhang Tie was sitting beside the bonfire and checking the items that he got from Scala with a money-mad smile. He also smirked now and then, who really looked like a rustic usurer in small countries of Western Continent who had just collected his principal and interest...

With a "Harrumph...", Tirsiris closed her eyes once again, 'How could such a guy be the Selnes Eagle? How could he be the first one who jumped off the city wall and rushed towards the millions of demonized puppets?

When she remembered how Zhang Tie had a pee on the city wall and looked at Zhang Tie's current look, Tirsiris soon labeled Zhang Tie as a reliable guy who was vulgar, cunning, tricky yet would not compromise to demons and Three-eye Association. 'I've not been dropped to the ground since I was born.' Tirsiris gritted her teeth once again as she added one comment to Zhang Tie's label—a rude b*stard!

Chapter 662: The News

Until then did Zhang Tie have a chance to take out Scala's belongings and authenticate them.

Scala wore two finger rings. Zhang Tie threw the one on the right middle finger of Scala to Tirsiris without even looking at it; he kept the one on the left middle finger. After injecting his spiritual energy into it, Zhang Tie revealed a smile.

'Senel members really have good rune equipments.' Zhang Tie thought inside.

Masudra's Protection——this finger ring could increase the recovery speed of the battle qi of the wearer by 15% and the off-body striking distance of battle qi by 8%.

'A rare finger ring that could work on battle qi! It could increase the recovery speed of the battle qi of the wearer and the off-body striking distance of battle qi. It's a quality rune equipment. Besides its strange name, this finger ring is perfect in all aspects. It's special and delicate in shape. An exotic sapphire as large as a soybean was bitten by two grey wolves, which bent their bodies and formed the ring.

The moment Zhang Tie put it on did he feel that his qi sea faintly shocked. A weak current flashed into his qi sea from that finger that wore the ring and established a mysterious contact with his qi sea at once. As a result, the Iron-body Battle Qi became active immediately.

'Nice, what a nice rune equipment!' Zhang Tie instantly exclaimed inside.

At this moment, Zhang Tie was wearing three finger rings, namely the rose finger ring that he obtained from the dead knight, the finger ring of consciousness and Sudra's Protection, the maximal number of rune finger rings that he had ever worn.

Zhang Tie was told that a knight could only wear 4 rune finger rings at the same time. Below the knight, a person could only wear 3 rune finger rings at the same time. If more, the rune finger rings would lose their effects and become sharply weakened due to mutual effects. Therefore, people below knights could only wear 3 rune finger rings at most.

After obtaining Sudra's Protection, Zhang Tie sighed with emotions as he didn't know whether it was because that he had good fortune or these rune finger rings were commonly seen. Zhang Tie had obtained 5 rune finger rings in total. After selling one and gifting one, he still had 3. With one more, he had to consider when to wear these finger rings.

'I wonder about the finger ring of Tirsiris. It seems that the woman is familiar with rune finger rings. Whatever, we've killed Scala. Besides one more rune finger ring, I will have one more Fruit of Brilliance at least. As long as I eat that Fruit of Brilliance will I increase my spiritual energy once again. Additionally, the Fruit of Source of wing demons has been ripe. To the final analysis, I'm the biggest winner tonight.'

Although he killed Scala with the help of Tirsiris, Zhang Tie had a clearer recognition of his battle force. He started to explore his battle style. Furthermore, Zhang Tie realized that it was right for him to consume that Fruit of Bloodline as senior rapidly moving skill, Kuafu Bloodline and Knight's Consciousness indeed raised his battle force to a new realm.

Besides the two finger rings, Zhang Tie also got a storage bag from Scala, which included some vials of medicament, a special copper plate and a secret knowledge.

The copper plate was as delicate as the ID plate of Huaiyuan Palace. It was covered with some beautiful and complex grains and a special pattern which was similar to three crossed tree leaves. However, the metal grains reminded Zhang Tie of the ID code of a difference engine. 'Now that Scala carried it, it must be useful. I

will keep it.' Zhang Tie mumbled.

The secret knowledge was a colorful diamond-shaped crystal which was wrapped with the metal. Commoners who had not seen a secret knowledge above LV 10 before would take it as a special crystal pendant for sure.

After injecting some spiritual energy into the crystal secret knowledge, Zhang Tie saw some bloody Hua characters in his mind——Soul Capture and Seclusion Skill

'A Hua secret knowledge?' Zhang Tie was stunned.

When the characters "Soul Capture and Seclusion Skill" faded away, another 2 lines of words appeared.

——Secret Knowledge from Bloody Soul Temple of Taixia Country.

——This secret knowledge's contents are locked by a secret knowledge. If your spiritual energy could not reach the level of a battle spirit, please don't watch or cultivate it in case of destroying yourself.

Below the above 2 lines were some chaotic information, which were like reading records. It contained that someone wanted to read the contents of this secret knowledge; however, he failed after several times' attempts. Although his spiritual energy improved each time he attempted, he didn't make it.

When Zhang Tie remembered that Scala was still opening his eyes even after being killed, Zhang Tie understood it at once, 'Scala must have obtained this secret knowledge from some place. Although he wanted to cultivate it, he couldn't do it due to his poor spiritual energy. In this age, Hua language became popular. Even though in Blackson Humans Corridor, almost all the top-class figures could speak a bit Hua language. Some of them were even in proficient in Hua language. Therefore, it was not strange if Scala knew Hua language.'

After that message, an image of 15 huge golden locks being locked with each other appeared in Zhang Tie's mind. Zhang Tie had already known that he had to unlock 15 locks using his spiritual energy through the former information before reading and cultivating this secret knowledge. According to the latest records, someone had opened 13-14 locks in the latest times. However, as he failed to open the last one, he couldn't start his cultivation of this secret knowledge as a result.

Zhang Tie glanced at Tirsiris who was closing her eyes in recuperation. He then put away that secret knowledge silently.

'It's not the right moment to cultivate the secret knowledge. If this beauty finds out that there's such a thing in the storage bag, she might have other thoughts. Therefore, I'd better be low-key.' Zhang Tie thought.

"What's that? It seems that you have a nice harvest." Tirsiris asked the moment Zhang Tie put away the secret knowledge.

"It's a secret knowledge called Stormwind Steps. Do you want it? We can exchange!" Zhang Tie disguised to take out that secret knowledge.

"Harrumph, no need!" Tirsiris raised her head arrogantly.

"You must need this. As it's also our common booty, you can have one!" Zhang Tie then threw a vial of medicament towards her from the storage bag.

It was a vial of medium recovery medicament. After catching it, Tirsiris took a look at it before throwing it back to Zhang Tie. At the same time, she said, "No need..."

"Bite the hand that feeds you!" Zhang Tie muttered. This woman's guts might have been wounded by Scala's battle qi. Her spiritual energy and battle qi were dwarfed to a certain degree. Although the all-purpose medicament was good, medium recovery medicament was better at this moment. It was out of Zhang Tie's

imagination that this beauty didn't even appreciate his kindness. 'Whatever, this father gets one more vial of medicament then.'

"What are you mumbling?" Tirsiris who had been talking with Zhang Tie in the Hebrew language suddenly asked Zhang Tie in Hua language

"Hahahaha, nothing, nothing, I mean you're a hero!" Zhang Tie put away the vial of that medicament as he thumbed up towards Tirsiris with a big smile.

Tirsiris became speechless as she could only glare at him before ignoring him.

"I was in recuperation a few days ago. Therefore I don't know what happened outside these days. Can you tell me about that?" Zhang Tie asked shamelessly.

"Why do I tell you?"

"We can make a deal. You tell me what happened here these days, I will tell you where has the most corpses in Selnes Plain!"

"You know that?"

"Don't forget about my honor. I've been trapped by Senel Clan once and escaped all the way here from the north, the area under the control of demons to the south. I dare say that very few people across Selnes Theater of Operations knows better than me about the situation in the north!"

Tirsiris then watched Zhang Tie for a few seconds, "Fine, what do you want to know?"

"Tell me everything that you know, such as how are the human troops that broke out of Mocco City and Sladic City and where have the demons reached?"

"The human troops that broke out of Mocco City and Sladic City encountered the raid of demons corps on the way and suffered a great loss!"

"Demons Corps, you mean that super corps?" Zhang Tie raised his voice at once while he almost sprung up from the ground. It was out of his imagination that the demons corps didn't come out until the human troops broke out of Mocco City and Sladic City and gave a fatal blow to the human troops. After losing the protection of tall city walls, fortifications and city defense equipments, Zhang Tie could fully imagine the outcome of the common human troops in front of that super demons corps in the wild. In that case, it would be useless even though the number of human fighters was 10 times or 20 times more than that of the super demons corps. It was an overwhelming massacre for demons.

The moment Zhang Tie recalled that Reinhardt and many of his friends were in the human troops which broke out of the cities had his heart started to pound.

...

Chapter 663: Separation

Through Tirsiris, Zhang Tie finally knew what happened in Selnes Theater of Operations these days. In one sentence, the human defense line across Selnes Theater of Operations had been collapsed completely. The battle in Selnes Plain, the first wrestle between the allied human forces and demons corps in Blackson Humans Corridor had come to an end with the overall failure of the allied human forces.

The human troops that broke out of Mocco City and Sladic City had been heavily struck by the demons corps while their corpses were covering the wild. The last human troops in the two cities were completely shattered by the blow of demonized puppets. Thankfully, the human airship troops arrived at the critical moment and rescued almost 1 million human fighters from being exterminated by the demonized puppets corps. However, the remaining airship troops were also heavily damaged by wing demons. Finally, they had to retreat southwards together with the ground human troops.

After this battle, the air and ground troops of the allied human forces in Selnes Theater of Operations had completely collapsed. Demons corps and almost 10 million demonized puppets corps were surging 100 miles a day towards the south in an irresistible manner. They had already entered the northern region of Symbian Republic and swept over 10 cities in 2 provinces of that region in a few days. The Symbian Republic was determined to collapse sooner or later.

The collapse of the Selnes defense line was a great blow to the morale of countries across Blackson Humans Corridor. From then on, all the countries in the north of Kalay Mountain Range in Blackson Humans Corridor would quiver facing the sharp force of demons corps. As a result, almost half of the territory of Blackson Humans Corridor would collapse.

At least Zhang Tie didn't think any country among the countries in the north of Kalay Mountain Range could resist the almost 10 million demonized puppets and that super demons corps.

As the old saying went, troops were defeated like a landslide.

Even if Zhang Tie was 10 more times powerful, he could still not alter the current situation.

After hearing Tirsiris' introduction, Zhang Tie frowned and became silent for a short while. Under the reflection of those burning flames of firewood, Zhang Tie's face looked gloomy.

'This guy looks handsome!' Tirsiris made a comment silently when she saw Zhang Tie's clearly-cut face.

"I've already told you what you want to know. Now you tell me what you know!"

After hearing this request, Zhang Tie took a small section of a wooden stick and started to draw on the ground beside the bonfire, "This is south; this is north; this is demons' region; this is Misty Woods; this is Naro River; this is Porakan Mining Area..." Zhang Tie started his explanation after drawing some symbolic regions on the ground, "I escaped all the way from north to south, and I saw most corpses here, here and here..."

Zhang Tie explained carefully. He almost introduced all the situations and terrains of Selnes Plain that he had learned to Tirsiris. Besides, he even told her about the situation in the demons' territory in the north being adjacent to Selnes Plain and where could she hide herself so as to avoid from demons' hunting. These were Zhang Tie's experiences during the past one year in Selnes Theater of Operations.

When Zhang Tie spoke in Chinese, Tirsiris listened to him carefully. Tirsiris was not an idiot, she realized that Zhang Tie was indeed concerned about her through his words.

"You said you saw gravetower demons here?" Tirsiris asked as

she pointed at that place where Zhang Tie drew just now.

"Yup!"

"How many?"

"Dozens at least, right in the periphery of the cities in demons' territory!"

Tirsiris frowned faintly as she continued to ask, "Is there any more of them in the north?"

Zhang Tie then drew a line in the air, "I'm not clear about the other places, at least I didn't see any more gravetower demons along this line!"

"If my ptomaine miasma could be catalyzed by the genes of gravetower, it would be more destructive to demonized puppets!"

"Haha, are you thinking about killing some gravetower demons?" Zhang Tie revealed a smile.

"If you could agree with the proposal that I posed just now, it's actually not impossible..." Tirsiris glanced at that shell on Zhang Tie's back before asking, "Your shell-shaped golden wheels plus my poison, as long as we stayed 200 m away from the gravetower demons, we might do it!"

"Ah? What shell-shaped golden wheels?" Zhang Tie asked with a strange look.

"Don't you know that the weapon on your back is a famous exotic weapon in the Eastern Continent. It's called shell-shaped golden wheels. Few people could be as proficient as you in using this weapon, even in the Eastern Continent." Tirsiris watched Zhang Tie with a dubious look.

"Ahem...ahem...of course I know, erm...I've already treated it as my friend for a long time. I even named it as Sweetie...I've always called it that over the past years. Therefore, I couldn't respond to that when you called its original name..." Zhang Tie, as a Hua man,

felt bashful to let a western female tell him about the name of the weapon from Eastern Continent, although he plundered it from the warehouse of Zhen Clan.

After hearing the name "Sweetie", Tirsiris, although she was a vicious voodoo pharmacist, she still felt her body being covered with goosebumps. At the same time, her look turned weird, 'This guy could drop me to the ground and call a piece of metal with such a disgusting name. Does he...does he...have some strange hobby? It seems that I've not heard any scandal about this guy in Selnes Theater of Operations.'

Tirsiris moved away from Zhang Tie silently. When Zhang Tie was drawing a map on the ground a while ago, she drew closer to him; however, she hurriedly stayed away from Zhang Tie at this moment. It seemed that even the most terrifying voodoo pharmacist was almost like a commoner in some aspect, "Do..do you consider what I said just now?"

Zhang Tie shook his head with a smile, "You have your choice, so do I. I'm sorry!"

After being refused by Zhang Tie, Tirsiris closed her eyes and stayed silent for a few seconds. It seemed that she was thinking about something. She then opened her eyes, "I feel that the hiding rune that you applied to me still works. How long can it sustain?"

"About 3 hours!"

"Hmm, it's enough!" Tirsiris picked herself up with a firm look on her beautiful face, "With the cover of this hiding rune, it's enough for me to leave Mocco City. I want to leave out of here tonight. You're right. Each one has his or her own choice. I owe you. I will pay you back later!"

Zhang Tie had not imagined that woman was as resolute as an iron lady, "Are you going to leave now?"

"I've almost recovered. At least, it doesn't influence my action.

It's a bit safer if I leave Mocco City in the evening. At least I could avoid from the wing demons' hunting. If I leave the next evening, I will lose the cover of your hiding rune and it will be more dangerous. How about you? Where are you going?"

"I want to figure out the situation of the human troop that broke out of Mocco City. I have a friend in Iron Plough Corps. Later on, it depends!"

Tirsiris knew that she could not talk about something deeper with Zhang Tie as they had just known each other. After hearing Zhang Tie's words, she nodded and didn't say anything else. She then turned around and left the room...

Tirsiris then went downstairs and left the skyscraper before rapidly disappearing in a nearby poisonous mist.

'This woman...' Zhang Tie didn't know what to comment about her. He then returned to the bonfire and sat down.

After 10 minutes since Tirsiris left, Zhang Tie entered Castle of Black Iron. He incarnated into that beetle and flew another storeys higher. Then, he silently flew out of a window in the east of the skyscraper. Even if someone was peeping in the dark, he could still not see Zhang Tie flying away from this skyscraper either.

Zhang Tie wanted to leave Mocco City; however, when he remembered that Tirsiris said this ptomaine miasma might further evolve, he flew towards an area of ptomaine miasma below a hidden section of the city wall.

Zhang Tie held his breath and rushed into the ptomaine miasma rapidly. He then teleported a small mouth of air into Castle of Black before flying out of Castle of Black Iron once again.

In Zhang Tie's senses, that beetle didn't feel uncomfortable at all. After obtaining knight's consciousness, Zhang Tie found that he could easily transfer something into Castle of Black Iron from outside using his incarnation as a media. When he wanted to move

things into Castle of Black Iron, the incarnation was like a hand. Just now, he had a handful of poisonous air that contained ptomaine miasma and moved it into Castle of Black Iron.

"Heller, does this poisonous air contain a special virus?"

"Yup."

"Can we help it evolve in Castle of Black Iron?"

"Yes, we can!"

"It's your job then!"

"I will live up to your expectation, Castle Lord!"

After hearing Heller's promise, Zhang Tie became reassured. However, the moment he imagined that the ptomaine miasma would listen to his order completely like basic energy aura yeast had Zhang Tie become excited.

'Of course, I'm not taking advantage of Tirsiris on purpose. Ahem..ahem...after all, the poisonous mist covering Mocco City doesn't belong to anybody. Tirsiris could help it evolve in her method while I have my own method. I will see whether there's any difference between our new viruses later on. '

After leaving Mocco City, Zhang Tie flew southwards...

Chapter 664: Moving Southwards

On the map, Selnes Plain was important because it was an important traffic hub in the north of Blackson Humans Corridor. As long as the demons broke through Selnes Plain, they would be able to surge all the way to the south. Additionally, the demons corps would have more choices on their routes.

After the human defense line in Selnes Plain collapsed, some provinces in the north of Symbian Republic was occupied first. As long as the northern region of Symbian Republic was occupied by demons corps would the south of Symbian Republic and the region of Norman Empire that bordered the Symbian Republic expose to the sharp blades of demons.

In such a battle situation, Blackson Humans Corridor was like a row of Domino cards. After the Domino card of human defense line in Selnes Plain fell down, more Domino cards would fall down consecutively.

Perhaps, the only news which was not worse in this case was that almost all the underprivileged people had started to evacuate towards the south 2 years ago, except for the troops. Even though demons occupied those cities, they couldn't only find people at all. That was to say, the alive human forces were preserved while the source of demonized puppets was restricted greatly.

After leaving Mocco City, Zhang Tie flew into a hidden place in the wild. Zhang Tie had already returned to Castle of Black Iron when it [the black beetle] was still flying in the air. In a split second, the thunder hawk darted out of Castle of Black Iron. Like a magic, Zhang Tie changed the incarnation and surged southwards.

Compared to the thunder hawk, the beetle flew too slow with a too narrow vision.

With the surging spiritual energy and knight's consciousness, Zhang Tie could change his incarnations more easily. Actually, in

the eyes of an onlooker if there was, it was like a beetle suddenly turning into a big bird and flying away. It was like a ghost or a spirit in mythological legends.

After incarnating into the thunder hawk, Zhang Tie flew southwards along the route that he traveled by train for the first time. The human troops which broke out of Mocco City also retreated along this route. On the way, Zhang Tie could see the traces left by the human troops.

The entire railway had been destroyed. Even though the human troops which broke out of Mocco City had already left out of here, they still tried their best to destroy the fundamental facilities in that territory which was going to be occupied by demons and Three-eye Association.

There were blood stains, battle traces and the traces left by troops on the ground; however, Zhang Tie could not see any corpse.

Zhang Tie knew that those corpses were not taken away by kind-hearted men but by demonized puppets corps as their food. With the example in Mocco City, the demons knew that those corpses, if were left here, might become new poisonous sources and pose a threat to demonized puppets corps.

After leaving Mocco City for an hour, Zhang Tie had already been more than 200 miles away from Mocco City. At this moment, he saw the first city being occupied by demons in the Symbian Republic in the air.

The human city had been burned into ruins. In the evening, the greater part of that city was smoking and charred. Some sparkles had not died out yet. At the sight of this scene, Zhang Tie knew that the human troops in this city were ready to burn the city before the arrival of the demons. Perhaps, the only mission for the garrisons here was to burn the city and retreat as fast as possible instead of resisting before the arrival of demons, because Zhang

Tie didn't see any trace of fierce battle outside the city.

Zhang Tie saw another 4 cities being burned down like this city after he deepened 700 miles in the Symbian Republic. Numerous villages were burned into ruins while black smoke was rushing into the sky and sparkles were spreading all over.

More and more demonized puppets appeared under his feet. A few remaining human troops were hiding in the wild and among mountain ranges. Zhang Tie didn't know whether they were the troops which broke out of the frontline of Selnes Theater of Operations or the garrisons of those cities. Zhang Tie found 5-6 remaining human troops, each of which contained 200 to 1,000 people.

Watching these sparse human troops, Zhang Tie could only wish them good luck. These human troops would face a lot of troubles no matter whether they were going to be guerrillas or preparing to evacuate. As to their future, it depended.

'This is how the war goes. Sometimes the strength of one person, hundreds of persons even thousands of persons is too trivial. Each people could only struggle for his own destiny.' Zhang Tie sighed inside before being spirited up once again.

At the sight of a huge demonized puppets' camp on the ground in front of him, Zhang Tie silently landed on a hidden place before turning into the beetle. After applying a senior hiding rune to the beetle, he flew towards the military camp.

After being applied with a senior hiding rune, the beetle's qi would be as trivial as a mosquito or a fly, which would never attract others' attention at all.

Soon, Zhang Tie arrived at that demonized puppets camp. After penetrating through the dense barrier and numerous demonized puppets, Zhang Tie circled around the camp and found a big tent in the middle of the military camp. He then drilled inside through the gap between the curtain and the vent on the top of the tent like

drilling in an underground tunnel. Only after drilling 1 inch inside had he felt bright in front when he could see everything in the big tent clearly.

Zhang Tie saw some braziers, two tables, a map on the back of the main table, a sand table, two rows of chairs on both sides, two weapons racks with various weapons on them in the tent and two rows of guardians on both sides of the door outside the tent; however, he saw nobody in the tent.

Zhang Tie then quietly lurked in the tent and waited patiently.

At this moment, Zhang Tie had no idea what to do. Therefore, he just stayed here for some useful information.

After being applied with a senior hiding rune, the beetle lurked and looked dead.

...

After 2 hours, it turned bright outside while the eastern skyline turned white. After one night's torture, he finally welcomed a new day.

Zhang Tie waited there silently as he predicted that someone would enter the tent when the day completely broke one more hour later.

Zhang Tie had not seen those who entered the tent. However, he knew that those who ruled these demonized puppets corps were also clans of Three-eye Association like Senel Clan in the north region. If Zhang Tie saw these people in another place, he must have chopped them. However, it was not the right moment for him to show off his battle force. Therefore, Zhang Tie just listened to their talk.

Additionally, given their qi, Zhang Tie judged that they were all powerhouses above LV 10, two of them were even as powerful as that of Scala. Therefore, Zhang Tie realized that this clan of Three-eye Association had a deeper background than Senel Clan. After

all, Senel Clan's root was only Titanic Duchy; however, there were more than one country which was larger than Titanic Duchy in the north region. Zhang Tie had already seen two clans of Three-eye Association in Mocco City; plus those in Sladic City, there would be at least 4 clans of Three-eye Association which cooperated with demons corps.

Those who were in the tent seemed to wait for someone as they were just whispering to each other. However, Zhang Tie could still capture some useful information from their talks. Therefore, he had a clearer understanding of the battle situation.

More than 10 minutes later, a team of guardians in full armors with double swords on their waists entered the tent in tidy steps. They then rapidly stood inside on both sides of the tent. Seeing those guardians, those people who were in the tent rapidly stood well in two rows solemnly and quietly.

"Here arrives the Clan Head..." With a loud sound, a 50-odd man in a greenish-white face and brilliant armor entered the tent while being accompanied by a robust elder. He then sat in the main seat while the elder sat on his side. The man then waved his hands to ask all the others to take a seat.

"Gar, do you have any latest news from the frontline?" The man in the main seat opened his mouth with a casual look.

"Head, there was a news last night. The vanguard corps had already arrived at Deland City. Deland City is a huge city. The human garrisons didn't abandon the city and escape; instead, they united some remaining forces to fight us. I'm afraid that the vanguard corps would not take Deland City without suffering a loss!" One man of the two rows replied respectfully.

"Deland City is a key town in the north of Symbian Republic. If they abandoned this city, our vanguard corps would be able to break in the capital of Symbian Republic in the next. It's reasonable for the human garrisons of Deland City to struggle a

while. Since they broke the human defense line in Selnes Plain, Isaac Clan had been smooth all the way to Deland City. It's not bad for them to have some trouble in Deland City!" The man in the main seat said...

Chapter 665: A Super Lurker

The conference proceeded over 10 minutes in the tent. It was about the battle situation between the demons corps and human corps and the internal affairs of the clan of Three-eye Association. Zhang Tie gained a lot of information on one side.

"Have you figured out the reason why Scala of Senel Clan stayed in Mocco City?" The man in the main seat suddenly asked while Zhang Tie became spirited at once.

"Yes, that voodoo pharmacist being granted the title of Selnes Snake by the allied human forces did not escape together with the human troops that broke out of Mocco City; instead, she stayed in the rear end. After Mocco City was broken through, Scala kept his eyes on that woman to obtain the seed of ptomaine miasma. The woman's ptomaine miasma is very destructive after one round of mutation. At this moment, commoners and common demonized puppets could not enter Mocco City at all. It's completely ruined." Another person interrupted.

"Senel Clan is excessive. It's our Elvis Clan's rear-end corps which is responsible for all the matters in the rear end. If that voodoo pharmacist is still in the rear end. It should be us who capture that woman!" A man in armor and helmet suddenly strode one step out of the row and told that man in the main seat in a muffled voice, "If the head issues an order, I promise to get the seed of the mutated ptomaine miasma from that woman before Scala finds her..."

Until then did Zhang Tie understand that these clans of Three-eye Association were not on the same side. They had complex interest disputes. In front of rights and interests, they would never retreat.

"Head, please consider Dylan's suggestion carefully!" Another young man strode out of the row. Compared to others, this young

man looked a bit thinner and grimmer, "Ptomaine miasma is a poison that could only be controlled and released by voodoo pharmacists. There's no voodoo pharmacist in Senel Clan; therefore, Scala wants to get the seed of the mutated ptomaine miasma and gift it to Demon General so as to get a reward from Demon General. It's said that Koz has been stagnating too long on a 5-star battle spirit. The reason he didn't promote to a knight was that he had not formed his Chakara. If Senel Clan gifts the mutated ptomaine miasma to Demon General, as a reward, they might request a Star's Pill from Demon General. Of course, it's better if our Elvis Clan rather than Senel Clan could get a Star's Pill. With a Star's Pill, we will have one more knight in a couple of years."

"Star's Pill? Demon General? Unrivaled Poisonous Battle Qi? Knight's Chakara?" Zhang Tie was shocked by those Hua terms. What a precious information!

The man in the main seat nodded silently. At this moment, the elder on the man's side suddenly put his hands into his sleeves and closed his eyes. After 10 seconds, the elder opened his eyes. He then inclined his head and whispered to that man in the main seat, who then revealed an amazing look with a frown.

"Head, please issue the order!" The guy called Dylan moved one step forward as he hammered his armor and said in a muffled voice, "I promise to bring back Scala and that woman together with her seed of mutated ptomaine miasma!"

"No need, Elder Casilla has just received a message that Scala is dead!" The man in the main seat waved his hand.

'Dead?' All those at present were stunned, 'Scala is not a cat or dog, who might die at any time; he's a LV 14 battle demon and a member of Three-eye Association.'

"How?"

"Being chopped into three sections. A human powerhouse appeared in Mocco City and killed Scala with that voodoo

pharmacist. Scala's corps had been moved to the command by a knight being employed by Arthur Clan!"

"A knight being employed by Arthur Clan moved Scala's corpse in the command? It sounds weird..."

"It seems that Senel Clan is not the only clan that wants to exchange seed of the mutated ptomaine miasma for a Star's Pill from Demon General. Now that Scala has been killed, the knight who doesn't want to be the scapegoat could only take Scala's corpse back and explain the reason to Arthur Clan. Arthur Clan only has one clan knight now. As the knight is already old enough, Arthur Clan has the same desire for Star's Pill."

"Is this a conspiracy of Arthur Clan? They might have killed Scala on purpose so that they could have a reasonable excuse to get the seed of ptomaine miasma."

"Arthur Clan is not that silly. They dare not challenge the order of the entire Three-eye Association and the bottom line of Demon General. Even if they dare do that, it's not necessary for a knight being employed by Arthur Clan to sustain such a high risk when he doesn't need a Star's Pill at all!"

"It depends. If Arthur Clan gets the seed of the ptomaine miasma while sustaining no responsibility, even though Senel Clan had the same plan, they would have no idea about that!"

Those people at present started to discuss. Hearing their discussions, the man in the main seat nodded, "You're right. But you missed one point. The human powerhouse and that voodoo pharmacist who killed Scala were not caught by Arthur Clan. They've already escaped away from Mocco City. They were not caught by the knight of Arthur Clan, do you know what does this mean?"

Everyone inside the tent became silent in a split second, closely after which they took a deep breath.

Now that the knight being employed by Arthur Clan had expressed that Scala was killed by a human powerhouse and that voodoo pharmacist, it indicated that the knight had seen them. Everyone clearly knew how great their battle force would be if they could escape under the eyes of a knight. No matter how complex and special was the situation in Mocco City, the one who could escape from a knight's chase would be a battle spirit at least, who almost promoted to a knight, just like Scala's dad.

"Battle spirit, a high-end battle spirit who at least ranks 4-star!" The young man who spoke just now mumbled.

At this moment, even the one who urged to take back the seed of the ptomaine miasma became silent.

Zhang Tie saw everything that happened in the tent. It was out of his imagination that the news that Scala was killed could spread to this place so fast. The elder who was sitting on the side of the head ought to be making long-distance communications with remote-sensing crystals just now. What Zhang Tie had not imagined that he was mistaken as a high-end battle spirit who had killed Scala and escaped from a knight's chase. Of course, Zhang Tie didn't want to show himself and explain it to these people, 'The more confused are these people, the safer am I.'

"Our Elvis Clan don't need to join this event. It's not cost-efficient for us to dispatch a rare knight to seek for two people across Selnes Theater of Operations. However, we can dispatch some subordinates to pay attention to this event. If there's a confirmed message, we can have Elder Casilla solve the battle as soon as possible!" The man in the main seat suggested as the old man on his side nodded faintly.

"Soon, we will occupy the Symbian Republic completely. Spirit up. Be familiar with the troop these days. After taking the Symbian Republic, Demon General's next target would be Norman Empire!"

"Ah? Head, has the Demon General issued his command?"

"Yes, Demon General has issued a clear command last night. Our Elvis Clan's corps will become the vanguard corps on the left. Norman Empire is the most powerful country in the north of Blackson Humans Corridor. Take the battle situation in Selnes Theater of Operations as an instance, many countries and corps were completely exterminated; however, two corps of Norman Empire, namely more than 400,000 people still broke out. Even though they were covered with human airship troops and a Hua knight appeared to save them at the critical moment, their battle force was still underestimated!"

"Yes!" Everyone standing up nodded forcefully as they were rubbing their fists.

"Norman Empire is a big pie. It contains a lot of human resources and plentiful materials. A few years ago, being influenced by the demon disaster in Sun Dynasty, many civilians in this country could not evacuate towards the south. Less than 1/2 of its total population have evacuated until today. As long as we could take Norman empire rapidly, the population of our demonized puppets would expand at least 2 times in a few days. The wealth, land and women in this country are even greater than that of 10 Titanic Duchy. As a vanguard, the more meritorious deeds we make this time, the more benefits will we have in the future. Am I clear?"

"Clear!" All those at present answered in unison. Many people panted as a greedy and crazy qi meandered in the tent.

"Good, some small squads of escaping human fighters are mobilizing in the rear end. You can prepare to exterminate them today as a warm up..."

Closely after that, the man in the main seat started to dispatch tasks to his subordinates——*** was responsible for the ***region with *** demonized puppets...

Zhang Tie bore in mind those orders and the names of those people who received the orders. After that, a dauntless whim

flashed across his mind...

Chapter 666: A Fish in Troubled Waters

After knowing that more than 400,000 people of Norman Empire escaped successfully, Zhang Tie became reassured at once. Zhang Tie knew that Reinhardt, the tough man, would be safe for sure if not being in a dilemma.

Of course, this was a good news for Zhang Tie. However, it also indicated the fierce battle between the troops that broke out of the demons' encirclement and that demons' corps. Norman Empire dispatched three trump card domestic corps to Selnes Theater of Operations this time, which included about 1.5 million people. However, less than 500,000 people of them survived. At least one corps was lost when they broke out. Given this battle, Zhang Tie realized the power of that demons' super corps of only 100,000 members. In the wild, common human corps could never defeat that demons' corps, even though they had 10-20 times the number of soldiers of that of the demons' corps. It would be a massacre the moment they encountered in the wild. No human corps across Blackson Humans Corridor could defeat that demons' super corps.

The one who ruled the demons' super corps and guided the battle situation across Blackson Humans Corridor was the "Demon General" as was said by the clan members of "Three-eye Association". 'The "Demon General" must be a very powerful demon knight. He could make his battle qi more powerful with the rank poison. This is a very important message, I have to pay attention to that when I meet him.'

After the conference came to an end, everyone left the tent, making it empty once again.

10 minutes after that knight left, the black beetle moved and drilled out of the vent at the top of the tent and landed on the back of the main seat. It then raised its head and bore that huge military map behind the main seat in mind. After that, it flew towards the vent and drilled out of the tent.

At this moment, the demonized puppets camp had been boisterous. After receiving the orders, the young elites of Elvis Clan were reviewing their troops. They were ready to warm up in the rear end by exterminating the small squads of human troops.

Totally 9 young elites of Elvis Clan had received the tasks. Zhang Tie aimed 5 of them, whose ranks varied between LV 10 to LV 13. At the sight of them, Zhang Tie felt like watching ripe fruits hanging on the small tree. If he did not give Elvis Clan a deep lesson with this chance, Zhang Tie would feel sorry for himself. He could make a contribution to the humans in the holy war and increase his battle force by doing this, why not?

As to those guys whom Zhang Tie felt being above LV 13, Zhang Tie didn't intend to attack them. In this battle, he needed to kill his opponents in high speeds and efficiency before leaving right away. He had to leave before the Elvis Clan responded to it. 'Just let them survive a few more days. No matter what, the holy war is not my thing alone. It's enough to make those b*stards of Three-eye Association to feel bad within my ability.'

...

One day later, at noon, the corps of more than 30,000 demonized puppets had poured in a remote, uninhabited village...

This mountain village was about 200 miles away from the camp of the demonized puppets corps of Elvis Clan.

A thin young man in armor was riding a mutated magical horse and glancing at the woods behind the mountain village with a gloomy and disdainful look.

"It's said that 500 human soldiers escaped to this mountain?"

"Yes, your excellency Kassie. Do you need us to search over the mountain? The mountain woods is not large. As long as we spread our troop, we will be able to drive them out of the woods in two days at most!"

"No need. What do you think we take so much kerosene for?" The young man riding on the magical horse sneered as he continued, "They are just hundreds of rabbits. No need to search over the mountain. We only need to set a fire in four directions of this woods. When those people escaped out of there, we will hunt them down. Then, we can go back. Don't always fight and bleed if we can solve it using our intelligence. Although these demonized puppets are nothing serious, we'd better save them. No matter what, they are the property of our Elvis Clan!"

"Yes, sir. Your excellency Kassie. With your intelligence, you will be able to accomplish great deeds in Elvis Clan!" The lackey on his side instantly flattered.

The young man then smiled, "Only clans like Senel Clan which have no background yet struggle for superiority would be disordered. I felt Scala was an influential figure who could have had a bright future; I've never imagined that he could lose his life only for a Star's Pill! That guy must not have heard about the wisest Hua saying!"

"Which saying?" The lackey asked.

"As long as you keep a green mountain, you will not worry about having no firewood in the future. Compared to one's life, Star's Pill is nothing. We will soon occupy the entire Blackson Humans Corridor. Won't we get a Star's Pill by then?" The youth said with an arrogant and pleasant look as he guided the lackey, "If you want to be something in the future, you have to study the Hua culture. There's a reason for the power of Hua people!"

"Yes, yes, yes. When we get some Hua slaves, I will find some of them to teach me Hua language. I will study Hua culture like your excellency, Kassie. If I could match 1/100, even 1/1,000 of your excellency on intelligence and knowledge one day, I will be satisfied..." That guy said with a big smile.

"You can go to work now!"

"Yes, sir! Yes, sir!"

The young elite of Elvis Clan riding on the magical horse watched the guy and left with a sneer. He knew that this guy was only good at flattering and following rules. However, by having this guy on his side, he could enjoy a rare "spiritual massage" for sure so that he would be active and pleasant spiritually. This might be the reason that great emperors were usually accompanied by one or two chancellors who were good at flattering them...when he didn't need them in the future...

He would...

However, there was no "would" anymore as a javelin flew out of the woods from 300 m away...

...

Only after walking a few steps had that guy who flattered Kassie heard a loud "bang" and the neigh of the magical horse. He turned around and saw Kassie who was boosting just now, lying on the saddle while his head had already disappeared. Fresh blood and brains splashed everywhere. The lackey then touched his own neck which was wet and bloody...

After staying there still for 3 seconds, the guy finally understood what happened.

"There is an assassin, right in the woods..." An extremely shrill voice sounded.

Closely after that, the demonized puppets that had poured into the mountain village rushed into the woods, scaring birds off in the woods. However, they found nobody inside the woods. After a few seconds, a medium-sized thunder eagle rushed into the sky and disappeared in the blink of an eye...

...

Only after an hour later...

A squad of 1,000 human fighters couldn't stand a team of 100 demonized puppets wandering in front of them and killed them. Closely after that, the greater part of the troop of demonized puppets appeared and started to chase after this squad of human fighters. They chased them all the way into the flourish grassland. As a result, the squad of human fighters suffered a loss of 1/3 of its total population. They were surrounded at once. The eyes of the commissioned officer of these escaping human fighters turned bloody as he roared with a rolling battle qi totem of a LV 8 king snake. At the same time, he rushed towards the humans among the demonized puppets with his machete...

...

In a split second, a glaring, widely opened head flew off; at the same time, the LV 8 king snake disappeared while he fell down spurting blood out of his neck...

"Regimental commander..." all the other human fighters were driven furious as their eyes turned bloody. Closely after that, they accelerated towards those demonized puppets dauntlessly with weapons, "Revenge for regimental commander..."

An elite of Elvis Clan put back his long sword icily before sneering towards those human fighters who were rushing towards them like a lion watching a cluster of ants. He didn't even feel like joining the battle himself as he issued the order impatiently, "Solve it in 2 minutes..."

At this moment, nobody noticed that a red-faced disheveled tough man suddenly charged out of the weeds and rushed towards them while shouting, "Revenge for the regimental commander..."

The tough man moved very fast while shouting loudly. He even rushed ahead of those human fighters. With a machete in hand, he soon chopped the two rows of demonized puppets into pieces before rushing towards the young elite.

The young elite had not imagined that the tough man was a

ferocious fighter.

"Kill him..." The elite of Elvis Clan issued the order after throwing an icy glance at that tough guy.

After receiving the order, a LV 9 fighter on his side rushed out. The moment he touched the tough man had his head been sent flying in the air.

Watching his subordinate's head flying off, the elite suddenly realized that something was wrong as he changed his face immediately.

"Who are you?" After drawing his long sword out of his sheath, he launched a sharp sword qi towards that tough man by air...

"Pay me for our regimental commander's life..." The guy exclaimed as he accelerated by at least 10 times faster and arrived in front of that elite of Elvis Clan right away. At the same time, he waved his punches and machete and covered all the guys within 20 m in a split second. The others could only see a shadow flashing everywhere while heads rolled off accompanied by shiny blades and crisscrossed battle qi and hear that elite of Elvis Clan roaring constantly.

After 20 seconds, that tough man had jumped away as he raised his machete and rushed towards the other demonized puppets behind them, "Pay me for our regimental commander's life..."

The elite of Elvis Clan was freezing like a statue with a long sword in hand. At the same time, he rolled his pupils and watched the corpses of his subordinates all over the ground and his waist where the storage bag had disappeared. He seemed to look back at the tough man; however, the moment he moved his neck had he exploded fully like a balloon in a hot day, splashing his fresh blood over those humans' faces who had just rushed in front of him.

The demonized puppets were in a chaos after losing their commander while their encirclement was broken out.

"Brothers, follow me, kill..." A commissioned officer of the human fighters finally caught such a rare opportunity as he summoned all the human fighters to break out of the loophole.

Until they dispensed those demonized puppets completely had a question occurred to their minds, 'Who's that tough guy who waved his machete? I've not seen him before!'

"Brothers, we cannot stay here anymore. Neither could we go back to our country. As there are numerous demonized puppets in front of us, I plan to find a place to be a bandit. As long as we're alive, we will fight demons and those lackeys of demons for revenging our dead brothers and regimental commander. Do you like to follow me, brothers?" The commissioned officer asked those soldiers.

"Deputy regimental commander. From today on, we will follow you. You will be our boss. Now that we've been to Selnes Theater of Operations, we have not thought about going back..."

"Fine..." The deputy regimental commander was very resolute. After letting them take a short rest and recover their physical strength, he led them towards the lush woods in the north...

...

The thunder hawk continued to fly towards another place...

...

One day later, the man in the main seat growled painfully like an injured wild wolf, "Who's that? Who's that? Who's framing our Elvis Clan? I will chop you into pieces..."

Four top young elites of Elvis Clan, who had a bright future and could have been the rulers of this vast land, were killed in one day. This was a great blow to the entire Elvis Clan. One of them was killed by a javelin; one was killed by a paladin hiding in the escaping human fighters when he was exterminating them; one was passing by a bridge; however, the bridge suddenly collapsed,

causing him fall into the water. When he was found floating on the water, he had already been a corpse. Another one died in a more exaggerating way—he slept overnight quietly. However, when he was found the next morning, his head had been split off from his neck...

If only one elite had died suddenly, it might be an accident or the deed of a powerful enemy; however, four of them died in one day; therefore, Elvis Clan realized that it was a conspiracy.

'Knight, only a knight could be able to frame Elvis Clan in four places in one day without exposing himself. Additionally, that guy must be keeping an eye on Elvis Clan.' Such a whim occurred to everyone in the tent.

'If it was a human knight, he would not just target the young elites below LV 13; instead, he would target those young elites of Elvis Clan who had greater responsibilities. He might even target all the young elites of Elvis Clan. Of course, the human knight might play a trick to arouse our doubts. But there's another possibility—the knight might be from Three-eye Association. Common knights being employed by clans of Three-eye Association dared not do that. Only clan knights or elders would choose to suppress Elvis Clan properly in advance in this way for the sake of their own clans.'

"We've not even taken down the entire Blackson Humans Corridor yet and you're already thinking about sharing the profits..." The man in the main seat sneered, "Well, you started the war first, don't blame me..."

At this moment, none of the members of Elvis Clan could imagine that all of these were done by a LV 11 five-star battle master——What a Marvel!

Castle of Black Iron, incarnation which was a secret method of "Great Wilderness Sutra" and the exotic, powerful abilities that he had cultivated led to a marvelous qualitative effect——a terrifying,

mysterious destruction that could never be imagined or predicted by anyone else. This made Zhang Tie's opponents extremely agonizing.

At this moment, Zhang Tie didn't know that the other clans of Three-eye Association were scapegoated by Elvis Clan. If he knew that, he would have laughed out loud. As he had received some information about Senel Clan from here, he wanted to take a look over there; therefore, he incarnated into a thunder hawk and flew towards the southeast.

Compared to the other clans of Three-eye Association, Senel Clan had lost more talents.

'I've already killed 3 top elites of Senel Clan, except for Koz, he's a clan elder. But it's not enough. The atrocious crimes that Senel Clan has made could not be paid until this dirty clan of Three-eye Association is exterminated...'

'All the b*stards of Three-eye Association have to die. For me, Senel Clan deserves its extermination the most...'

Chapter 667: Waiting for the Opportunity

As a key town in the north of Symbian Republic, Deland City was the first tenacious human city after the demons corps broke the human defense line in Selnes Plain.

It took 3 days from the first demonized puppet was killed by the steam ballista of Deland City to the city was fully collapsed by demonized puppets corps.

In the 3 days, more than 200,000 demonized puppets were killed outside the city. However, for a human city without a knight, when a knight of demons' vanguard corps destroyed a city gate of Deland City last night with powerful battle skills, the demonized puppets flooded into the city, which indicated the collapse of this city.

Among the flames which rushed into the sky across the city, the garrisons of Deland City fought demonized puppets overnight. In the latter half of the night, the battle calls stopped in the city while all the brave soldiers of garrisons died. From then on, Deland City fell into the hands of demons.

At dawn, the vanguard corps of demons had left Deland City and charged towards the next human city like a swarm of locusts. At dusk, more than 3 million demonized puppets of the middle corps of demons arrived at Deland City and took a rest inside the city temporarily.

The vanguard corps, middle corps and rear corps of demons kept a marching distance which required a bit longer than half a day. Like three terrifying monsters, they rushed forward and tore apart human cities and countries one after another like tearing pies.

When Koz, the head of Senel Clan entered Deland City, he looked gloomy and cold with a killing intent. Even his sons Battie and Houghs dared not to stay close to him.

Since he saw Scala's corpse, Koz had been looking like wanting to eat human flesh. He glared at everyone. He even killed 2 of his subordinates due to a trivial matter. As his favored son, Scala's death was a great blow to Koz, even the entire Senel Clan.

Koz had more than 20 sons, 5 of which were most talented and were able to carry the future of Senel Clan. However, 3 of them died in less than a year——his youngest son Cambo died in the underground space of Misty Woods; Rouben died in Tokei City, the nestle of Senel Clan which had been run for many years. Even Scala, the successor of Senel Clan was killed in Mocco City.

What was worse was that Koz saw the tumble-down future of Senel Clan. Even if Koz himself promoted to a knight, his offspring would still be unable to carry out the responsibility of this clan. 'Houghs is smart; however, he could not carry responsibility for the future of the clan; Battie is brave and fierce; however, he is always jealous and not calm enough in troubles. Although Houghs and Battie have better cultivation qualifications than commoners, it is still difficult for them to be knights. Even though in Three-eye Association, those weak and useless clans would also be gradually pushed aside and lose more and more things. Now, the hope of Senel Clan doesn't lie in the next generation, but in the 3rd generation. If I became a knight, I would have time and resources to see the third generation to grow up; however, as long as something bad happened to me, Battie or Houghs, Senel Clan would deteriorate into a weak power in Three-eye Association and would gradually be eaten by other forces.

...

As a key city of the Symbian Republic, Deland City was much more prosperous than Mocco City. It was once the charcoal dealers' garden in the Symbian Republic. Even though it had experienced a war and big fires, the greater part of this city was still preserved.

When the members of Senel Clan entered Deland City, they

didn't notice that a trivial black beetle followed them in after a few minutes.

Of course, the beetle was Zhang Tie. After receiving some information, it was not difficult for him to find the members of Senel Clan. However, he didn't have a chance to attack them. Therefore, Zhang Tie just followed the three targets of Senel Clan——Koz, Battie and Houghs into Deland City.

When the members of Senel Clan entered Deland City, they settled in a manor that had not been destroyed by fire. One hour later, Zhang Tie also settled in a rockery of the manor.

In the evening, Koz called Battie and Houghs into his room. Zhang Tie then gazed at the inside of the room quietly on a parasol outside the room.

Besides Koz, Battie and Houghs, the elder being employed by Senel Clan also sat in the room.

When they saw Koz and Elder Quentin, Batty and Houghs hurriedly showed their sincerity to them.

"Father, Elder Quentin..."

Until then did Zhang Tie know the name of the elder being employed by Senel Clan.

"I've negotiated with Elder Quentin just now. I have one thing to tell you." Koz said icily, "From today on, you two have to report all of your private schedules to me or Elder Quentin in advance until we completely occupy Blackson Humans Corridor. Without our consent, you'd better stay in the camp. Don't stay too far away from me and Elder Quentin! Our Senel Clan has spent too much for this holy war. As long as you could survive, you would have much brighter future than today. Am I clear?"

Battie and Houghs then exchanged a glance with each other as they lowered their heads at the same time, "Clear!"

"You can leave now!" Koz waved his hands with a frustrated and

fatigued look.

Battie and Houghs then left...

After hearing his words, Zhang Tie started to grumble inside instantly. He had not imagined that Koz, the old man, could be so cunning and cautious——The moment Scala died had he paid special attention to protect the remaining two talented sons. 'It's difficult to kill them then.'

Battie's and Houghs's bedrooms were on two sides of that of Elder Quentin. At the sight of such an arrangement, Zhang Tie could do nothing but swear inside.

'Do I leave now and wait for a chance to settle with Senel Clan in the future?' Zhang Tie asked inside.

'Be patient. Many good opportunities are waiting. Patience is a virtue!' Zhang Tie warned himself after thinking for a few seconds.

Zhang Tie then stayed there silently...

...

On the second early morning, more than 3 million demonized puppets of the middle corps nearby Deland City set off once again. The corps lasted dozens of miles in length and marched all the way towards the south along the route of the vanguard corps. The moment Zhang Tie landed on the materials in a vehicle had he moved southwards together with Senel Clan and demons corps...

Chapter 668: Towards South

In only 10 days, the vanguard of demonized puppets corps had already swept the greater part of the territory of Symbian Republic. Following the middle corps of demonized puppets, Zhang Tie witnessed the collapse of human cities one after another.

Deland City, Perigourd City, Edeline City, Somibay City, Holbech City, Kozlian City and Reay City...

All the above cities were once prosperous human cities. None of them were worse than Blackhot City. However, when the middle corps of demonized puppets arrived, many cities were burned into ruins. When passing by those deserted villages and towns, fields and numerous corpses, Zhang Tie was deeply impressed by the cruelty of the holy war and its harm to humans in the past 10 days.

After taking Deland City, the demonized puppets corps didn't meet any large-scale regular resistance on the way towards south anymore. All the human cities had been deserted or burned into ruins before the arrival of the contingents of the demonized puppets. Even the entire Symbian Republic had become unmanned. Women and kids had evacuated 2 years ago; soldiers also evacuated after the human defense line in Selnes Plain was collapsed; especially after Deland City was collapsed, the remaining human troops in the Symbian Republic became completely disappointed. As a result, nobody would like to stay in this city and wait for the arrival of the demonized corps.

The combined forces of the corps of almost 10 million demonized puppets and that super demons corps were irresistible.

Speaking of that super demons corps, Zhang Tie finally witnessed it during the past days in Holbech City.

Zhang Tie didn't know how to describe the demons corps. He was shocked when about 100,000 LV 9 demon fighters appeared in

front of him.

Before the demons corps appeared, Zhang Tie saw a great batch of at least 4,000-5,000 wing demons hovering above Holbech City like a cloud. Only after the batch of wing demons arrived at the air territory of Holbech City in less than 5 minutes had that super demons corps appeared in the horizon which rolled towards the city like a black flame.

Without arousing an earthquake or any loud battle calls, the contingent of almost 100,000 LV 9 demon fighters just flashed at the foot of the city wall of Holbech City like a hot wind blowing from afar. When the wind stopped, the formation of about 100,000 demon fighters stood still like steel mountains silently. However, facing such an unrivaled qi, the contingent of about 1 million demonized puppets gathering outside the city wall were scared to move backwards.

At that moment, all the members of Senel Clan and Arthur Clan who ruled the middle corps were welcoming the super demons corps outside the city. At the sight of this scene, the face of each one of them turned pale, including that knight who was employed by Senel Clan.

Even Zhang Tie, in the incarnation of the little beetle, who was lying on a brick on the top of a wrecked bartizan, was also shocked by such a power.

If a LV 9 iron-armored demon was in front of him, Zhang Tie would just ignore it; if 10 LV 9 iron-armored demons were in front of him, Zhang Tie could solve them easily; if 100 LV 9 iron-armored demons were in front of him, Zhang Tie would feel stressed; if 1,000 iron-armored demons were in front of him, Zhang Tie would turn around and escape right away. If 10,000 iron-armored demons were in front of him, even a knight would avoid from them, not to mention Zhang Tie. However, there were almost 100,000 LV 9 iron-armored demons in front of him. Zhang Tie didn't know how many commissioned officers ranked LV 10 to

LV 15 were among them. However, Zhang Tie learned it from the members of Clans of Three-eye Association that there were 6 demon knights in this super demons corps under the rule of the demon general, although one of which had been killed in Selnes Theater of Operations.

'How do I resist such a powerful super demons corps?' Zhang Tie compared all the other corps that he had heard and seen before to this super demons corps and found it was unrivaled across Blackson Humans Corridor. Any human corps in front of this super demons corps could do nothing but be slaughtered, even if they outnumbered the demons; because that sharp blade formed of LV 9 iron-armored demons could easily break out the encirclement of human corps and escape away.

Perhaps humans corps could encircle this super demons corps with outnumbered armored troops in a specific narrow environment before giving them a heavy blow with the coordination of the airship troop. However, the collapse of human defense line in Selnes Theater of Operations had indicated that this ideal battlefield and situation would never appear. Selnes Theater of Operations once gathered the most powerful human airship troops and most human armored vehicles. So what? The two predominate armed human services were dragged in a bottomless mire only by the wing demons troop and the demonized puppets corps. Demons were not idiots. They would not stand there and wait for you to beat them after a proper deployment. Conversely, the demon general of this super demons corps was even more smarter and cunning than those most famous human generals.

The wing demon troop served as the barrier and eye of this super demons corps while the corps of numerous demonized puppets served as the shield and tentacles of this super demons corps. This super demons corps always loomed behind that barrier, eye, shield and tentacles, which would give human corps a fatal blow at the critical moment.

Like now, after the demonized puppets corps broke the human defense line in Selnes Theater of Operations, it divided into three parts and marched all the way towards the south. This super demons corps loomed weirdly among the vanguard corps, middle corps and rear corps of this demonized puppets corps. Even though the members of clans of Three-eye Association didn't know about its whereabouts. They only knew that this super demons corps under the rule of the demon general would always stay less than 300 miles away from one of the three demonized puppets corps. Sometimes, this super demons corps would completely get rid of the demonized puppets corps. They were just commanding the military actions of the demonized puppets corps. Nobody knew where they were.

Besides, Zhang Tie found one rule about the whereabouts of this super demons corps—they never made camp in cities; even in Holbech City, this super demons corps also encamped about 100 m away from the city wall of Holbech City.

Hua military experts usually described a powerful troop as follows: when they moved, they were as rapid as the wind and lightning bolt; when they slowed down, they were as dense as the woods; when they plundered, they were as aggressive as the fire; when they remained still, they were as firm as the mountain; when they hid themselves, they were as mysterious as the sun and moon in cloudy days. After watching this super demons corps, although Zhang Tie would not like to accept and admit it, he knew that this super demons corps was the troop that could match the description of the best among all the troops that Zhang Tie had seen.

The moment Zhang Tie saw it had Zhang Tie enlightened that no human troops could defeat this super demons corps unless one of the human troops was composed of the same number of LV 9 human fighters. Based on the battle experience in Selnes Theater of Operations, only human troops composed of LV 9 or above human fighters could defeat a troop composed of LV 9 or above

demon fighters. The forces who were most destructive to this super demons corps in Selnes Theater of Operations were not airship troops, armored troops or other human troops, but those squads of demon hunters and paladins who loomed in Selnes Plain.

About 3,000 iron-armored demons were killed by demon hunters and paladins in total. However, the other human corps and troops only caused a casualty of about 1,000 iron-armored demons.

Zhang Tie knew that the collapse of human defense line in Selnes Theater of Operations would give a huge blow to the current human corps establishment system for sure. He could find the loopholes in the current human corps establishment system, so did others. The former division standards of human corps had become meaningless; perhaps in the future, human corps were only divided into two forces, one was used to deal with demonized puppets; the other was used to deal with the regular army of demons. Demonized puppets corps would be defended with high city walls, powerful steam ballistas, armored vehicles and white phosphor gel bombs, which could also pose a great threat to regular demons corps. Even though those human soldiers above LV 2 could operate the weapons. By contrast, only human fighters above LV 9 could deal with regular demons corps; even though a squad, a battalion or a company of human fighters above LV 9 would be more effective than a common corps composed of hundreds of thousands of common human soldiers.

In order to defend the super demons corps, common human corps had to hide in "Iron Tortoises[1]" which were driven by steam; however, field forces that could wrestle with the super demons corps under the rule of human knights who could move as fast as a lightning bolt on the battlefield were more destructive. They didn't need to be outnumbered, but they should be elites. Only in this mobile way could they curb demons...

Chapter 669: Stancy City

When in Holbech City, Zhang Tie was closer to the demon general, he even wanted to fly into the camp to take a look at the demon general. However, Zhang Tie finally abandoned this thought. After having the knight's consciousness, Zhang Tie clearly knew how powerful was a knight's consciousness. Therefore, he didn't feel like risking his life; additionally, Zhang Tie heard that the demon general was not a common knight.

It was indeed too foolish for Zhang Tie to risk his life in order to take a look at someone.

Although the death of his incarnation would not kill him directly, according to the description on the "Great Wilderness Sutra", it would cause a great damage to his original body as well; in the worst scenario, he might become a plant man. After thinking about it for a short while, Zhang Tie felt it being not worthwhile for him to do that, 'I only need to know that it's a powerful demon knight. If there's a chance, I will see it for sure; even if I cannot see it forever, I won't lose a fine hair.'

'I'd better pursue something "closer to real life", for instance, how to kill the three b*stards of Senel Clan.' Zhang Tie considered at that moment.

The super demons corps encamped outside Holbech City overnight. Before daybreak, they had disappeared. On the second morning, the middle corps continued to march southwards; in a few days, Kozlian City and Reay City collapsed too.

Speaking of Senel Clan, what made Zhang Tie depressed was that Battie and Houghs were always staying in the vision of Koz and Elder Quentin in the army of demonized puppets these days. He could not even fly close to them, not to mention killing them. It was okay if an insect followed the members of Senel Clan; however, if it always followed them, it would arouse their

attention sooner or later.

Elder Quentin had a knight's consciousness, the basic ability of which was to keep everything in mind the moment he saw it. Zhang Tie was sure that if he was noticed twice by Elder Quentin in different cities, he would have a big trouble. Therefore, Zhang Tie always kept over 100 m away from Elder Quentin these days when he gazed at Senel Clan members. He almost didn't appear in the positive vision of Elder Quentin. In this case, it would be more difficult for Zhang Tie to kill Battie and Houghs.

On April 15th, the 895th year of Black Iron Calendar, rainy...

On this day, the army of the middle corps of demonized puppets arrived at Stancy City...

When Stancy City entered Zhang Tie's vision, it was heavily raining. This city had also been destroyed by humans before the arrival of the army of demons. However, compared to other human cities, this city was more completely destroyed by the garrisons. It was like having been demolished by "developers", a special powerful Hua profession before the Catastrophe in the legend. The half-collapsed city walls and exposed broken steam pipelines and disordered concrete structures were more eye-catching in the heavy rain. The heavy rain, while falling down, causing a drizzling mist which looked like smoke rings out of the mouth of one fickle guy and ridicule towards the army of demons...

Compared to those cities which could still be available or renovated after being burned to ruins or destroyed, this city had been completely destroyed. What was left was just building craps erecting in the wild.

On the incomplete city walls, the big red, painted words were also becoming especially eye-attractive even in the heavy rain.

"B*stards of demons, go eat f*rt. This f*ther won't leave anything to you!"

...

"Sons of bitches of Three-eye Association, this father is leaving now; go clean your asshole and wait for this father to come back..."

...

"Some public toilets are still available in the downtown; this father tells you, retarded sons, remember to keep clean. Don't relieve yourselves everywhere..."

...

There were so many similar slogans. Even some of them had been erased by people, many of them were still left.

These days, Zhang Tie had seen too many deserted human cities. Only when he caught sight of this city did his eyes brighten up. It was really a wonder to see so many "inspiring" slogans and such a completely destroyed city.

"B*stards, who left these words. If I caught you, I would peel you off and soak you in a lacquer..." A furious sound drifted from those people who were riding demon horses in front. Judging from the infuriated sound, Zhang Tie knew that it was Battie. Even though he didn't see Battie, Zhang Tie could still imagine how angry Battie looked.

"Battie, if you can take a look at that intelligence these days, you will know that the commanding general in charge of the defense of this city is called Mathew. It was Mathew who issued the order to demolish this city and leave these words. Mathew is alone. He has no family members. Even if you caught him, you could only peel him off and soak him in the lacquer; instead of soaking all of his family members into the lacquer!" Houghs said.

After Scala, the would-be "successor" of Senel Clan was killed, Houghs became more "active" these days.

"Houghs, what do you mean?" Battie asked furiously. Even idiots could hear the meaning of Houghs. Battie had not imagined that he

was blackmailed by Houghs only because of a casual grumble.

"Nothing, I just reminded you out of kindness!"

"B*stard!"

The moment Houghs wanted to satirize Battie, Koz glared at him and Battie icily. Quivering once all over, they instantly lowered their heads and stopped quarreling.

"Clean all of these slogans after encampment, I don't want to see them tomorrow!" Koz sent an order.

"Yes, sir!" Someone replied at once.

After hearing Koz's sound, Zhang Tie silently exposed his head out of a small hole of the wooden horizontal beam on the top of the vehicle drove by two uni-horn black oxen and glanced at Koz once again...

In the heavy rain, all those on demon horses were wearing raincoats, except for Koz and Elder Quentin. The falling raindrops were blocked away by their protective battle qis. 'How cool and brilliant are they to be protected with battle qi in the heavy rain!' Zhang Tie drooled silently...

'As long as I promote to LV 14, I will be able to form protective battle qi.' Zhang Tie hesitated when he realized that his cultivation had been prolonged after following Senel Clan for more than 10 days without any harvest...

Chapter 670: An Encounter

'Should I continue to follow Senel Clan members until I get a chance or come back to exterminate this clan when I'm powerful enough?' Zhang Tie thought.

'It's indeed a tricky problem. Although incarnation has many benefits, it also has shortcomings.'

'During incarnation, my original body would enter a marvelous state like hibernation of some animals or trance of convalescence. Like falling asleep, my original body doesn't need to eat or drink in 1-2 months. The only trouble is that I cannot cultivate in this state.'

'Although "patience" could bring me some chances, it would take me a great amount of time.'

'If I spent more than 10 days in cultivation, I might further improve my battle force. I could read the endless true words of the "Great Wilderness Sutra" on the 4th storey of All-spirits Pagoda for more than 600,000 times, which indicates that I've finished half of the work to activate the 4th storey of All-spirits Pagoda. If I spent more than 10 days to light surging points, I could at least light 2 surging points with the effect of the leakless fruits. That means I will be closer to LV 12 great battle master.'

'I've not eaten the ripe fruit of source of wing demons. Neither have I started to cultivate the "Soul Capture Forbidden Skill" of Bloody Soul Temple from Taixia Country that I obtained from Scala. If I focused on those iron-armored demons, I might find a chance to kill enough LV 9 iron-armored demons and get a fruit of source of them.'

Zhang Tie became perplexed when he hid in the hole. If he kept acting like this, he might not even find a chance to exterminate Senel Clan even when the demonized puppets corps occupied the entire Blackson Humans Corridor, 'How long will it take, one year or two years?'

When Zhang Tie was considering this question, he heard whispers of two clan warriors of Senel Clan on both sides of the vehicle, who were responsible for escorting vehicles of grains and weapons.

"Is that Tripoli, the capital of Symbian Republic ahead of Stancy City?"

"Right. After passing by Stancy City and tiding over Niecon River, we will arrive at the capital of Symbian Republic!"

"Pitifully, given the information from the vanguard corps, it seems that Tripoli's current situation is like that in Stancy City. All the resistible forces in the Symbian Republic have retreated to Norman Empire. They keep retreating southwards. None of them dare to block our army!"

"Ho...ho...that's great. We only need to chase after them. I'd like to see where they could hide."

"It's boring. We don't have a sense of conquest. We've not obtained any booties for a long time. Neither did we see any fresh, beautiful women..." The speaker swallowed his saliva at this moment before continuing, "I really recall those days in Titanic Duchy!"

"As long as we are fast enough, I don't believe that all the people can evacuate from this continent. Because of demon disasters, even the civilians in Norman Empire have not fully evacuated!"

"Therefore, we have to take Norman empire; then, we will obtain manpower resources, food, beautiful women and a great amount of wealth!"

"Heh, heh, heh..."

After hearing these words, Zhang Tie made his determination. 'Before the demons corps arrive at Norman Empire, if I cannot find a chance to kill Senel Clan members, I will leave them and improve my battle force by eating fruits first. I would never hang on the

same tree of Senel Clan to death. After improving my battle force, I'll have a lot of chances to deal with Senel Clan in the future.'

'It's nothing serious even if I failed this action. Even the god would not allow one to be always smooth and successful.'

The moment Zhang Tie made the determination had he become relaxed. He then laid in the small hole and watched the heavy rain outside.

In the eyes of that insect, the scene was utterly different from that in people's eyes. They were not raindrops, but dense rain bullets. Each rain bullet was as large as its head. Like shells, each of them would cause a pit on the ground. Those fine dust and grits rose and fell. After a short while, the ground had become an ocean while numerous rivers and lakes came into being. Being baptized by rain bullets, those wild plants and tiny grasses were shaking with full rhythm. It seemed that they were communicating with this world in a bizarre way...all that in Zhang Tie's eyes formed a marvelous scene and brought Zhang Tie into an exotic realm.

How could people see such a marvelous scene!

Even Zhang Tie's new home was fashionable. He chose his temporary settlement in a junction on the top of a materials vehicle, which was hidden, safe and waterproof. If not someone climbed on the top of the vehicle and demolished it, nobody would find such a small hole at all. While he was staying in this small hole, he recalled the tree hollow where he lived in Wild Wolf Valley.

If there was no demonized puppet or war, these days' travel was unforgettable for Zhang Tie for sure. Even walking the same route, the world in the eyes of an insect was also utterly different than the world in the eyes of a person. Zhang Tie, in the incarnation of the little beetle, felt pretty fresh in a new world.

This was the marvel of life.

In the eyes of every life, even an insect, this was a different wonderful world full of possibilities and vitality.

'Who else has the right to deprive the other lives to sense this fresh and wonderful world?'

...

Suddenly, the material vehicle parked. Closely after that, the vehicle quivered a few seconds while someone jumped off it and unveiled the waterproof cloth over the vehicle. He started to unload those items from the vehicle in the heavy rain. At the same time, it turned noisy outside the hole.

The army was going to encamp here.

Those senseless demonized puppets could stay overnight as long as they huddled together. They would eat everything they saw on the way here. However, for those members of clans of Three-eye Association and their lackeys in the demonized puppets corps, they had to pitch tents at least. Of course, the common human members of clans of Three-eye Association would at least eat some dried rations during the march period; however, those like Battie, Houghs and Elder Quentin maintained high standards in food, drinking and living even during the march period.

Zhang Tie once thought about poisoning those b*stards of Senel Clan as it was the most convenient way for him to kill them; however, he found that the major figures like Koz, Quentin of Senel Clan were very meticulous in daily food. Before starting meals, they would have special people taste the food. Besides, their dining wares, including the glasses, vessels, knives and forks were able to identify poisonous substances. Therefore, the poisons that Zhang Tie carried didn't work anymore.

When the noises outside the hole turned smaller, it almost stopped raining. When the night fell, Zhang Tie drilled out of that "temporary settlement" on the top of the material vehicle. After that, he popped out his wings and started to "inspect" the near

environment.

Usually, the material vehicle was parked in a hidden place in the rear of the camp. That temporary campsite was separated from the dense demonized puppets with barriers. The tents of Battie and Houghs were on both sides of the tent of Elder Quentin. Koz's main tent was also close to them. When Zhang Tie flew out of the hole, he saw the two guys walking in the main tent together with Elder Quentin and a liaison officer of Arthur Clan, another clan of Three-eye Association which controlled the middle corps.

Arthur Clan originated from Verof Federation of 17 human countries which collapsed first in the north. In the past 100 years, three federal presidents came from this clan. Besides, this clan controlled the largest military-industrial complex in Verof Federation as the biggest noble clan in Verof Federation. Who could imagine that such an influential clan could be a member of Three-eye Association? The reason that demons corps could take Verof Federation rapidly was closely related to Arthur Clan. Arthur Clan had much deeper background than Senel Clan. The knight that Zhang Tie killed was a knight employed by Arthur Clan. After that knight "disappeared", Arthur Clan dispatched another clan knight whom Zhang Tie saw after he killed Scala in Mocco City.

Now that the liaison officer of Arthur Clan was there, it indicated that they ought to be negotiating about the march route tomorrow in the main tent. Zhang Tie had eavesdropped such talks sometimes; however, he didn't get any valuable information from their talks; additionally, he was even afraid of exposing himself. Therefore, Zhang Tie didn't want to do that once again.

They encamped in the south of Stancy City. It seemed to be a river in the distant as Zhang Tie could hear gurgling sound of water. He then flew towards that river.

It was a great river, which was wider than 200 m. Due to heavy rain, the water near the bank was a bit dirty. It seemed to be an

iron bridge over there previously; however, it had been completely demolished now. There were only two piers on two ends.

The iron bridge was replaced by more than 10 chain bridges above the river, which were paved with planks being linked with iron wires. Perhaps it was hard for commoners to build chain bridges above such wide river; however, it was very easy for a corps with knights. Heavy equipment such as armored vehicles might not be able to pass chain bridges; however, common vehicles and horses could easily pass them.

At the sight of the firm chain bridges, Zhang Tie had abandoned his thought—to kill them when they pass the chain bridges.

'Won't I find any chance to clean Senel Clan members? Do I have to wait until the future?'

With a depressed mood, Zhang Tie flew along the bank for a while before returning to the encampment.

Of course not. There were always unexpected things in this world.

Before he reached the encampment had Zhang Tie heard a thunder-like sound which contained an unrivaled aggressive qi, "Who's Koz, the owner of Senel Clan?"

The moment Zhang Tie heard this voice had become stunned because he was familiar with this sound. Zhang Tie remembered that he might have heard it somewhere. At the same time, a solemn and dignified face loomed in Zhang Tie mind...

Elder Muray, Huaiyuan Palace...

Zhang Tie quivered all over as he almost fell down from the air, 'Is that him?'

After recovering his composure faintly, Zhang Tie hurriedly rushed back towards that encampment from where he had just left...

Chapter 671: The Unrivaled Power of Elder Murray

When Zhang Tie arrived at the camp, he saw Elder Murray standing still about 20 m in the air while releasing a powerful aggressive qi and looking down at the camp.

Zhang Tie flapped its wings and silently landed on a eucalyptus tree over 100 m away. After that, he held his breath and gazed at the scene over there.

The camp of Senel Clan was a bit disordered while numerous demonized puppets were flooding towards the camp.

At this moment, Koz and a knight being employed by Senel Clan walked out of the main tent. The moment Quentin caught sight of Elder Murray had he walked into the air one step after another like there were stairs in the air and gazed at Elder Murray from 50 m away.

Some bolts were shot towards Elder Murray right away from some heavy crossbows. However, Elder Murray just ignored them. Like chasing away flies, he casually waved his arm, causing the bolts fly back at a faster speed. After flying over 100 m, they exploded the two warriors of Senel Clan who were holding the heavy crossbows, followed by thunder-like sonic booms. From the beginning, Elder Murray didn't look aside. Elder Quentin was also glassy-eyed like having not seen Elder Murray killing people in front of him.

At the sight of this scene, Zhang Tie swallowed his saliva on a distant tree forcefully, "It's too powerful! The casual wave could cause bolts fly back as powerful as his javelins, which could kill any fighters below LV 12 immediately."

"You're Koz?" Elder Murray asked Quentin icily.

"I'm Quentin, the elder being employed by Senel Clan. Who are you?"

"Zhang Muray, Huaiyuan Palace!" Elder Muray replied with a calm, loud voice.

After hearing this answer, Koz who had just walked out of the main tent slightly changed his look; Elder Quentin's look also turned solemn at once.

"May you tell me about your intention here?" Quentin asked carefully and slowly. At this moment, Quentin expected to hear the words "pass by"; pitifully, Elder Muray's reply shattered his hope at once.

"Senel Clan once framed Zhang Tie, apprentice of Huaiyuan Palace. Of course, his elder would come here to revenge for him; otherwise, others would doubt that our Huaiyuan Palace is too weak to protect its own apprentices. I only need to take away Koz's head today. Why are you here?" Elder Muray asked calmly.

In the distance, a knight of Arthur Clan was flashing towards here as fast as a lightning bolt.

"Kill him..." Before Elder Quentin opened his mouth had Koz's voice spread across the military camp.

...

Before Zhang Tie recovered his composure from Elder Muray's shocking words had the terrifying, fierce battle started.

When Koz uttered "Kill", he had already started to move rapidly. As a result, Elder Muray instantly focused on him while narrowing his eyes...

Almost at the same time, a fiery battle qi totem rushed into the air like a signal bomb from Elder Quentin, which was extremely brilliant in such a deep night and could be seen clearly within 100 miles. This indicated that the knight being employed by Senel Clan had gone to all lengths at the beginning of the battle.

At the same time, numerous subordinates of Senel Clan inside and outside the camp triggered their long-distance weapons, some

of which were powerful mobile beehive crossbows and drag and drop heavy mechanical ballistas towards Elder Muray.

The faces of the great batch of demonized puppets being closest to the camp who knew nothing about death and fear had turned grim...

...

Closely after the word "kill", Koz had already been 50 m away...

At this moment, Quentin had already formed a powerful Knight-level long-distance strike...

Numerous bolts had already been shot out...

Those demonized puppets being closest to the camp had already raised their steps and prepared to rush towards here...

A brilliant longbow had appeared in Elder Muray's hand, which was almost as high as that of Elder Muray. Even though Zhang Tie had been widely opening his eyes, he still failed to see how it appeared in Elder Muray's hand, not to mention the look of the longbow. In the evening, the longbow was emanating brilliance like a weapon composed of light. Elder Muray was striding forward and drawing the bow in the air...

At the sight of that longbow, Quentin changed his face at once while his battle qi totem quivered a while and almost collapsed...

...

Closely after the word "him", Koz had been more than 100 m away and disappeared in the numerous demonized puppets...

Quentin's powerful Knight-level battle qi finally came into being while a wolf-sized battle qi charged towards Elder Muray. Soon after launching this strike, Quentin rapidly retreated towards the other direction at the speed many times faster than that of Koz.

Numerous bolts were close to Elder Muray's body...

The long light bow in Elder Muray's hand was like a full moon.

The moment he unstrung the bow had the camp of demonized puppets become bright like a sun rising in the dark. Zhang Tie felt white all over in front of his eyes...

All those bolts being close to Elder Muray were crushed completely. The wild wolf battle qi flowing off Quentin's hands was like a snowman falling into the magma, which was destroyed at once. At the same time, a beam of light flew off Elder Muray's longbow and caught up with Koz.

The tents and demonized puppets were all vaporized by this beam of light at once...

With still a dumbfounded and unbelievable look, Koz had disappeared in the beam of light.

At the sight of this scene, the aggressive knight of Arthur Clan in the distance instantly turned around and escaped right away...

...

When Zhang Tie recovered his composure, he found a great chaos in the demonized puppets camp.

After triggering his long crossbow, Elder Muray chased after Elder Quentin and disappeared from Zhang Tie's vision...

There was a 1,000 m long terrifying burning mark from where the longbow was triggered, causing half of the tents in the core of the camp of Senel Clan to disappear.

Koz disappeared, along with his sons, Battie and Houghs. Zhang Tie saw two heavily broken items on the ground where a lot of tents had been cleaned. Zhang Tie could barely identify their previous looks, one of them was Battie's ox-horn shaped helmet, the other was Houghs' long sword.

Zhang Tie recalled that the bolt triggered by Elder Muray rightly penetrated through the main tent, from where Koz and Quentin had just drilled out. When Elder Muray suddenly arrived, it seemed that Battie and Houghs were still in the tent. Koz might

want to protect them by leaving them inside the main tent at the critical moment. However, everything happened so fast. Only in a few seconds, everything had come to an end. Battie and Houghs didn't even have time to respond to it.

Koz thought he was just facing a knight; however, he forgot that the knight came from Zhang Clan, Huaiyuan Palace...

Zhang Tie had not imagined that what he failed to do after following Senel Clan for more than 10 days was solved by only one bolt of Elder Muray in less than 30 seconds. After the Koz, the head of Senel Clan and the two excellent successors were killed, Senel Clan was exterminated.

What a knight!

'The grand dinner that the poor always dream about might only be the common food what the rich felt not like eating at all. What I couldn't do might just be a matter of choice for others.' Zhang Tie concluded.

Zhang Tie was deeply impressed by the brilliant longbow and the bolt that had been triggered. Until then did Zhang Tie realize why Elder Muray was bad-tempered as was said by everyone in Huaiyuan Palace. Whenever he launched an attack, he would cause a great casualty...

What made Zhang Tie feel more complex inside was Elder Muray's words "Senel Clan once framed Zhang Tie, apprentice of Huaiyuan Palace. Of course, his elder would come here to revenge for him".

At this moment, the estrangement between Zhang Tie and Huaiyuan Palace faded away in Zhang Tie's mind at once.

'What a Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace!'

Zhang Tie took a deep breath before flying off the twig. Soon after he flew off the camp and came to a hidden place had he incarnated into the thunder hawk and rushed to the height of

about 1,000 m by flapping his wings. At the same time, he darted towards the direction where Quentin left for at the speed ten times faster than that of the beetle according to his memory.

Quentin escaped towards the east.

Zhang Tie kept chasing after him until the daybreak. He didn't know where he had been. However, he didn't see Quentin and Elder Muray on the way at all. Finally, he stopped in front of a vast ocean where Zhang Tie knew he lost his target...

Chapter 672: A 1,000-Mile Misty Ocean

No matter how lucky he was, he could not encounter a dying knight every time. Therefore, it was not strange if he lost his target.

After adjusting his mood instantly, Zhang Tie flew along the coastline.

'Quentin might have turned when he flew eastward a while. However, I kept flying eastward; therefore, I lost my target.'

'Will Elder Muray catch up with Quentin?' Zhang Tie didn't know about that. At least he had not seen battle traces between knights on the way here. The knight's realm was always covered with a mysterious veil for others. Quentin might have a way to protect his life.

Zhang Tie couldn't think through why a brilliant long bow suddenly appeared in the hands of Elder Muray last night, why Quentin suddenly changed his face after seeing the longbow and slipped away as timid as a rabbit after a hasty strike. It seemed that Quentin had long known that the longbow was an unrivaled weapon. As he knew that he could not defeat Elder Muray, he chose to retreat. So was the knight from Arthur Clan. After seeing Elder Muray killing Koz in the blink of an eye, the knight of Arthur Clan also hurriedly turned around and escaped.

Zhang Tie didn't know whether it was worth seeing such a shocking scene after following Senel Clan jubilantly for more than 10 days.

Zhang Tie had not gained any new fruit; neither did he kill anyone. However, the strike of Elder Muray opened a gate for Zhang Tie at once, allowing him to peep many things that he had not imagined through the gate.

In Zhang Tie's eyes, Koz was a powerful guy, who was very

cunning and hard to deal with. Even Zhang Tie himself had fallen into his trap. Zhang Tie didn't know when he could kill such a powerful enemy. However, Elder Muray made him disappear only with one punch. Therefore, Zhang Tie reached a conclusion——In the eyes of knights, all those below knights were ants.

'I have to be a knight like Elder Muray, even better than him.'

A hot blood and heroic spirit surged in Zhang Tie's mind, 'With Castle of Black Iron, small tree and "King Roc Sutra", I have no reason to be not as powerful as Elder Muray.'

'Although I didn't launch an attack, Senel Clan have been exterminated. What's my next destination then?' Zhang Tie considered inside.

'Go back to Huaiyuan Palace? No, Elder Muray must be here for me. If I went back to Huaiyuan Palace, I would definitely be confined as a stallion. I would never be as free as now. Even if I was not confined in a place, I would always be accompanied by an elder from Huaiyuan Palace as my bodyguard. If so, I could not enter Castle of Black Iron to eat fruits and would barely promote to a knight quickly. Therefore, I would never go back.' Zhang Tie thought.

After Koz was killed, the middle corps of demonized puppets would be in a chaos temporarily; however, it would not pose any rudimentary influence to the plan of demons. After rolling over the Symbian Republic, the vanguard of the army of demons would target Norman Empire directly.

'Will Norman Empire leave its empty cities to demons?' Zhang Tie didn't think so. 'Because Norman Empire has not evacuated all of its people. If Norman Empire didn't resist, after capturing those people in the territory of Norman Empire, the population of demonized puppets would expand to a terrifying scale. This would cause a disaster for the rest of humans. Therefore, Norman Empire would fight demonized puppets and demons to death even only for

saving some more time for those civilians. Besides, if the military of Norman Empire just escaped away, the royal household of Norman Empire would lose their majesty. When they give up Norman Empire, they abandon their royal status and honors as well. Therefore, the royal household of Norman Empire would never just escape without fighting demons and demonized puppets. After demons broke the human defense line in Selnes Theater of Operations, the cruelest battle between humans and demons would start in Norman Empire. '

'I have no concerns in Norman Empire; based on Hanna's current status, they could easily leave Norman Empire by an airship. Reinhardt is a powerful fighter, who could determine his own fate with his current ability and battle force. Therefore, it is meaningless for me to go to Norman Empire at this moment.'

'The best choice is to digest the achievements that I've gained these days so as to further improve my battle force. After promoting to LV 12, I'd better find a chance to kill a batch of iron-armored demons so as to get a fruit of source of iron-armored demons. After that, I will go to Ice and Snow Wilderness.'

As soon as he made the determination had Zhang Tie felt relaxed.

Watching the vast ocean at the foot, Zhang Tie remembered that his Castle of Black Iron was running out of basic energy storage and his plan to build some "new houses" on the top of the immortal mountain in Castle of Black Iron. His heart raced at once, 'Before I promote to LV 12, I will greatly increase basic energy storage for Castle of Black Iron.'

Zhang Tie instantly flew towards the deep of the ocean...

After more than half an hour, Zhang Tie was almost 100 miles away from the coastline, from where he sniffed the special odor of sulfide in the sea wind coming from afar. An isle appeared in Zhang Tie's vision.

There was a volcano in the isle, which was fug-belching. At the

same time, a lot of dark red magma flew out of the top of the volcano all the way to the ocean. The moment the scorching magma met the icy seawater had arisen a large area of vapor, which looked like a dense fog over the sea. The entire isle was covered by the misty dreamland. If not above the isle, Zhang Tie could never see the overall look of the isle.

Starting from this isle, more and more mist as wide as hundreds of square miles appeared on the sea. The mist gradually covered the sky. Therefore, Zhang Tie felt like entering a misty ocean.

In the misty ocean, Zhang Tie could faintly see glows on the sea, from where a wide area of vapor and water mist upsurged. Some scorching air flows even spurted as high as 100 m in the air.

After recalling the map on the sea area of the entire Blackson Humans Corridor for a few seconds, a term occurred to Zhang Tie's mind—A 1,000-mile Misty Ocean! 'I'm in a 1,000-mile Misty Ocean.'

This was a forsaken place in Blackson Humans Corridor. A lot of magma fractures led to the underground world beneath this ocean. The volcanic activity in this region was very frequent while the magma was spurting out of the seabed all the year round. After reaching the sea level, the magma heated up the sea water and formed a misty ocean as wide as 1,000 square miles. This was due to the epeirogeny of the continent. After tens of thousands of years, this sea area might become a vigorous land being bordered by the land of Blackson Humans Corridor. However, at this moment, it was just a forsaken place.

No ship would like to enter such a secluded misty ocean. The visibility in the misty ocean was very low. Dark eddies existed everywhere beneath the sea level. Additionally, more hidden reefs would form everyday after the magma cooled down. Furthermore, old reefs would enlarge everyday, which would even change their locations due to the flowing underground magma river. This passage changed in each second. Nobody could hold it. Therefore,

all the ships of Blackson Humans Corridor would make a detour around this Misty Ocean.

As the seawater here cooled down too much magma, the sea water here became hot while carrying some substances in the magma. As a result, the sea water here displayed weak acidity, causing no fish or marine organism to live in this sea area.

This was a dangerous desert in the ocean. However, it was the best paradise for Zhang Tie at this moment.

After flying more than 2 hours in the misty ocean as a thunder hawk, Zhang Tie almost came to the center of the misty ocean. He then teleported the thunder hawk into Castle of Black Iron.

After the thunder hawk was teleported in Castle of Black Iron for one minute, Zhang Tie's naked body appeared out of void about 40 m above the sea. After that, he dove into the sea, causing no spray at all...

With the preliminary waterproof body, Zhang Tie felt as free as being in the sky when he returned to the ocean that he had not seen for a long time. The moment he entered the sea had he slightly moved and dived towards the seabed after leaving some bubbles on the sea level. His speed and agility would dwarf any ocean organism if there was any.

This sea area was very deep. Besides, it was about 40 degree Celsius. After diving about 1,000 m in depth, Zhang Tie saw some fiery magma rivers in the seabed while the surrounding seawater was boiling and constantly transferring numerous bubbles and vapor upwards, causing the dense mist over the sea.

There were some crisscrossed oceanic trenches beside the magma rivers. With the surging magma, large water flows poured out of the deep earth's crust being linked to the oceanic trenches, making the ocean environment more complex...

Chapter 673: A Hidden Cultivation in the Misty Ocean

Zhang Tie attempted to touch the water flows pouring out of the oceanic trenches. The moment he was hit by one water flow had he been sent sliding over 50 m backward. Given his senses, Zhang Tie realized that it was fresh water. It seemed to be a turbulent fresh river in the oceanic trench. In farther places, Zhang Tie saw some volcanoes spurting magma from the seabed. There were volcanoes and estuaries of subterranean rivers at the seabed, arising Zhang Tie's praise about the marvel of the creator, the mother nature.

Because of the environment hereby, the seawater was covered with torrents, subterranean streams and whirlpools.

Zhang Tie was very satisfied with the environment.

"Heller, how about this place?"

"Nice, I could maximize the teleporting entrance so that Castle of Black Iron could absorb seawater at the fastest speed without causing any abnormal situations on the sea level!" Heller's voice sounded in Zhang Tie's mind. Heller was very satisfied with Zhang Tie's plan to increase basic energy storage for Castle of Black Iron.

"Hard work!"

With these words, Zhang Tie entered Castle of Black Iron.

When Zhang Tie put on his clothes in Castle of Black Iron, he felt the colorful cloud turning bright. Closely after that, a spillway opened in the sky while enormous seawater poured down directly into the Abyss of Chaos.

The Abyss of Chaos was surrounding the immortal mountain while enormous seawater was pouring into the Abyss of Chaos. In a split second, the entire immortal mountain was like being covered by a bizarre, round waterfall, which shocked Zhang Tie at once.

With the knight's consciousness, Zhang Tie still felt that the waterfall was flowing hundreds of times faster than that of a common waterfall. In Zhang Tie's eyes, the entire immortal mountain was not covered with liquid, but with an extremely thick, freezing crystal wall. If not the changing glistening light on the round water wall, Zhang Tie would never believe that it was a water flow pouring down from the sky.

The super high-speed waterfall fell into the Abyss of Chaos silently without causing any spray.

In the distance, those people whom Zhang Tie brought in Castle of Black Iron were so excited at the sight of such a wonderful scene on the immortal mountain that they all knelt down and prayed loudly on the ground. In the eyes of those people, the immortal mountain was a huge crystal cover manifested by their god. As it was flowing super fast silently, those people didn't know that it was water. They could only feel the breeze.

Watching Heller walking over here, Zhang Tie swallowed his saliva forcefully, "Can you tell me the runoff of this water?"

"1.17 million cubic meters per second!" Heller answered with a smile.

"Ah? You mean the Castle of Black Iron could engulf 1.17 million tons of seawater per second!"

"Right. This figure is 3.2 times that of the largest river in Blackson Humans Corridor. Now, Castle of Black Iron could convert 1.17 million tons of basic energy storage per second. Do you want to check it?" Heller waved his hand while a virtual image of counting card appeared in front of Zhang Tie. The figures in the front 7 digits were running so fast that Zhang Tie could only see a white line while the 8th digit was rolling rapidly like that of a water meter. The figure on the 9th digit changed twice per second.

The great convertible efficiency of basic energy storage reminded Zhang Tie of how he carried pack baskets of deserted ores from the

mining caves into Castle of Black Iron. Zhang Tie felt speechless at once, 'What a great cheat!' He realized that he might not have utilized 1/10,000 of the ability of Castle of Black Iron to convert the material into basic energy till now.

"How fast is the water flow?" Zhang Tie asked out of curiosity.

"It could cut through granite plates!"

"Won't it hurt someone?"

"Castle Lord, trust me, everything in Castle of Black Iron is under my control!" Heller revealed a confident smile which made Zhang Tie reassured.

"What about outside?"

"Don't worry. Nobody would find it. The 1,000-mile misty ocean forms the best cover. If someone comes to this sea area by accident, arrives at such a depth by accident and is no less than 500 m away from this water, I will know that someone is coming through the subtle change of water flow that enters Castle of Black Iron. I will stop it right away. That person would never find it!"

"That'll be good!" Zhang Tie became reassured, 'It might be the god's will for me to arrive here. As for such a suitable environment for me to increase basic energy storage for Castle of Black Iron, I will make full use of it for sure.'

"How long will you stay in Castle of Black Iron, Castle Lord?"

"I won't leave out of here until I reach LV 12!" Zhang Tie had a sense of crisis after seeing the blow of Elder Muray last night. Even a LV 15 guy was nothing but a f*rt in front of the knight. Therefore, Zhang Tie realized that him, as a 5-star battle LV 11 battle master was too risky in front of the real powerhouses. After promoting to LV 12, Zhang Tie would feel safer in front of crises. Additionally, Zhang Tie had already lit 125 surging points. He only needed to light another 19 surging points before promoting to a LV 12 great battle master...

Zhang Tie gained the ability to intensify his power twice when he promoted to LV 10 and LV 11 with the help of "King Roc Sutra". Based on the former two experiences, Zhang Tie knew that he would intensify his ability once more when he promoted to LV 12. He was desiring so much about what he could achieve.

"If it's real, before you leave Castle of Black Iron, you would definitely see a new round of change of Castle of Black Iron!"

"I hope so..." Zhang Tie said as he walked towards the small tree.

'It's time to eat fruits!'

From March 14th when he left Tokei City to April 16th, there were 6 new leakless fruits hanging on the small tree, 5 of which already became ripe, 1 was still raw.

Besides the 6 leakless fruits, Zhang Tie saw many more fruits, 1 of which was the fruit of brilliance, 4 trouble-reappearance fruits and 1 fruit of judgment.

The fruit of judgment granted Zhang Tie with a wholly-new rune skill—"preliminary tracing skill". As a very practical and powerful skill, it enabled Zhang Tie to release a hidden spiritual energy mark on someone or something which would stay effective very long. As long as that person or thing appeared less than 600 miles away from Zhang Tie, Zhang Tie would be able to sense it and find them precisely.

The 6 fruits came from the reward of killing 4 young elites of Elvis Clan in the rear corps.

Besides, the wing demons' fruit of source that Zhang Tie desired most also became ripe. It smelt extremely fragrant. The whole fruit was radiating a bizarre eye-catching brilliance. Compared to other fruits, this one took Zhang Tie the longest time to become ripe since he came to Selnes Theater of Operations last year.

Watching the complex pattern of source flower being composed of rounds on the surface of the fruit of source, Zhang Tie let out a

deep sigh with satisfaction. 'No matter how many troubles have I experienced in the Selnes Theater of Operations, everything was worthwhile. With such perfect conditions, if I could not be a knight, I'd rather go die.'

Zhang Tie reached his hand out...

——Wing demons' fruit of source. Usage: Pick and direct eat it. Notice: The fruit cannot be taken out of the Castle of Black Iron. After twelve hours of having been picked off the tree, its energy and vitality will gradually decline.

——This fruit could increase your life source and improve your health and quality of life in an all-round manner.

——All the life existences are sprouted by the seed of source. The spiritual life rules are the manifestation of the source. The great strength forms the look of the source, which is included in each fulfillment. It includes all the knowledge, rhythm, lives and sacred things. It is a combination of feminine and masculine, brightness and darkness, positive and negative. It is the flower and fruit of lives and the sturdy tree of lives.

Zhang Tie imagined what Heller had told him about the fruit of source. There was a mysterious link between this fruit and the number $1/12$. As long as he ate one fruit of source, the ability that could be brought by each surging point, his physical strength and endurance, his life expectancy and his cells' aging speed would decline by $1/12$...

Zhang Tie picked off the fruit of source and held it carefully. After that, he sat under the small tree with crossed legs and put this fruit into his mouth. As he ate it, he closed his eyes.

Soon after the fruit entered his stomach had a pattern of the bud of a flower of source loomed in the middle of Zhang Tie's forehead. Closely after that, the bud was in full bloom. Zhang Tie also started to give out light all over...

After 5 hours later, Zhang Tie opened his eyes. Zhang Tie felt that he had promoted to a new level. He gained a new life both inside and outside. Additionally, Zhang Tie felt having one more familiar energy in his body. He always felt that he had sensed that energy before. After racking his mind for a few minutes, he became suddenly shocked as he sensed the same weak energy escaping from the All-spirits Pagoda when he used the soul-based incarnation method of "Great Wilderness Sutra".

When he remembered the warning of Cloud Crane in the posthumous paper about implementing soul-based incarnation skill, Zhang Tie immediately danced with joy under the small tree while bursting out into laughter...

"Hahaha, I see, I see..."

Chapter 674: Benefits

Zhang Tie had only implemented soul-based incarnation method a few times. In the posthumous paper, Cloud Crane once warned that soul-based incarnation method required a bit source of spirit and soul of its user. It was the biggest shortcoming of soul-based incarnation method. Therefore, cultivators of Great Wilderness Sutra could never constantly apply the soul-based animal controlling skill. With one more incarnation, the source of spirit and soul of one's original body would decline a bit. Zhang Tie was afraid of having some sequelae after applying soul-based animal controlling skill previously. However, after eating the fruit of source, Zhang Tie finally understood that he didn't need to think too much. Because the strength gifted by the fruit of source was the very wisp of strength that had escaped from his body when he fixed his incarnations.

From the beginning, Zhang Tie totally had three incarnations, namely a rat, a thunder hawk and a black beetle. It would always consume his original body's some source energy when he fixed the 3 incarnations. However, compared to the energy that he gained through the fruit of source, this bit of energy escaping from his body was trivial. If the source energy gained through the fruit of source was compared to a vat of water, the source energy that he lost when he fixed the three incarnations was only equal to the bit of water on the tip of the writing brush.

Of course, the source energy contained in the fruit of source of 360 wing demons at and above LV 9 was thousands of times greater than that required by fixing a rat, an insect or a thunder hawk.

In the former Great Wilderness School, the apprentices used numerous secret tonics to mend up the escaping source energy when they cultivated soul-based incarnation skill; although Zhang Tie had not taken numerous secret tonics, a fruit of source was enough to mend up all the source energy that had escaped from his

original body. After fixing the only shortcoming of the secret method of "Great Wilderness Sutra", Zhang Tie didn't have to worry about potential harms.

The teleportation ability of Castle of Black Iron, the fruit of source and the "Great Wilderness Sutra", what a perfect combination.

After taking this fruit of source, although Zhang Tie didn't light any more surging point, he felt as powerful as lighting over 10 more surging points. At this moment, the flames around the 125 surging points that had been lit had faintly expanded and grown brighter. Zhang Tie's overall strength had hit a new high from aspects such as strength, speed, reaction capability and senses.

It was just a beginning. Later on, with one more surging point being lit, Zhang Tie would gain 1/12 more ability than those people who lit the same number of surging points. The later it was, the more effective the fruit of source would be.

With a laughter, Zhang Tie started to run about wildly on the top of the mountain so as to sense the changing physical conditions more precisely. He flashed as fast as a lightning bolt. After activating Kuafu Bloodline, he arrived at the foot of the mountain in only a couple of steps. With another stride forward, Zhang Tie returned to the top of the mountain. After activating a senior rapidly moving rune, Zhang Tie moved so fast that he almost turned into an extremely virtual shadow which circled around the immortal mountain.

At this moment, Zhang Tie started to feel that this area was too small that it was even inconvenient for him to move.

Heller watched Zhang Tie running about madly out of excitement with a smile. Heller had a great sense of achievement and satisfaction about Zhang Tie's excitement and success—because this was the feature of his achievement-type personality.

After running around the top of the mountain for a few circles in

an extremely virtual shadow, Zhang Tie came to the front of Heller with a fresh wind. After standing still, Zhang Tie showed his figure and look clearly.

Zhang Tie neither blushed nor panted.

"Heller, can you expand the immortal mountain? After moving so many people inside, I feel inconvenient to do many things."

"As you wish, Castle Lord. As long as you stay in Castle of Black Iron for a few more days, I promise to show you a satisfactory space and topographical renovation!"

...

Later on, Zhang Tie ate that fruit of judgment which contained the "preliminary tracing skill", some trouble-reappearance fruits and that fruit of brilliance. The effect of each rune of preliminary tracing skill could last 10 days with a remote-sensing distance of 600 km. If Zhang Tie stuck his tracing tentacles to objects, it would hardly be found by people. If Zhang Tie stuck tracing tentacles to people, nobody below knights could notice such a mysterious rune effect on himself. 'As to knights, heh, heh. Don't knights wear clothes or shoes? As long as knights don't find the tracing tentacles on their belongings temporarily, the rune would take effect as well.'

As a very practical and useful skill, it could be used to trace someone and send an early warning to him. It could also remind Zhang Tie of the location of someone. Additionally, if he was chased after by someone, Zhang Tie, with this skill, would be able to master the trace of the opponent; as a result, he could escape easily.

After taking that fruit, Zhang Tie had one more golden secret rune that represented preliminary tracing skill in his mind. After being injected with spiritual energy, the rune shocked while a faintly agile stick of tracing feather in the shape of dandelion's seed appeared in Zhang Tie's mind sea and started to float in his mind

sea.

After taking the fruit of brilliance which contained the spiritual energy of the 4 young elites of Elvis Clan, Zhang Tie's spiritual energy sea had expanded a lot. Commoners could never accumulate so much spiritual energy in their whole lives. However, Zhang Tie could gain them only by eating a fruit.

It took Zhang Tie almost one day to digest all of these fruits. Zhang Tie didn't continue his cultivation; instead, he adjusted his rhythm by eating food and sleeping...

On the next day, Zhang Tie took the 5 leakless fruits while two more golden bird-shaped flames circled around that stick of spiritual feather in his Shrine.

After sacrificing himself 891 times in the whole day, Zhang Tie finally found the next 2 surging points in Castle of Black Iron. Closely after that, he lit the 2 surging points under the small tree once again.

Since then, he only needed to light 17 more surging points before promoting to LV 12 great battle master.

Would he just stay there to wait for the next leakless fruits to become ripe so as to light other surging points?

Of course not. Zhang Tie had started to sit under the small tree with crossed legs and polish that stick of spiritual feather in his Shrine using his spiritual energy like how a commoner cultivated "King Roc Sutra" since the next day after he lit the two surging points.

'Others could light their surging points in this method, so could I. It's not acceptable that I could not use the most rudimentary cultivation skill without leakless fruits.' Zhang Tie thought. Additionally, he faintly felt that he had not fully exerted the effect of his powerful spiritual energy and knight's consciousness.

Zhang Tie was right.

Soon after he calmed down and started to cultivate based on his own ability had he sensed the high efficiency of cultivation benefited from his Knight-level consciousness. Only in about 11 hours had the color of that stick of spiritual feather in his Shrine surging point turned from orange to yellow...

It was like breaking 1 of 7 barriers of a surging point in one day. Zhang Tie could never imagine about this before.

Zhang Tie finally understood the benefit of a powerful spiritual energy.

"You're polishing surging points as fast as a knight!" Heller concluded, "This is the benefit for you to have the knight's spiritual energy. Castle Lord, do you want to challenge more difficult cultivation?"

"Of course, what's that?" Zhang Tie's curiosity was aroused.

"When you polish that stick of spiritual feather in the Shrine, you can gain some iron-body fruits at the same time so as to be stronger!" Heller replied like a senior adviser while his words were full of temptations.

"Is that real?"

"It's impossible in other places at any time. However, it's indeed possible in this environment!" Heller said as he pointed at the firm water wall which was falling into the Abyss of Chaos constantly, "When you start your cultivation, I can divert a water flow onto your body. As long as you can bear it, you will have your body exercised when you polish the stick of spiritual feather, one stone for two birds!"

"Do you mean that the water flow could cut through granite. I'm afraid that I could not bear such a high speed at this moment!"

"Of course the water flow that I divert on you will not have such a high speed. Its effect is like the impulse that you could bear under a waterfall as high as 1,000 m. Under such a great impulse, your

majesty could stand 12 hours per day at most!"

Zhang Tie gritted his teeth as he said, "Fine!"

...

Chapter 675: A Remarkable Progress

On the same day, Zhang Tie moved to the foot of the mountain from the place under the small tree. Right on a stony platform near the Abyss of Chaos, Zhang Tie accepted the impulse of the powerful water flow as he attempted to polish that stick of spiritual feather in his Shrine...

At the first 3 days, Zhang Tie could not fully enter meditation under the impulse of the powerful water flow when he felt exhausted 12 hours per day. Until the 4th day, Zhang Tie became slowly adapted to it. He tried to enter meditation under the impulse. On the 7th day, Zhang Tie finally could enter meditation under the impulse of water flow. However, this process was intermittent. After eating 3 iron-body fruits in 10 days, Zhang Tie could finally fully enter meditation under such a powerful impulse of waterfall...

After that, Zhang Tie's cultivation schedule became steady in Castle of Black Iron. He would spend 12 hours a day to polish that stick of spiritual feather in his Shrine under the impulse of the powerful waterfall. After that, Zhang Tie used another 4 hours to cultivate his battle skills and other secret methods and 3 hours to read the endless true words of the Great Wilderness Sutra. As to the rest 5 hours in a day, he would eat food and sleep...

Zhang Tie cultivated and enlightened Iron-blood Fist everyday. Besides, he also cultivated other battle skills and secret skills.

The other battle skill that Zhang Tie cultivated was the swordsmanship called "Meteor Shower Sword" that he bought in the illegal demon hunters market in Selnes Theater of Operations which came from the Eastern Continent. When he bought this book, Zhang Tie was gifted with the secret book "Robust Ox Skill" for free.

Although "Meteor Shower Sword" was not one of the top

swordsmanship in the legend, it was also extensive, profound and very powerful. Additionally, the secret knowledge at this level was always beyond the reach of commoners. In the Eastern Continent, some even promoted to sword sage with this secret knowledge.

As long as becoming a strong fighter, anyone could cultivate this secret knowledge. Additionally, as the cultivator's level increased, the cultivator would have deeper enlightenment about this swordsmanship; as a result, his swordsmanship would be more powerful. Zhang Tie didn't know whether it was benefited from his knight's consciousness because he could always understand the contents of the secret knowledge instantly. He made a remarkable progress in the process of learning "Meteor Shower Sword".

Additionally, due to commonplaces between swordsmanship and fist position, Zhang Tie also made progress in Iron-blood Fist.

When he was free, Zhang Tie would cultivate another secret knowledge—"Soul Capture Skill" of Bloody Soul Temple that he gained from Scala's corpse.

Compared to "Meteor Shower Sword", this "Soul Capture Skill" had higher requirements. People whose spiritual energy was lower than that of a battle spirit could not cultivate it. Scala didn't know where to get this secret knowledge. Scala as a LV 14 battle demon didn't unlock this secret knowledge before he was killed by Zhang Tie.

Although it was a higher request on spiritual energy for commoners, it was extremely easy for Zhang Tie. After eating so many fruits of brilliance, his spiritual energy would be much higher than that of common knights, not to mention that of a battle spirit.

Compared to "Iron-blood Fist" and "Meteor Shower Skill", "Soul Capture Skill" was too evil, which was based on the cultivation of vision, auditory sense, smell, taste sense, body sense, consciousness, predestined affinity and soul. As long as he

completed the cultivation, he could capture or influence others' souls and consciousness with one look or motion silently which was unpreventable. The hypnotism that Zhang Tie heard before was dwarfed by this marvelous skill. When he reached an extremely supreme realm, he could even sow soul seeds in others' 8 senses, causing them to be his soul slaves. The soul slaves would say fragrant things smelly, smelly things fragrant, white black, black white; they would lose their mind and be fully hallucinatory; they wouldn't even know whether they were dead or not. How arbitrary! What counted most was that soul slaves didn't think that their actions and feelings were under your control. They would only feel that everything they did was following their mind and determination.

After reading "Soul Capture Skill", Zhang Tie confirmed that Koz had not cultivated this secret knowledge. Otherwise, he might have exposed everything he knew to Senel Clan when he fell in their hands in Tokei City. One could easily obtain any information that he wanted from others' mouth using this "Soul Capture Skill".

As this skill was a bit evil, Zhang Tie was considering whether to cultivate it or not at the beginning; however, after reading the secret knowledge once, Zhang Tie tragically realized that he had already bore the contents of the entire "Soul Capture Skill" firm in mind. Furthermore, as the only request that this secret knowledge posed to its cultivator was the cultivator's spiritual energy, after skimming over the secret knowledge, Zhang Tie had already mastered some low-end secret methods such as soul obsessed skill.

'Whatever, just cultivate it. With more skills, I will be more powerful. As a righteous and kind youth...ahem...ahem...I will not do evil things with those evil secret methods.' Zhang Tie thought as he started to cultivate the "Soul Capture Skill". The moment he started had he found a more tragic fact—although always being average in talents, he had a great aptitude in cultivating the evil secret method. It only took him 2 weeks to promote to the level

that 'would be reached by commoners after many years' of serious cultivation on many contents as was written on the mysterious book...

'F*ck, this father is born to...have a...'

Zhang Tie swore inside. At the same time, he made the determination that he would never tell others that he had such an evil aptitude. 'As long as I leave Castle of Black Iron, I will never have heard about "Soul Capture Skill" or anything else.'

Castle of Black Iron would engulf 1.17 million cubic meters of seawater per second. Furthermore, the small tree could provide Zhang Tie one iron-body fruit per 3 days and 1 leakless fruit per 7 days. Meanwhile, when in deep meditation, Zhang Tie could produce a golden bird-shaped flame that could light a surging point from the stick of spiritual feather in the Shrine with his knight's spiritual energy. What an amazing speed! Zhang Tie just gnawed fruits and cultivated carefully when the time elapsed...

Zhang Tie didn't know how long had he stayed in Castle of Black Iron. He felt that he had already lit 134 surging points in the blink of an eye. After lighting 10 more surging points, he would promote to LV 12...

...

Today, Zhang Tie didn't count how many times had he died in the trouble-reappearance situation...

With a sound "bang", Zhang Tie who attempted to light the next surging point on the seaside exploded and turned into bloody mist in the blink of an eye. At the same time, the trouble-reappearance situation broke apart...

Under the torrents, Zhang Tie, in naked body, opened his eyes. After taking another deep breath, he activated that trouble-reappearance situation once again...

After failing over another 100 times consecutively, Zhang Tie

stood on the seaside in the trouble-reappearance situation once again. However, Zhang Tie became fretful at this moment. The process of attempts depended completely. Sometimes, he might find the next surging point after exploding 200-300 times. Sometimes, it was not enough even after dying 600-700 times. Today, Zhang Tie had already died more than 700 times; however, he still didn't find that surging point yet. Therefore, he gradually became fretful. Thankfully, he had Castle of Black Iron; otherwise, he might have already died.

Recently, Zhang Tie met two bottlenecks in the cultivation of "Meteor Shower Sword": one was that Zhang Tie could not convert his Iron-blood Battle Qi to sharper Iron-blood Sword Qi. As Iron-blood Battle Qi was very powerful as a top battle qi, it was more difficult for it to convert to more powerful Iron-blood Sword Qi. Zhang Tie had spent many days; however, he failed to break through it. Another bottleneck was that Zhang Tie felt not being able to manipulate some delicate moves and battle skills in the cultivation of "Meteor Shower Sword" although he had great physical strength. The reason was that he had not laid a solid foundation when he started to cultivate swordsmanship. Due to the above two bottlenecks, Zhang Tie's swordsmanship cultivation had to stagnate.

The poor small sea snake had already arrived at the seaside. It was trying to bite Zhang Tie.

Watching that small sea snake struggling to climb onto the beach while twisting its body, Zhang Tie, who was fretful, suddenly burst out laughing. His fret and boredom disappeared at once...

Watching the glistening ripples and feeling the sea wind and seeing the familiar scene on the Iron Ore Beach, a whim occurred to Zhang Tie's mind, 'I've kept cultivating for so many days without any rest. I will have a day off today. Just take a walk in Hidden Dragon Island to relax myself.'

Thinking this, Zhang Tie instantly arrived at the cliff from the

Iron Ore Beach with one stride. Closely after that, he disappeared from the seaside.

In the trouble-reappearance situation, besides live animals, everything was as same as that in the real world, including all the grasses, trees, sand and dust. Walking in the familiar Hidden Dragon Island, Zhang Tie couldn't help but sigh with emotions. He recalled what happened in Hidden Dragon Palace when he came there at the beginning——carrying navyblue iron ores with Zhang Hongsheng and the other partners, joking with girls from Zhixing Department and seeing Lan Yunxi's charming look for the first time...

Zhang Tie felt that these things very warming and interesting.

As he reminisced about this, Zhang Tie had already arrived at Hidden Dragon Palace and stridden over the mountain gate.

The Hidden Dragon Palace in the trouble-reappearance situation remained unchanged. Nobody was inside.

Walking in Hidden Dragon Palace and watching all the familiar grasses and trees, Zhang Tie recovered his composure completely...

After remembering that he met bottlenecks in the cultivation of swordsmanship, Zhang Tie directly came to the Swordsmanship Gym. Watching those familiar steel puppets, Zhang Tie sighed with emotions, 'As a common member here, I cultivated my swordsmanship diligently while spraying my sweat like the rain. Pitifully, before I passed the test on a fundamental swordsmanship had I left Hidden Dragon Palace due to various reasons.' Zhang Tie almost forgot when he came here last time.

Zhang Tie came to the front of a row of long swords and slightly touched their handles. After that, he took the heaviest sword on the rack and came to the front of a steel puppet before starting to practice the eight moves of swordsmanship repetitively according to the requirements.

Zhang Tie moved as fast as a lightning bolt. Accompanied by his virtual shadow were the consecutive tinkling sounds. At the same time, the data on the counter of the steel puppet upsurged...

After practicing for more than 1 hour, the data on the counter had risen to 5 digits. At this moment, Zhang Tie felt a link between him and the long sword. He then casually threw it backward, which fell on the rack 30 m away precisely.

"Hmm, it seems that I have to mend up the fundamental swordsmanship in the trouble-reappearance situation so as to master "Meteor Shower Sword". For commoners, some fundamental skills could never be fixed after being lost, even with knight's consciousness!" Zhang Tie mumbled. After that, he walked out of the Swordsmanship Gym while waving his head.

'I wonder how does Lan Yunxi's bedroom look like?'

A bizarre, evil whim occurred to Zhang Tie's mind, which aroused Zhang Tie's curiosity. Zhang Tie then smirked as he turned around and walked towards Lan Yunxi's residence.

On the way, a tall pavilion's roof entered Zhang Tie's vision while being almost covered by woods——Secret Knowledge Pavilion...

After recalling that old man who drunk tea water here everyday in the Secret Knowledge Pavilion, Zhang Tie revealed a smile as he continued to walk forward. However, he gradually slowed down his footsteps and finally stopped. He then turned around abruptly and gazed at the very Pavilion...

Zhang Tie remembered how he discovered the Gold-eating boa's teeth in the river when he joined the survival training in Wildwolf Valley and all the details in the trouble-reappearance situations these years, even the training in the Swordsmanship Gym just now——in the trouble-reappearance situations, all the lifeless objects were nothing different than roadside rocks and soil as the complete copy of the material world.

Zhang Tie's heart raced heavily while he darted towards the Secret Knowledge Pavilion...

Chapter 676: My Secret Knowledge Pavilion

As same as before, the Secret Knowledge Pavilion was composed of 7 storeys. With 8 sides, the pavilion looked like a pagoda while being sheltered in the picturesque mountain scenery.

It was tranquil in the surroundings except for the rustling sounds of tree leaves swaying in the mountain wind.

The front gate of the Secret Knowledge Pavilion was opened with a screen right inside the gate. After detouring the screen, Zhang Tie arrived at the lobby on the 1st floor. Although the tea tables and stools were still there as orderly as before, the old man who used to drink there disappeared.

Zhang Tie became a bit intense as his heart pounded. He faintly felt as guilty as being a thief when he came to this place in the trouble-reappearance situation.

A staircase behind the lobby led to the 2nd floor, where Zhang Tie had not visited before. Therefore, he wondered what was on the 2nd floor. Previously, when he came here, as long as he told the old man what secret knowledge or battle skill he wanted to exchange with his credit points would the old man draw the rope of the bell beside the tea table and had people sent it downstairs. According to the regulations in Hidden Dragon Palace, all the learners could only learn the secret knowledge in the Mysterious Knowledge Pavilion. There were some tranquil and isolated rooms in the Pavilion. Like those in some libraries, you could learn and bear the contents in the secret knowledge in mind quietly. Besides managing various secret knowledge, the old man could also answer various questions posed by learners here.

The staircase leading upstairs was clean while being paved with a soft and thick carpet. When Zhang Tie went upstairs, he heard no sound at all.

When Zhang Tie came upstairs, he saw many numbered isolated

rooms where learners could study in. Nobody was in the isolated rooms either.

Previously, Zhang Tie had only exchanged "Fish-like Diving Skill" here. He always read it in a room on the 1st floor. He had not imagined that there were more than 20 isolated rooms on the 2nd floor which were larger than those on the 1st floor.

Zhang Tie then came to the 3rd floor and found similar isolated rooms. Being different from that on the 1st and 2nd floor, the isolated rooms on the 3rd floor were fewer and larger. They were isolated with copper or iron walls. There were huge crystal columns in each isolated room, enabling the energy field in the isolated room very active. Besides, each isolated room was matched with a training cell which contained iron puppets. Additionally, there were living utilities like bedding and washroom in each isolated room. At the sight of these isolated rooms, Zhang Tie knew that they ought to be prepared for learning more advanced mysterious knowledge.

There were totally 3 isolated rooms on the 4th floor. Compared to the 3rd floor, the furnishings of these isolated rooms were more advanced and firmer than those on the 3rd floor. The floors, walls and steel puppets in these training rooms were made of more advanced alloy. Zhang Tie could see many odd-looking wounds on the steel puppets. Additionally, the isolated rooms on the 4th floor were evenly matched with different labs: one elixir lab, one alchemist's instruments lab and one comprehensive lab.

'After staying in Hidden Dragon Palace for so long, I've not had any chance to experience the quality learning conditions provided for learners upstairs hereby Hidden Dragon Palace.' Zhang Tie felt like crying.

After visiting the 4th floor, Zhang Tie came to the 5th floor.

Zhang Tie saw an alloy door with an interface of a secret key. There was no keyhole on the door; instead, there was an

identification interface through which the special clan identification plate could be read. It seemed to pose a high requirement for the access of the visitor. Zhang Tie blinked his eyes as he attempted to push it; however, the door remained still. Zhang Tie blinked his eyes once again. Closely after that, he was driven furious while that bit of guilty sense had long disappeared in his mind.

'F*ck, this father has been here and you tell me I'm not allowed in?'

"Open it..."

Zhang Tie roared while a terrifying, barbarous strength and powerful Iron-blood Battle Qi turned into a groundbreaking kick.

In a split second, the entire Secret Knowledge Pavilion was like blasting while the boom could almost be heard across the Hidden Dragon Palace.

"F*ck, open it..." "Boom..."

"Open it..." "Boom..."

After roaring about 1 minutes along with the blasting booms, the alloy door finally fell down with another louder boom.

"Pah..." Zhang Tie spat a mouth of saliva forcefully towards the alloy door. Closely after that, he stepped on it and entered the 5th floor of the Secret Knowledge Pavilion.

Zhang Tie saw rows of bookshelves in the entire 5th floor while various secret knowledge were lying there orderly.

Watching such a marvelous scene, Zhang Tie felt a bit dazzled as he thought it was unreal.

After taking a deep breath, Zhang Tie came to the nearest bookshelf and drew out a book by slightly quivering hand.

Zhang Tie saw the words "Crescent Battle Qi" on the cover of that book. He turned on a new page casually and found it was made of a

silver-plate paper which touched very comfortable. The cultivation method of "Crescent Battle Qi" was written in the book.

After putting it back, Zhang Tie drew out another book "Barbarous Ox Battle Qi"...

Then the 3rd book "Fiery Fire Battle Qi"...

...

Zhang Tie rapidly passed by those shelves one after another and saw many classifications: Battle Qis——Battle Skills——Elixirs——Runes——Alchemists' Instruments——Comprehensive——Odd Skills——Others——

In the shelf "Comprehensive", Zhang Tie caught sight of the "Iron-blood Fist" that he cultivated...

In the shelf "Odd Skills", Zhang Tie saw the preliminary, medium and senior "Fish-like Diving Skill".

In the shelf "Others", Zhang Tie saw many books such as "100 Questions about Ancestral Bloodline Learning" and "Secret Knowledge in Taixia Country". Although they weren't any mysterious knowledge, they were more expensive than average books of cultivation.

In the shelf "Elixirs", Zhang Tie saw books such as "Brochure for Apprentice Pharmacist", "Herbs Classic", "ABC of Mysterious Medicine", "Deciphering of Human Genes", "Method of Elixir Manufacture", etc..

Among the two items "Runes" and "Alchemist's Instruments", Zhang Tie saw many mysterious knowledge such as "Basic Runes", "Runes Advancement", "Heavens and Ground Corresponding Skill", "Sounds Imitation Skill", "Minerals Identification Skill", "Metallurgical Method", "Forging Method" and "Flames for Mineral Extraction", etc..

The battle skills were further divided into more categories, including various weapons, fist positions, finger attacking skills,

feet movements and cultivation mysterious knowledge...

In all the 5 storeys, there were thousands of mysterious books. Zhang Tie felt like entering a dreamland just by looking at so many names.

Many of the mysterious books here were about battle qi, battle skills and various professional basics that were available to people below LV 9. If he was still in Hidden Dragon Palace, he needed to use a lot of clan contribution points to exchange for any of these mysterious books. However, all of them were freely available to Zhang Tie now.

'How fast does the happiness come!' Zhang Tie's heart raced.

After taking a round on the 5th floor, Zhang Tie rushed to the 6th floor.

On the 6th floor, his heart pounded more heavily.

If the 5th floor was a library, the 6th floor would be an exhibition hall for crystal treasures.

There were all square crystal cabinets which were arranged orderly on the 6th floor. Each crystal cabinet was displaying some sandalwood cases with soft velvet cloths inside. There were mysterious crystal books in different shapes being wrapped with metal on the soft velvet cloths, large or small. Those who had no knowledge about mysterious books would take those mysterious crystal books as ornaments, which were actually advanced mysterious books which could not be cultivated until reaching LV 10.

With a glance, Zhang Tie estimated that there were about 200-300 pieces of mysterious crystal books on the 6th floor. All the deep deposits of Huaiyuan Palace's were displayed here.

Names were written on the sandalwood cases which contained mysterious crystal books for the sake of identification. Zhang Tie took a round on the 6th floor rapidly. After that, he almost cried as

the "Robust Ox Skill" which took him great efforts was right here; it was placed in a trivial corner. "Meteor Shower Sword" was even placed ahead of the "Robust Ox Skill". Zhang Tie took the 2 mysterious crystal books out of the cabinets and injected his spiritual energy inside them. He found their contents were as same as that in his own books.

Recalling how many troubles had he experienced when he sought for "Robust Ox Skill", Zhang Tie patted his forehead forcefully, 'Zhang Tie! Zhang Tie! You should have thought about this before! How stupid you are. You've already come to the trouble-reappearance situation for so many times. You have even discovered good items in Wildwolf Valley in the trouble-reappearance situation. How could you forget so many mysterious books in Hidden Dragon Island? How stupid you are! You should not blame others...'

In the most remarkable location in the middle of the cabinets on the 6th floor, Zhang Tie caught sight of "Breaking Sun Sutra". Being different from that which he refused to take from Lan Yunxi, this one was a 60% mysterious book which only contained contents from LV 10 to LV 15. Zhang Tie speculated that this was a trick of Huaiyuan Palace. It was used to encourage clan students and prevent the entire version of "Breaking Sun Sutra" from being exposed to the public. Across Huaiyuan Palace, only a few people could master the entire version of "Breaking Sun Sutra". Even in Hidden Dragon Palace, clan students could not learn the "Breaking Sun Sutra" without gaining enormous clan contribution points. If not real clan elites, nobody was qualified to touch it.

'What's on the 7th floor?' Zhang Tie took a look there and found it was a people's residence. The faint aroma of tea water on the 7th floor had already indicated who was living there—the old man who guarded this Mysterious Knowledge Pavilion.

After returning to the 6th floor, Zhang Tie had been bothered by a happy problem, 'With so many mysterious books and such a top

cultivation condition that numerous people were dreaming about, which mysterious book should I choose to cultivate so as to improve my battle force? It's impossible for me to digest all of them, neither do I have so much time or vigor to do that. So which one is more useful to me?'

Chapter 677: Painstaking Exercise

After finding Secret Knowledge Pavilion, Zhang Tie slightly adjusted his schedule. He narrowed the period to light the surging point and do exercises under the impulse of water flow from 12 hours to 4 hours and the period to read endless true words of Great Wilderness Sutra from 3 hours to 1 hour. He increased the period to cultivate battle skills and secret knowledge from 4 hours to 14 hours. What remained unchanged was the sleeping time——5 hours.

With such an adjustment, although Zhang Tie would take a few more days to promote to LV 12, he could lay a solid foundation. After all, he could promote to LV 12 only after lighting another 9 surging points. Therefore, Zhang Tie was not anxious.

During these days in Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie had forgotten about all the troubles outside. He didn't feel it was improper. 'No matter how the war progresses between humans and demons, I'm not even a knight, so it's not my turn to concern about that. This world will continue to run without me. My battle force is my largest dependence. The more powerful I am, the safer it will be for those beside me and myself, and the more influential my words will be to the overall battle situation. Even if a LV 6 soldier survived 100 years in the holy war, he could still not match the meritorious deed that a knight could make in one day on the battlefield. I gained nothing after following Senel Clan for more than 10 days; however, the moment Elder Muray arrived had he solved the problem. What a difference!'

Therefore, Zhang Tie continued his cultivation in Castle of Black Iron with a peaceful mind.

It would definitely be annoying for a person who could hardly make a choice when he discovered a Secret Knowledge Pavilion in the Trouble-reappearance Situation.

It was always a happy thing to find a secret book; however, when there were too many secret books to read, you would feel perplexed.

Thankfully, Zhang Tie had no trouble to make a choice, neither was he over-ambitious. For Zhang Tie, it would be good as long as he could become more powerful. But how? To further develop his strengths so as to enlarge the gap between him and others. When he activated his ancestral bloodlines, he immediately became able to challenge Scala although his level was lower than Scala's.

Therefore, Zhang Tie used the same method when he chose the secret books.

It took Zhang Tie 3 days to skim over the secret books in the Secret Knowledge Pavilion and learn what abilities they could bring to him.

During the 3 days, besides continuing his cultivation, Zhang Tie selected the 1st secret book that could make him more powerful.

As he met the bottleneck in the cultivation of "Meteor Shower Sword", Zhang Tie selected the first secret book "True Swordsmanship" and started to read it carefully. This was a secret book for those below LV 9. Although it didn't contain powerful battle skills or battle qi; it raised Zhang Tie's understanding about the cultivation of battle skills and swordsmanship to a new high.

After studying "True Swordsmanship", Zhang Tie didn't read any more secret books; instead, he started to accomplish the cultivation of his fundamental swordsmanship. It was not only a process to consolidate the foundation of his swordsmanship but also the foundation of Zhang Tie's road towards a real powerhouse.

When in Hidden Dragon Palace, he had to repeat the 8 movements of fundamental swordsmanship 8 million times so as to accomplish the cultivation of his fundamental swordsmanship. This was a painstaking process, which Zhang Tie previously didn't pay too much attention to. In Zhang Tie's opinion, the more

powerful the battle skill was, the better it would be. However, after carefully studying "True Swordsmanship", he finally understood that all the great powers were based on the simplest and firmest foundation, without which, the alleged powers were just as illusory as moons in the river and flowers in the mirror. Only with the firmest foundation could one become powerful always.

The foundation of power was featured by a super strong will, forever persistence, strong body, faster speed, best coordination between limbs, consciousness, eyes and movements, 100% precision, great concentration that could turn failure into success and delicate control force like using 500 kg's huge ax to carve floral grains on a bean curd. The only way to reach all the above targets was painstaking exercise—to repeat each simple movement over 1 million times.

Until then did Zhang Tie understand the reason that Hidden Dragon Palace listed fundamental swordsmanship as a compulsory course for all the students. This was not an idea that occurred to someone when he patted his head, but the deepest enlightenment that a real powerhouse could have in the process of cultivation.

Without a firm foundation, the cultivator could never touch the peak of his battle road and battle skills.

Zhang Tie started his painstaking exercise.

At the beginning, with one sword, he could repeat the 8 movements twice in a second, namely reaching out of his sword 16 times...

After 1 week, Zhang Tie held two swords and could repeat 2 rounds of the 8 movements in each second by each hand, namely reaching out of his sword 32 times per second...

This was a tough challenge. In the early days, Zhang Tie's two swords always collided with each other due to different movements. His footsteps would always become disordered when he usually disrupted his own rhythm. Gradually, Zhang Tie

adapted to it in an unimaginable way and solved this tricky problem which seemed could never be solved.

Zhang Tie found that as long as he treated the two long swords in his hands as the two abacuses that he imagined in his mind when doing 'mental arithmetic' could he realize the most perfect coordination when making different movements with the two long swords.

This was a great discovery and an outstanding attempt. After realizing its feasibility, Zhang Tie was shocked as he knew what did this mean. Previously, Zhang Tie had never imagined that he could master the method to make two different movements at the same time after reaching that supreme realm of "mental arithmetic". After applying mental arithmetic in battle skills, Zhang Tie could almost increase his battle force by two times. Now that he could use two swords at the same time; he could also use his fist and sword or his shield and sword at the same time. An unprecedented road of cultivation opened in front of Zhang Tie's eyes, which shocked Zhang Tie for quite a while.

After recovering his composure, Zhang Tie started to cultivate his fundamental swordsmanship in Castle of Black Iron instead of being in the trouble-reappearance situation. He told Heller to divert a thick water flow onto his body from the heavens waterfall. Zhang Tie started to cultivate each movement of fundamental swordsmanship under the heavy impulse of the torrent. At this moment, Zhang Tie didn't need any iron puppet anymore. As he had gazed at that puppet for too long, he could imagine about its look even when he closed his eyes.

Zhang Tie used the two heaviest long swords that he could find from Castle of Black Iron, each weighed 280 kg, to attack the illusory steel puppet which existed in his mind.

He was improving his fundamental swordsmanship, his will and his body at the same time. Zhang Tie didn't stop his cultivation until the potential of each of his cells was fully tapped.

When he could not wave the 280 kg long swords, he used smaller ones. Until his fingers trembled when he held the commonest long swords would he replace the long swords with his fingers. Under the impulse of the heavy water flow, Zhang Tie kept repeating the 8 movements of the fundamental swordsmanship using his fingers.

Through such a painstaking exercise, Zhang Tie gradually recovered his attacking times per hand from one round to two rounds. Almost every time he took a fruit, Zhang Tie would feel freer in movements under the impulse of the water flow. However, the dropping speed of the water flow would soon increase, which gradually offset his physical strength.

In this way, Zhang Tie completely forgot about time; neither did he remember how many times had he repeated the 8 movements of fundamental swordsmanship. He could only remember that he had already opened the 4th floor of All-spirits Pagoda and lit the 143rd surging point. After lighting one more surging point would he promote to LV 12 great battle master...

...

This day, when Zhang Tie woke up, he didn't feel different than usual days. However, the moment he picked the two 280 kg's long swords to start his cultivation had he felt an evident agility and affinity from the two long swords. It seemed that they were not long swords but parts of his body. When he closed his eyes, the long swords almost became his eyes and enabled him to sense everything, including the trivial air turbulence. When he raised his long swords which then became his hands and enabled him to touch and tear everything apart. When he poked the long swords into the ground which then became his feet on the ground and could never be moved by others.

A whim occurred to Zhang Tie's mind while his long swords instantly crashed with each other. In a split second, with a sharp thunder-like sonic boom, two terrifying crescent-shaped sword qi flew out of the swords and swept over all the grasses, trees and

mountain rocks within 50 m at the foot of the immortal mountain in the form of a cross after flying over all the obstacles in front of them, leaving a huge cross symbol on the mountain ridge...

Zhang Tie was shocked as he felt that he was pretty familiar with "Meteor Shower Sword" immediately.

"Congratulations, my lord, you've awakened another ancestral bloodline and formed the Iron-blood Battle Qi!" Heller's voice drifted from Zhang Tie's back...

Chapter 678: Great Battle Master

Zhang Tie turned around and saw Heller walking towards him.

"You mean I've awakened a new ancestral bloodline?"

"My lord, you must have sensed the change. You've awakened sword affinity!" Heller smiled.

'How weird it is. When I woke up, I just felt different with the two long swords. I remembered that when I took the fruit of bloodline and activated ancestral bloodlines, I had to use 62 points of bloodline energy to activate sword affinity. I injected the remaining last bit of bloodline energy into the marshmallow of sword affinity; I did not expect this ancestral bloodline to activate at this moment.' Zhang Tie thought.

Zhang Tie thought it might be related to his painstaking training during this period, 'Ahh, how long have I cultivated in Castle of Black Iron?'

Zhang Tie then asked Heller the same question that he was considering.

"According to the date outside, it's already August. My lord, you've exceeded the cultivation of fundamental swordsmanship more than that you could expect. As a reward, you've awakened your ancestral bloodline..." Heller answered.

"Exceeded?" Zhang Tie indeed had not thought about this before. Since he started his painstaking cultivation under that torrent, Zhang Tie even forgot how many times he had reached out his swords.

"Yes, my lord. During this period, you could keep reaching out swords 16 times per second per hand. That's to say, you can reach out swords 32 times per second with two hands, namely 115,200 times per hour. Under the torrent, you trained 8 hours, namely, you had reached out your swords 921,600 times a day. Excluding

the cultivation that you made in the trouble-reappearance situation, you had stayed 68 days in Castle of Black Iron by yesterday, during which period, you had reached out your swords 62,668,800 times under the torrent. However, the standard of fulfilling the cultivation of fundamental swordsmanship in Hidden Dragon Palace was that the cultivator had to reach out swords 8 million times. Plus the times that you reached out your swords in the trouble-reappearance situation, you have already reached out your swords over 80 million times, 10 more times than regulated. Besides, you were cultivating it by two hands at the same time under very tough environment. Because of this, you awakened your sword affinity!"

Perhaps Zhang Tie was not talented in cultivation; however, his strong will and persistence aroused Heller's appreciation.

"Over 80 million times?" Zhang Tie was stunned after hearing the figure. Zhang Tie didn't know that he had accomplished such a great work——by reaching out his swords over 80 million times in total, he accomplished his cultivation of fundamental swordsmanship and laid a solid foundation for his road towards a real powerhouse.

"My lord, have you found any difference in your current movements than before?"

"Not yet." Zhang Tie replied like an idiot as he indeed had not sensed any change.

Heller then pointed at the place where Zhang Tie stood, "My lord, this platform is a very firm granite, which was as high as 1.7 m or so at the beginning; however, look at how high it is now, my lord?"

Zhang Tie lowered his head and checked it carefully. He then realized that this granite was only a bit higher than 0.5 m with a pit in the center which was caused by his own gravity when he was meditating.

"This is the best certificate for your painstaking exercise. The

torrent that flushed onto your body and your long swords lowered this granite over 1 m in height. Even the hard rock had changed its look under the impulse of the torrent, how could you not sense the change when you cultivated under the impulse of the torrent, my lord?"

Zhang Tie then scratched his head bashfully before replying, "Erm...I really didn't sense any change!"

"That's because you've already been used to cultivate in such an environment. With your rising battle force and increasing bearing capability, I gradually increased the impulse of the torrent. Therefore, you could not sense any change. There's no water flow now, you can try again with your swords, my lord!"

After hearing Heller's words, Zhang Tie casually moved with double swords. In a split second, the platform was covered with thunder-like sonic booms and dense sword shadows, displaying brilliant, grim and terrifying sword flowers...

The sword flowers faded away while everything else on the platform disappeared in 1 second. What happened just now was like an illusion.

Zhang Tie watched his hands with an unimaginable look. In the past one second, he was just cultivating his fundamental swordsmanship as usual. However, in a split second, he had felt his hands accelerating greatly in a much easier way. Therefore, in a second, he launched his attack 19 rounds by two hands, namely 304 times in total. Because of a super fast speed, the brilliant sword shadows formed sword flowers.

Sword flowers was a high realm of swordsmanship recorded in the secret book "True Swordsmanship". The full description about it was "Even water is forbidden in sword flowers!"

'Now that I could reach out swords 304 times per second, I could also punch 304 times per second.' Zhang Tie thought.

Zhang Tie watched Heller before saying, "Give me a basin of water..."

Heller responded with a smile as he pointed towards the firm water wall on Zhang Tie's side. A water flow instantly flew towards Zhang Tie's head. Compared to the terrifying super high speed of the water wall, this water flow didn't flow so fast. It was equal to the speed of that of a basin of water being poured down from upstairs.

When the water came close to Zhang Tie, Zhang Tie felt that it was flowing as slowly as the crawling speed of a tortoise. After that, he reached out his swords and cut the water into numerous pieces and minced it, then he lifted it and pushed it aside in extremely common movements without even releasing his sword qi.

In Heller's eyes, when the water flow almost touched Zhang Tie's head, with sword flashes, the water had turned into mist and been blown away by the sword wind like a magic...

After the mist faded away, Heller saw Zhang Tie standing there with his swords supporting on the ground while Zhang Tie's body was still dry.

At that moment, Zhang Tie finally sensed his great change. He had faintly and easily reached an unimaginable realm on strength, speed, responding ability, judgment and coordination between limbs, consciousness and eyes. Zhang Tie finally felt a faint resonance between his state and his knight's consciousness.

Forming a resonance with the knight's consciousness and feeling more harmonious indicated a great progress and unusual realm.

"Thank you, Heller!" Zhang Tie appreciated sincerely. He knew that he could never make such a remarkable achievement in such a short period without the environment and conditions that Heller created for him.

"My lord, it's my great honor!" Heller bowed to show his sincerity elegantly.

...

3 days later, Zhang Tie sat on the same platform with crossed legs while a powerful torrent poured down from the sky and kept flushing Zhang Tie's body. Zhang Tie didn't notice it; instead, he was fully focusing on the stick of spiritual feather in his Shrine.

Right then, the purple stick of feather radiated strong brilliance with a slight quiver. Closely after that, a golden flame in the shape of a bird came into being and started to fly around the stick of spiritual feather in his Shrine.

At this moment, there were two bird-shaped golden flames in Zhang Tie's Shrine. During this period of cultivation, Zhang Tie found that he had better keep a golden bird-shaped flame in his Shrine surging point all the time if he wanted to find the next surging point of "King Roc Sutra" by constant attempts in the trouble-reappearance situation. In this way, he could increase the efficiency in lighting surging points instead of having to accumulate enough energy to form a golden bird-shaped flame in his Shrine before making attempts to light new surging points. He didn't have to explode hundreds of times in the trouble-reappearance situation hurriedly before lighting a surging point; instead, he could spread the experiences of exploding himself hundreds of times in intervals between cultivation periods.

When the new golden bird-shaped flame came into being, Zhang Tie let the other one fly out of his Shrine towards a surging point on his sacrum to integrate with that surging point.

With a sound "boom", Zhang Tie's mind sea quivered; at the same time, that surging point on the sacrum was finally lit and radiated a golden flame...

After lighting the 144th surging point, Zhang Tie finally became a LV 12 great battle master...

When he lit the surging point, before Zhang Tie celebrated, all the surging points across his body that had been lit quivered at the same time. Right then, the golden bird-shaped flames in all surging points that had been lit radiated great brilliance. Closely after that, a bizarre strength appeared that made Zhang Tie feel like losing his weight. At the same time, every single cell turned into the wind as they became lighter and moved faster. With a slight move, they turned into the light and flashed towards the endless sea of stars...

This was the "reward" from "King Roc Sutra" after Zhang Tie promoted to a higher level. In the former two times, Zhang Tie was rewarded with great strength; however, this time...

...

Zhang Tie finally opened his brilliant eyes and stood up. At the same time, he felt like frying beams as the 144 surging points that he had lit were cracking at the same time while the high-speed torrent that poured down from the sky stopped.

Zhang Tie gradually revealed a brilliant smile when he sensed his light body...

The reward from "King Roc Sutra" for the cultivator who promoted to LV 12 was agility, namely higher speed and faster responsive ability. 'God, I love you...'

Zhang Tie burst out into laughter...

'It's time to leave Castle of Black Iron...'

Chapter 679: The First Victory

Trouble-reappearance situation, Shadow-Demon Cell...

Abyan's roars had sounded for 2 hours in Shadow-Demon Cell. At this moment, Abyan's two wings had been torn into pieces; its powerful tail had broken while its body was covered with wounds. How miserable it was!

Abyan broke its tail itself. If not, Zhang Tie would clutch its tail and beat it into a meat pie.

Although Abyan's protective battle qi was powerful, it could not bear Zhang Tie's fierce movements by clutching its tail and pounding its body onto the ground one time after another. Some big pits had formed on the ground; each time Zhang Tie pounded its body on the floor would Abyan feel being crushed by a train while spurting out a big mouth of fresh blood; meanwhile, many bones on its body would be broken.

Zhang Tie's strength was too terrifying. What was more was Zhang Tie's high speed, ghost-like footsteps and movements.

This was a bloody battle that had never happened since the birth of the Shadow-Demon Cell between a LV 14 battle demon and Zhang Tie, who had just promoted to LV 12 great battle master.

If a common great battle master fought a battle demon who was two levels higher than him, the common great battle master would lose the battle evidently in half a minute. However, Zhang Tie was not a common battle master. Therefore, this was a fierce battle.

Abyan had powerful battle skills and protective battle qi which could defend and defuse many common protective battle qis. Additionally, it was two levels higher than that of Zhang Tie and had rich battle experiences...

By contrast, Zhang Tie had greater speed; although his battle skill could not match that of Abyan, his battle skills were special;

additionally, Zhang Tie had rich battle experiences.

Zhang Tie and Abyan both fought with bare hands.

The Shadow-Demon Cell had been disordered while the floor and walls were covered with huge pits caused by battle qi booms. The bricks and concretes were falling like the rain from the roof. This was also the largest destruction that this trouble-reappearance situation had encountered since it was formed.

Through this battle, Zhang Tie concluded two points. First, in a duel, if a powerful battle qi didn't strike the opponent, it would cause a huge destruction to the environment. Second, Iron-blood Fist and Iron-blood Battle Qi were powerful enough to tear apart a LV 14 battle demon's protective battle qi.

Abyan roared with twisting face. At the same time, he waved his hands and launched off-body battle qi attacks towards Zhang Tie like a lunatic.

Noticing Abyan's movements, Zhang Tie became stunned as he suddenly recalled how he gritted his teeth and tried to survive longer in front of Abyan previously. In previous times, Zhang Tie estimated that he looked as anxious as Abyan at this moment. As a result, Zhang Tie was almost struck by Abyan's off-body battle qi.

When Abyan's strike almost touched Zhang Tie's cloth corner, Zhang Tie straightly disappeared.

In such a small Shadow-Demon Cell, wherever Zhang Tie was, he could appear in any place of this cell with only one step. For Abyan, Zhang Tie was just like a virtual shadow. Everything about Zhang Tie was false, only Abyan's strike was real.

Zhang Tie appeared 20 m behind Abyan. Before Abyan turned around, Zhang Tie's punch had reached its back, causing the thin protective battle qi that Abyan had just formed collapse in a split second. Besides, a lot of scales flew off its body while Abyan spurted out another mouth of fresh blood.

Before Abyan made its counterattack, Zhang Tie had disappeared once again.

Zhang Tie's strike made Abyan fly into a rage.

"Go die..." Abyan roared as it launched its top trump-card battle skill.

9 black bats flew out of Abyan's hands and charged at Zhang Tie at the same time.

Of course, they were not real bats, but bats composed of powerful battle qi.

Battle-qi in shape was a battle skill that a LV 13 battle general could master. With this skill, one's battle qi could play a greater destruction when in a strike. Zhang Tie saw Scala's battle-qi in shape of a destructive wild wolf when he was in Mocco City for the first time.

After fighting with Abyan for so long in Shadow-Demon Cell, it was Zhang Tie's first time to see Abyan's battle-qi in shape.

This was Abyan's 3rd battle-qi in shape within 2 hours.

Not knowing why, Zhang Tie felt that Abyan was changing completely today. Previously, Zhang Tie felt that Abyan was like a tall and terrifying mountain ridge who could tear him off in a split second; however, today, Zhang Tie felt Abyan becoming clumsy as each of its movement lacked something.

The 9 bats charged at Zhang Tie from 4 directions. In the eyes of onlookers, if there was, Zhang Tie had no way to retreat or dodge away. However, in Zhang Tie's eyes, he could still see possibilities in this impossibility. With the combination of his powerful knight's consciousness and his enlightenment of "one step, one scenery", Zhang Tie instantly moved over 100 steps in a limited area by moving forward, backward, leftward, rightward, raising or lowering his head as light as a virtual smoke. After trembling a few times, Zhang Tie got rid of Abyan's trump-card battle-qi in shape

for the 3rd time.

Abyan pounced on Zhang Tie. With its mouth widely opened, Abyan exposed its sharp teeth and wanted to bite off a piece of flesh from Zhang Tie's body.

In Zhang Tie's eyes, Abyan was just moving fast.

Zhang Tie knew that he could hardly squeeze anything more out of Abyan, 'It's time to end this battle.'

...

After getting rid of Abyan's strike, Zhang Tie easily passed through Abyan's front claws. When he passed by Abyan's body, Zhang Tie instantly turned around and swept over Abyan's neck as fast as a lightning bolt by using his palm horizontally like a sharp sword...

As a result, Abyan's head was sent flying in the air. While spurting out hot blood, the headless corps continued to rush forward a few more steps before falling on the ground.

With a sound "bang", Abyan's head fell on the ground and rolled a long distance ahead.

Standing in the Shadow-Demon Cell, Zhang Tie watched his hands with a complex look. Just now, he killed Abyan which was once like a nightmare by his own hands.

"I made it, I made it..." Zhang Tie mumbled. Finally, he roared while two lines of tears poured out of his eye sockets, "Angel, Sharapova, Nia, Hirtina, Mia, did you see that? I finally killed Abyan with my own hands today. I can be your guardian knight now, ah..."

The entire Shadow-Demon Cell rocked while numerous stones fell off the roof.

Zhang Tie raised his head with a dumbfounded look, 'What's the matter? My sound is not that destructive...'

"F..."

With a boom, the entire Shadow-Demon Cell collapsed in a split second due to Abyan's last battle-qi in shape. Zhang Tie, appeared in this scene as a winner for the first time had been pressed by millions of tons of stones before tasting the complex moods. He didn't even finish the word "F*ck". Even though Zhang Tie had taken dozens of more trouble-reappearance fruits during this period of cultivation, he still had no strength to resist...

The trouble-reappearance situation was shattered and turned into light spots.

...

Under the small tree, Zhang Tie opened his eyes. He felt cold under his lower eyelids. After touching it, he realized that his original body had been dropping off tears.

Although the accident had passed a long time ago, the death of the girls in Blackhot City were always making Zhang Tie's depressive. Zhang Tie always dreamed about the girls' crying looks. However, he was unable to help them; he could only see them being engulfed by the dark force. After killing the murderer who killed those girls in Blackhot City today, Zhang Tie finally felt reassured.

Zhang Tie picked himself up from the ground and walked downstairs that high platform.

Heller was waiting for him downside there. At the sight of Heller, Zhang Tie hurriedly wiped off his tears bashfully and said, "Erm...I've just won a battle...I cried due to the excitement. Have I said something weird just now?"

"No!" Heller shook his head with a solemn look. After that, he moved his eyes from Zhang Tie's face like having not seen Zhang Tie's tears as he suggested, "My lord, we've worked out the latest space and topographic renovation map, do you want to take a look

at it?"

"Fine!" Zhang Tie nodded.

Heller waved his hand while a huge three-dimensional vertical image appeared in front of Zhang Tie.

"As many basic energy storages have been accumulated in Castle of Black Iron in these months, the land area in Castle of Black Iron would be expanded to 1,000 sq km or so. Meanwhile, a sea area as wide as about 500 sq km would come into being..." Heller explained to Zhang Tie while pointing at the three-dimensional image...

With Heller's explanation, Zhang Tie recovered his composure and focused on the rotating three-dimensional map...

...

Chapter 680: New Look (I)

The rotating three-dimensional image displayed a new look of Castle of Black Iron, whose land area expanded by 10 times. Besides, there was an ocean. The moment Zhang Tie saw that had he felt his heart racing.

'This is my space, this is the land that I accumulated step by step.' Zhang Tie told himself as he felt proud. Additionally, the immortal mountain in Castle of Black Iron, namely where Zhang Tie was standing on increased by over 10,000 m in height immediately which looked more magnificent and mysterious.

Zhang Tie saw some white clouds above the three-dimensional image.

"White clouds? How could we have white clouds here?" Zhang Tie asked Heller.

"With the expansion of the space in Castle of Black Iron, the natural circulation system of this space will gradually show itself. White cloud is just the initial phenomenon. If this space could further expand later on, it would display its more complex, three-dimensional climate types which are adapted to all sorts of living beings."

"Will it rain here?"

"Maybe!" Heller answered faintly.

"Ah? What do you mean?"

"I mean it will rain if you want it in this space; it will not rain if you don't want it. It depends on you, my lord!"

Zhang Tie nodded, 'Although it's a marvelous way to control the weather; it's nothing strange in Castle of Black Iron.'

"How many people could this new land hold?"

"All the new land is very fertile. Main grain crops could be

planted in the three seasons of a year. If we made full use of this land, we could hold a population of more than 3 million people!"

"More than 3 million people?" Zhang Tie slightly frowned as he stretched out his hand to work on the three-dimensional image, "The sea area is too large; just cancel it off. We can change it into a land. Additionally, we need some inland freshwater lakes and as more natural river systems as possible so as to irrigate the land on river banks. We should prioritize the benefits of as more people here as possible!"

Under the manipulation of Zhang Tie, the sea area disappeared while the land area expanded by a quarter. Additionally, some more lakes and rivers appeared in the land.

Watching the change that Zhang Tie made, Heller understood Zhang Tie's meaning immediately, "My lord, are you preparing for more people to live in Castle of Black Iron?"

Zhang Tie nodded, 'The holy war has just started a couple of years ago, however, numerous people have lost their homeland. In the future, the holy war will be crueler.' Zhang Tie could not predict the outcome of this holy war; however, he wanted to do more preparations for the possible future. Castle of Black Iron could serve as a sacred shelter and enable more people to survive on. Take Ice and Snow Wilderness for instance, as an isolated overseas land in Blackson Humans Corridor, it could barely stand too long if the entire Blackson Humans Corridor collapsed. If there was one day that Ice and Snow Wilderness was mired in an impasse, he could teleport all his followers from Ice and Snow Wilderness to Castle of Black Iron. Although the method seemed to be a bit irresponsible, Zhang Tie knew that what counted most in the holy war was to save as more humans as possible.

After figuring out Zhang Tie's train of thoughts, Heller started a new change. After a short while, he had completed the adjustment of the entire three-dimensional image. Heller pulled down the image with one hand while the entire land area expanded to over

4,000 sq km once more like spreading a pie on the pan.

"My lord, now that you want to hold as more people as possible here, we don't have to keep the new land so thick. According to the previous plan, the land and rock layer in Castle of Black Iron was as thick as 800 m. After the adjustment, its thickness turns into 200 m. Therefore, we could increase more land area and hold over 10 million population in total inside Castle of Black Iron."

Zhang Tie patted his forehead forcefully, "Right, how could I forget about this?".

"Is there any side effect?"

"No, these people could only live on the land surface. If we just consider their daily lives, 200 m in thickness is enough. If you are not satisfied with land area, 20 m in thickness also works. After all, everything here is carried in this space. As long as there's such a layer of soil on the ground, it will grow plant and grains!"

'20 m in thickness?' Zhang Tie rubbed his face, "It's like rolling a dough on the panel. Although the thickness won't bring any side effect to Castle of Black Iron, it feels weird—one guy might penetrate through the land in a few days using a hoe? It's too thin. As it's humans' settlement, I'd better make it safer. Just set it as 200 m in thickness then. This thickness could help people survive and feel safer. If I have any demand in the future, I will increase the thickness."

"I've got another question."

"Can we produce a mineral vein in Castle of Black Iron this time?" Zhang Tie asked Heller with full of hope.

"It has an advanced ability to produce mineral vein in Castle of Black Iron. In the current stage, it requires a great price. Any small low-end mineral vein will require enormous merit values and aura values as well as some other prerequisites. Therefore, I don't suggest you to use this ability now."

After thinking for a few seconds, Zhang Tie asked Heller, "Which mineral vein could we form in Castle of Black Iron based on the current merit values, aura values and basic energy storage?"

"If all the current resources are put in, due to the bucket effect, you can gain a mini, low-end common iron ore whose gross reserve is less than 80,000 tons after using up all the merit values. The template of the iron ores originates from those low-end wasted iron ores that you brought in Castle of Black Iron to increase its basic energy storage when you joined the survival training in Wildwolf Valley! Meanwhile, after forming this iron ore, due to the exhaustion of merit values and the consumption of the greater part of aura values, Castle of Black Iron would not accomplish this space and topographical renovation although there were still a great amount of basic energy storage left."

After hearing Heller's words, Zhang Tie woke up at once. He then took a deep breath as he had not imagined that it was so difficult for Castle of Black Iron to form a natural mineral vein at such a great cost. However, after thinking for a short while, Zhang Tie understood it, 'If it was very easy to form mineral veins in Castle of Black Iron, I would be the richest man in the world only by casually forming some quality gold ores, gem mines or crystal mines in Castle of Black Iron.'

"You mean it's impossible for me to form some mineral veins in Castle of Black Iron now. Is there any other method?"

"The mineral veins in Castle of Black Iron could be formed in two ways. We've known about the first method, when you could provide sufficient resources, you could form a certain mineral vein. Second, after space and topographical renovation, Castle of Black Iron could form a mineral ore naturally. If Castle of Black Iron could form over 1,000 sq km' ocean or land area whose thickness was over 50 km, namely 50,000 m, it would form the preliminary earth's shell. By then, you might gain one or more natural mineral veins or ore deposits whose locations, species and

reserves were optional..."

"That is to say, if I'm able to complete such a space and topographic expansion, I might get one or more optional mineral resources by chance?" Zhang Tie widely opened his eyes as he had not imagined that Castle of Black Iron could have such a marvelous ability.

"Yes. Generally, the wider the expanded land area is, the thicker the earth surface and earth's crust are, the more kinds of mineral ores and reserves will be formed optionally in Castle of Black Iron. This process is almost like that outside of Castle of Black Iron. If you're able to accomplish a space and topographic expansion as wide as that of Blackson Humans Corridor, I promise that you will have no fewer mineral veins and ore deposits in the new land of Castle of Black Iron than that in Blackson Humans Corridor."

Zhang Tie showed the whites of his eyes. Based on his little body and little energy, he could not accumulate sufficient basic energy storage for over 100 years by soaking himself in the ocean so as to accomplish such a wide area of expansion, not to mention that he had to have corresponding merit values and aura values. 'Just forget about it. It's too luxurious to think about mineral veins in Castle of Black Iron, it's not even as economical as buying well-extracted metals from outside and bringing them inside Castle of Black Iron.'

After then, Zhang Tie and Heller continued to adjust the three-dimensional map.

A whim occurred to Zhang Tie as he pointed at a place on the immortal mountain, "I need a training field here with a firm land."

"A training field?" Heller watched Zhang Tie with a dubious look.

"Like that where I cultivated a few days ago. I want to cultivate under the impulse of seawater which is diverted from outside to that place. I feel pretty good cultivating in that state. Additionally, I could have iron-body fruits to take!"

"No problem, my lord, are you going to meditate in seclusion in the ocean?"

"You got me!"

"If so, we'd better build a waterfall on this side of the immortal mountain. It's a very considerable impulse from 10,000 m high. It could provide a better cultivation environment when you had no chance to meditate in seclusion in the ocean..." After saying that, Heller drew his fingers on the three-dimensional map while a waterfall straightly flew off one side of the immortal mountain. With a splashing sound, a river appeared on the ground below...

Chapter 681: New Look (II)

The water source of the waterfall pouring off the immortal mountain originated from the melting deposits of snow on the top of the mountain. After Heller made a few rapid adjustments, Zhang Tie saw a new change in the shape of the immortal mountain—— There was a new mountain peak over 2000 m in height which was covered with white snow.

At the sight of this, Zhang Tie praised the marvel of the Castle of Black Iron once again. 'I'm afraid that only the real creator could make this.'

When Zhang Tie and Heller were planning and adjusting the three-dimensional map on space and topographical renovation, Agan, Aziz, and Edward had already arrived at their sides and were watching the three-dimensional map with an interested look.

"My lord, can you create a smithing workshop for me this time?" Edward asked with a big smile on Zhang Tie's side.

"You want a smithing workshop?" Zhang Tie glanced at Edward with a dumbfounded look.

"Yup, with a smithing workshop, I will be able to produce all sorts of instruments for you, my lord!"

Zhang Tie threw a glance at Heller, "Can we?"

"Yes, it only requires a bit basic energy storage. We can layout an independent space at the bottom of the immortal mountain which could serve as Edward's smithing workshop while making some high-temperature fires." Heller nodded as he made a slight adjustment on the three-dimensional map. Closely after that, a tidy space appeared inside the immortal mountain, which was further divided into many isolated and inter-linked cells. Besides, there were dozens of fires on the ground in that space.

Watching this, Edward smiled in a satisfied manner.

"My lord, I need a cellar and some wine vats in the hinterland of the immortal mountain. With them, I can brew all sorts of palatable drinkings for you." Aziz opened his mouth.

Zhang Tie threw another glance at Heller, "We should treat them fairly, just make them for Aziz."

Heller then made another slight adjustment on a position of the immortal mountain. As a result, a mountain-cave sized cellar and hundreds of huge wine vats appeared on the map. Covering an area of over 20 sq km, the cellar was further divided into many layers. Aziz was so happy at the sight of that. Even Zhang Tie was shocked by such an adjustment.

"Erm, do we need such a wide area?"

"Yes, we do, we do!" Aziz interrupted Zhang Tie. "My lord, when you have a great undertaking, you will definitely find this cellar useful."

Agan was so excited that he kept rubbing his hands on one side. "My lord, can you build a stone mountain outside the immortal mountain. It can better provide sufficient architecture stones for me. There're few stones left in Castle of Black Iron now."

Before Zhang Tie uttered, Heller had already pointed on the map while an undulating bald hill appeared.

"There're blue stones, marble stones, granite, China granite and obsidian on this hill, which are available to build some cities."

"Thank you, thank you!" Agan's eyes gleamed as he started to stammer. Zhang Tie also couldn't help but laugh out loud, 'How cute they are!'

After Edward, Aziz and Agan posed their requirements, an important thought crossed Zhang Tie's mind——houses. The cabins were far from meeting his demands at this moment.

"Aww, I need more spacious houses that can hold more people." Zhang Tie looked at the map for a short while before choosing a

place covering over 10 sq km of vast plains that were leaning against the snow peak on the hillside of the immortal mountain. "At this place..."

"Do you have other requests on the houses, such as exteriors?"

"At your will." Zhang Tie said casually.

Heller then pointed at the place where Zhang Tie had selected while a tall building that occupied a wide area appeared on the three-dimensional map, the tallest of which was higher than 200 m.

Zhang Tie was dumbfounded by the architectural complexity of the area. Because the tallest building in the three-dimensional map was absolutely a huge tree. Precisely, it was a palace that looked like a huge tree. Many places in that building were unimaginable. Even before the Catastrophe, humans could never build such a delicate tall building.

"This, this is... too exaggerated. Won't it break down?" Zhang Tie asked Heller with a dubious look.

"If it was a concrete building, it would collapse for sure as it didn't correspond to the structure of building mechanics. However, it's not a building precisely, it's a tree!"

"A tree?"

"This is a palace tree. It's made of special silicon-based lifeform. The Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree could produce the seed of a palace tree, which consumes more basic energy storage, merit values, and aura values than are required to build a real palace complex. However, this palace tree has an advantage, it could constantly grow and expand its space and land. After inputting the basic energy storage, merit values, and aura values once in growing it, we don't need to input other resources or build other buildings even as the population of residents increases. Such a palace tree is very suitable to the living of humans!"

It was really out of Zhang Tie's imagination that it was a palace tree. After being shocked for a few seconds, Zhang Tie nodded forcefully. "Well, let's grow this palace tree!"

"My lord, please have the Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree produce the seed of a palace tree."

Zhang Tie opened the management panel of Castle of Black Iron when he indeed saw the sub-option "Production of Seed of Palace Tree" under the option "Production of special seed and fruit of Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree". At the sight of the resources that it required, Zhang Tie took a deep breath. However, Zhang Tie felt very happy the moment he thought that he could live in such an exotic silicon-based lifeform. Additionally, he only needed to input resources one time. Therefore, Zhang Tie gritted his teeth as he pressed the button.

——My lord, Do you want to produce the seed of a palace tree, Yes or No?

——Yes...No...

——Yes!

Soon after pressing the "Yes" button, Zhang Tie felt that the Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree on his side was radiating a yellowish luster. Each leaf and twig of the small tree was giving out light. At the same time, the tree leaves were rubbing each other, causing a sound as euphonious as that of an organ.

After a few minutes, the small tree's luster disappeared while a pineapple-sized seed was hanging over the small tree.

Zhang Tie walked to the front of the small tree and picked off the very seed from the small tree. Holding the seed, Zhang Tie felt like holding a heavy stone. After gazing at it for quite a while, Zhang Tie didn't see any relation between this pineapple-sized seed and that palace tree in the three-dimensional map.

With one more partner and citizen, Zhang Tie felt that the small

tree was very happy. Zhang Tie came to Heller's side with that seed in hand.

"What do I do now?" Zhang Tie asked Heller.

"Just give it to me, my lord!"

Zhang Tie then handed the seed to Heller.

"Do you have any other requests, my lord?"

Zhang Tie pointed towards the mountain spring, "Whatever, as I've invested so many resources towards this renovation, just upgrade the mountain spring then!"

"My lord, do you want to promote to quality mountain spring to a Class A aura mountain spring?"

"Is there any difference"

"A Class A aura mountain spring is one level higher than a quality mountain spring. In the outside world, there are also a few natural Class A aura mountain springs in the wild."

"Class A aura mountain spring then!"

"Fine!"

...

Ten minutes later, after agreeing on some details, Zhang Tie and Heller then confirmed the plan on space and topographical renovation of Castle of Black Iron completely. In the new plan, the entire immortal mountain and over 100 sq km of neighboring land were surrounded by a huge lake, being linked to which, some rivers nourished and irrigated the surrounding land. The Castle of Black Iron was covered with fertile land and woods which were abundant in water sources.

The Abyss of Chaos, after being expanded by 10 times, was in a canyon being surrounded by the immortal mountain.

"My lord, do you need other adjustments?"

"No need!"

"Let's start it then!"

"Good!"

...

Until 1 second before of the start of the renovations, the high speed-water flow pouring off the sky stopped, the colorful clouds started to pervade in all directions. In a split second, it had covered the Castle of Black Iron.

Watching such a bizarre scene, all the residents in the small own in the distance became perplexed. They just prayed loudly.

Heller then threw that seed of palace tree into the colorful clouds.

"Heller, is there any problem with those residents?" Zhang Tie asked.

"No problem, my lord. Because they were brought in by you, as long as you're okay, they will be okay."

Before Zhang Tie figured out Heller's words, the colorful clouds started to roll. In the misty cloud, Zhang Tie could see nothing near him.

The ground started to rock, the immortal mountain beneath his feet started to rock, the whole world started to rock. At the same time, Zhang Tie heard tumbling sounds coming from all directions.

Zhang Tie felt that he was standing on a car which was running on a bumpy road being paved with fine pellets.

After 3 minutes, the rock stopped while the colorful cloud covering the entire space started to fade away to the marginal region.

In 3 minutes, the Castle of Black Iron had already changed its look greatly. It expanded by dozens of times and became

boundless. The entire immortal mountain was as high as 12,000 m like the pillar of the world. The lofty mountain undulated like a Chinese dragon in the middle of the Castle of Black Iron.

Zhang Tie lowered his head as he looked at his own feet. He felt that he had already come to a new world. Even though he was on the hillside, he was still over 6,000 m high.

In the distance, a heaven river was pouring off from the sky. The seed of the palace tree had already grown into a tree-sized palace behind him which was higher than 200 m. Its crown was as splendid and fantastic as that of colorful clouds. In the farther and higher place behind the palace tree, Zhang Tie saw a picturesque mountain peak being circled by white clouds...

...

"Creating the world, our God is creating a new world..."

In the small town, more people responded it at this moment. They were so moved that they even dropped off tears at the sight of their God creating a new world. Everybody then poured towards the only shrine in the small town

From then on, the firm belief became indestructible.

...

After a few hours, Zhang Tie left Castle of Black Iron.

Chapter 682: The Phenomena in a Chaotic World

The Kalay Mountain Range was the natural north-south watershed of Blackson Humans Corridor and the loftiest mountain range in the Corridor. This mountain range undulated tens of thousands of miles from east to west. It extended to the endless black or grey wild regions on the map in the west and reached the seaside in the east.

After a few days of heavy rain, more than 1,000 sq miles of the Kalay Mountain Range was covered with a mist. Numerous people who evacuated from the north were gathering in the north of such a natural watershed. At this moment, the north of Kalay Mountain Range was covered with refugee tents. In the most crowded place, the grey refugees' tents lasted over 100 miles in length. Before the earlier refugees left, new ones poured in...

Deaths occurred everyday. Some of them died of natural disasters, some died of human reasons. Starvation, disease, coldness, murder, robbery and rape were raging across the refugee camp...

Two days ago, the garrisons at the Kalur Harbor of Ungava Federation had just suppressed a civilian riot in the westernmost part of the Kalay Mountain Range, causing a casualty of over 50,000 people.

As they had stagnated in the harbor for a long time, being driven by hunger and fear, a great batch of refugees started to pour into Kalur Harbor to grab the steamer tickets two days ago, namely, August 27. Nobody knew when the riot started. When the basic orders collapsed, the refugees started to abduct steamers violently, causing the tragedy.

Policemen who maintained the order were covered by the flooding refugees, causing a severe stampede accident. Some

refugees who were scrambling to board the steamer were pushed into the icy seawater. Some boatmen were killed by the refugees with daggers. The chaos in Kalur Harbor finally influenced the entire city. When a 2000-ton passenger liner Golden Pearl capsized after colliding with another steamer anchoring at the harbor under the manipulation of a lot of refugees, the bloody suppression started.

It was not fresh for rulers to maintain their orders violently wherever it was. However, when it happened at this moment, it was more miserable. In front of the threat of the demon army, human troops were suppressing human refugees. The implication was evident—This was a chaotic world, a real chaotic world, when all the orders gave way to the human instinct of seeking for survival and all the axioms were hiding behind punches and blades.

The consecutive heavy rain didn't flush away the blood stains in Kalur Harbor. The corpses of those refugees who were killed in the suppression were straightly thrown into the ocean. Nobody cared about their lives at all as new refugees were pouring into Kalur City...

In Goose Bay, Vedirac Federation, which was over 1,200 miles away from Kalur City, there were also a great number of refugees. There was a "Goose Bay Trail" in Goose Bay through which those refugees who had no traffic tools to climb over the Kalay Mountain Range could penetrate through the Kalay Mountain Range.

"As it is the rainy season, the Goose Bay Trail doesn't work. Due to mountain floods, many parts of the trail has collapsed, causing great casualties. Don't keep moving forward. You're seeking for death. You cannot penetrate through the Kalay Mountain Range in this way..." A military commissioner of Vedirac Federation was standing on a high platform, wet through, in the heavy rain while holding a trumpet made of an iron sheet and shouting exhaustively so as to prevent those refugees from entering the Goose Bay Trail.

Some refugees stopped while more refugees just entered it in a numb and silent way. When they passed by this young military commissioner, they even didn't glance at him.

The young military commissioner just watched the great number of refugees entering the Goose Bay Trail with simplified maps in hand with a grieved look. In such a season, less than 1/10 of these people could finally penetrate through Kalay Mountain Range through Goose Bay Trail.

More refugees were gathering in Upton, the capital city of Free Commercial Federation over 3,000 miles away from Goose Bay.

Upton was the largest and most famous aerotropolis and commercial city in the north of Blackson Humans Corridor. This city and Millbay in the south of Kalay Mountain Range were both members of Free Commercial Federation. With Kalay Mountain Range in between, the two cities were connected with each other through airlines, which supported the prosperity of the entire Free Commercial Federation.

Upton City once managed the largest and most prosperous airline that traversed Kalay Mountain Range in the north of Blackson Humans Corridor. At this moment, Upton's air traffic volume was over 10 times more prosperous than that before the holy war. Numerous airships were flowing from the south and landing in Upton City so as to carry away refugees from here...

After the tragedy broke out in Kalur Harbor, the population of garrisons being dispatched here to maintain the order of Upton City increased to 300,000. All the airships in Upton City were surrounded with 3-layer barbed wire. In the heavy rain, dense refugees were crowding outside the airship base and watching the airships in the sky. Any airship landing in would arouse their turmoil as numerous people would flood in that airship base.

"Those who have honor certificates could leave first...Those who have honor certificates could leave first..." The garrisons were

waving their sticks and ferociously beating those refugees who attempted to rush into the airship base, causing them to bleed. Those refugees who were raising high red honor certificates were selected from the crowd and allowed to enter the airship base first. They were allowed to leave out of here first before the next batch of airships arrived.

"Ah, my honor certificate, my honor certificate, someone grabbed away my honor certificate left by my husband..." A woman who was cradling a 5-6-year-old girl in raincoat cried loudly at the entrance of the airship base while changing her face greatly. In the chaos, when the woman raised her honor certificate, another hand reached out from her side. Before this woman responded, her honor certificate had been grabbed away.

Right then, a bolt was shot out from the embrasure of the bartizan above the entrance of the airship base and killed the man who wanted to sneak into the base with an honor certificate. This shocked everybody else as they all retreated two steps backward.

A first lieutenant military commissioner rapidly walked out of the bartizan and came to the man who was lying dead on the ground with a bolt through his heart. The military commissioner then picked up that red certificate. After that, he pulled out that tearful woman from the crowd and put that honor certificate in her hand. Additionally, he whispered to a soldier on his side to escort the woman and her daughter into that airship base.

"Anyone who dared to grab the honor certificate, would die..." The first lieutenant watched those refugees with a heavy killing qi.

Previously in Free Commercial Federation, when a soldier killed a civilian casually, it would arouse a great turmoil. However, at this moment, nobody cared about that.

Soon after that woman entered the airship base with her little daughter had a medium-sized airship arrived from the north for replenishment.

After a few minutes, that woman received a news that a medium-sized airship would fly off soon while a seat was available for her. The woman then followed a soldier to that medium-sized airship while cradling her daughter after extending her sincere thanks many times.

When the woman boarded on the airship, a person was getting off the airship. A lot of people felt embarrassed to see that person off the airship, including the captain of the airship.

"Mr. Peter, don't you need to think about it? If you wish to protect us to leave out of here, we could pay you 2,000 gold coins as a reward when we arrive at the destination!" A well-dressed fat man watched that person who was getting off the airship. The person named Peter, a 28-year-old youth. With a common long sword on one side of his waist, he looked pretty average.

After hearing this, the woman's heart pounded as she finally knew how she got that vacancy. As someone was going to get off the airship, after negotiating with the personnel in this airship, the military commissioner agreed to let her in. At this moment, although being selfish, she was indeed afraid that Peter would change his mind again.

"As you've already arrived here, you're much safer. The demon corps' power could not reach here. You could traverse the Kalay Mountain Range in less than 2 days. Therefore, it's unnecessary for me to stay in the airship!" Peter refused that man's proposal by waving his hand.

Although everybody else was inviting Peter to stay, they failed to move him.

"Peter, will...I see you in the future?" An 18-year-old blonde girl came to the hatch door as she watched that man who was leaving here with an admirable, unwilling look. The maiden's pure eyes looked as tender as water. The moment Peter saw her had he understood her meaning.

Everybody [who were seeing Peter off] didn't speak. They just watched him silently on one side, including that maiden's father. After staying in the airship for two days, all the passengers, including that maiden's parents, had understood her mind—— young women always worshiped heroes and powerful men, especially those who had saved them and could make them feel extremely safe during the crisis.

...

Chapter 683: Situation in Blackson Humans Corridor (I)

After throwing a glance at that maiden, the young man called Peter revealed a bright smile as he waved his hand towards her. At the same time, he said, "As long as you're alive, we will see each other one day. Therefore, Mansa, you have to live well!"

Mansa's eyes were swollen with tears at once...

Peter turned around and watched that woman who was cradling her daughter with a smile. After that, he tilted his body, enabling the woman to get on the airship, "Well, go back now. Bon Voyage!"

After saying these words, Peter took out his waterproof canopy and put it above his head. After that, he strode into the curtain of rain.

"Mansa, forget him. You and Peter are not living in the same world. You just met by chance..." The girl's mother, who looked graceful and noble comforted her as she came to the girl's back and put her hand on the girl's shoulder. The girl's father turned around and threw a glance at the girl. Closely after that, he shrugged and let out a sigh helplessly.

Watching Peter's back, the girl threw herself onto her mother's shoulder as she burst out into tears loudly...

After getting aboard with her daughter, the woman couldn't help looking back at the man called Peter. She was confused why someone would not like to leave out of here at this critical moment.

This woman heard Peter's story in the airship one day later...

Of course, the man called Peter was Zhang Tie. At this moment, although Zhang Tie still used his pseudonym, his look and figure had already changed completely. He would not be recognized even if he stood in front of his family members...

The powerful body-changing immortal bloodline was fully displayed on Zhang Tie, making him an utterly different person.

...

After leaving that misty sea, Zhang Tie went to Norman Empire. After 4 months, the overall situation in Blackson Humans Corridor changed once again.

The demonized puppets corps indeed encountered the unprecedented powerful counter-attack from Norman Empire under the leadership of Marshal Lin Changjiang, the governor of the North Border Corps of Norman Empire.

Under the guidance of Marshal Lin Changjiang, the North Border Corps of Norman Empire induced two routes of overwhelming demonized puppets corps into Nein City of Fisk Province nearby the capital city Nordinburg of the North Border of Norman Empire at the price of losing the greater part of territory of the North Border of Norman Empire in July. After that, Marshall Lin Changjiang issued the order to blow up the largest irrigation works across Blackson Humans Corridor—the Imperial Dam, which was once the pride of Norman Empire. The moment the Imperial Dam was ruined, over 80 billion cubic meters of water rushed towards the lower reach in an overwhelming manner. As a result, the Nein City over 600 miles away from the dam was destroyed while Fisk Province and the nearby two provinces were flooded at once...

In front of the power of the mother nature, 10 million demonized puppets were too fragile. Although demonized puppets didn't feel any pain, the puppet worms in their brains couldn't survive without oxygen. Therefore, demonized puppets would also die if they were in hypoxia and stuffy state for too long. As a result, only less than 2 million demonized puppets survived the flood. According to the news, that super demons corps also suffered a great loss. Because after that accident, the super demon corps straightly disappeared for almost 2 months.

This was an overwhelmingly inspiring victory. Even though in Selnes Theater of Operations, the allied human forces had not made such a brilliant achievement. Due to this battle, Marshall Lin Changjiang also became the hero and the most well-known general with the greatest strategic vision across Blackson Humans Corridor. He became ranked among the top generals in an instant.

Marshall Lin Changjiang might not be qualified as a famous general if he just exploded the Imperial Dam in an emergency. What was awe-inspiring was that he had let people bury alchemist's bombs in the major structure of the Imperial Dam over 2 decades ago when he took charge of building the Imperial Dam in the North Border of Norman Empire at the cost of more than 88 million gold coins while mobilizing almost 1 million workers.

If not having made such a preparation, it was impossible for him to destroy the Imperial Dam which was completely linked with the entire mountain by throwing alchemist's bomb from the outside. It was said that nobody else knew this except for Marshall Lin Changjiang and the imperial households of Norman Empire. Actually, one-third of alchemist's bombs reserves in Norman Empire was buried in the Imperial Dam.

In the eyes of the public, especially all the citizens in Norman empire, the Imperial Dam could barely be destroyed. Such a firm belief even wavered in the demons' mind. Therefore, almost 10 million demonized puppets gathered at the foot of Nein City and prepared to take down Nordinburg.

Nobody knew why Lin Changjiang and the imperial households of Norman Empire had made such a preparation over 2 decades ago. Nobody knew whether Lin Changjiang and the imperial household of Norman Empire had long predicted that the demons army would arrive here from the north, and hence prevented the potential danger. What a terrifying setting! Any opponent would be scared by the 2-decades plot. Of course, such a human leader was admirable.

Through this battle, Marshall Lin Changjiang shattered the unrivaled arrogance of demons army and spared almost half a year for the citizens who had not evacuated from Norman Empire and the north region of Blackson Humans Corridor.

After being frustrated at the foot of Nein City, the remaining demonized puppets hurriedly retreated while more demonized puppets flooded towards here from the north. However, it would take at least half a year for the number of entire demonized puppets corps to reach 10 million.

It was said that the super demon corps also suffered a great loss. However, Zhang Tie, who had witnessed the members of the super demon corps didn't think it was highly credible. In front of the destructive power of the mother nature, the super demon corps would definitely suffer a loss; however, it was almost impossible for them to suffer a severe loss. Before the arrival of the flood, the wing demons would have warned the super demon corps about 10 minutes in advance. It was enough for the super demon corps to get rid of the most dangerous dilemma and minimize their loss in that period.

Therefore, the super demon corps didn't suffer a great loss; instead, they hid themselves in a cunning way after losing a flesh shield or a tentacle so as to preserve their remaining power. Maybe they were brewing some plot, a more amazing revenge or an attack.

Chapter 684: Situation in Blackson Humans Corridor (II)

When he was in Norman Empire, Zhang Tie traveled to Nordinburg where he easily figured out Hanna's situation.

Hanna's husband was a member of Sines Clan of Nordinburg, who was called Quinnell. Sines Clan was a pine leaf gentry which was a noble clan in Nordinburg. This clan mainly traded grains and drinks. Quinnell was the second son of the head of Sines Clan. In the past two years, Hanna's beer and formula made Sines Clan well-known across Nordinburg and raked a great amount of wealth. Sometimes Hanna's beer couldn't even meet the demand. As a result, Hanna's reputation as the Beer Queen spread across Nordinburg. Everyone admired that Sines Clan married a money-spinner.

Hanna and the main members of Sines Clan had long moved away before the human defense line in Selnes Theater of Operations collapsed.

Hanna and her husband's clan, as the elites in Norman Empire, mastered the formula of the beer "Iron-blood Lover"; therefore, they became the major resources of Norman Empire and enjoyed the special concern from the country.

Zhang Tie didn't know where was Hanna now; however, he was not worried about Hanna's current situation. As for this woman who once had love affairs with him, Zhang Tie felt reassured as long as he knew that she was living a happy life.

Besides Hanna, Zhang Tie also inquired about the situations of Reinhardt and his former friends in Iron-blood Camp. After receiving the news, Zhang Tie was stunned.

As the military establishment system that Norman Empire had carried out against the attack of demons was completely as same as

that Zhang Tie had imagined before. As a large-scale mixed establishment unit, corps was gradually altered. In Nordinburg, Zhang Tie was told that Norman Empire was gradually changing almost half of its corps into three troops: First, a pure city defense troop, which was mainly responsible for city defense based on city-defense weapons. This kind of troop's main force were warriors; Second, cavalry forces, airship forces and armored forces, which were called maneuver troops; the members of these maneuver troops were more professional with higher qualities. They were excelled at maneuverability, assaulting ability and abilities to coordinate with the other two troops. Norman Empire requested its maneuver troop to be able to crack down common demonized puppets corps in an all-round manner and coordinate with the other troops when in need. Additionally, they could form a stress to the super demon corps. The 3rd troop was an iron-blood force fully composed of elites above LV 9, who could wrestle with the super demon corps face to face and had a great ability to survive in the wild.

In Norman Empire, all the elites of a corps could only form one iron-blood force. There were only 5 iron-blood forces in the north border of Norman Empire and less than 500 people in total.

The establishment of the Iron-blood Camp of the former No. 39 Division of Iron-horn corps had been rearranged. Reinhardt, who came back from Selnes Theater of Operations entered the Iron-blood force. Other friends entered city-defense troops and maneuver troops. Based on their experiences in Iron-blood Camp, many of them were promoted to military commissioners.

Only after a few years, the holy war had forced these tough men of Iron-blood Camp of the No. 39 Division of Iron-horn Corps to advance in their own ways. They could barely gather anymore. Except for sighing about that, Zhang Tie had no way to change it.

After the demonized puppets corps were heavily damaged by the flood, the super demon corps disappeared. Zhang Tie stayed in

Nordinburg for two days to seek for the traces of that super demon corps.

Zhang Tie didn't seek for that super demon corps for a noble or great purpose. He was just seeking for a chance to kill some squads of iron-armored demons so as to gain an iron-armored demon's fruit of source and further improve his battle force. It would be better if he could relieve some stress for Norman Empire and Blackson Humans Corridor in this process.

After hovering above the wild aimlessly for a few days, Zhang Tie didn't find any trace of the super demon corps; however, he noticed a civil airship which landed in the wild due to a mechanical breakdown. It was surrounded by over 100 demonized puppets. Zhang Tie then descended there and recovered his look as Peter. Closely after that, he solved the problem for the airship.

Those common demonized puppets posed a terrifying, fatal threat to those passengers in the airship. However, they were just like ants in Zhang Tie's eyes. He killed them all in a split second.

After being saved, of course, those passengers appreciated Zhang Tie so much. They all hoped Zhang Tie to stay with them and protect them until they were in a safe place. Now that Zhang Tie had met them, he could not leave them alone to die there along with their family members. Additionally, Zhang Tie knew that the wing demons always traced and attacked lonely human airships. Zhang Tie considered that if he could meet some wing demons, he might find out the super demon corps through them. Therefore, Zhang Tie stayed in the airship and helped the crew to fix the airship. Finally, he escorted the airship all the way towards the south. It took them 3 days to arrive at the north of Kalay Mountain Range after traversing Sun Dynasty and two small countries in the south of Sun Dynasty. They got off the airship in Upton City.

On the way, besides almost being fallen in love once again, Zhang Tie didn't even see any wing demon.

Compared to the situation when humans troops were shouting slogans loudly to march northward two years ago, at this moment, the entire north region of Blackson Humans Corridor had been in a chaos. After demons army broke the human defense line in Selnes Theater of Operations, all the rest of humans in the north region of Blackson Humans Corridor started to flood towards the south. Previously, humans were evacuating orderly. However, at this moment, all of them became scared as all the orders collapsed due to the collapse of the human defense line in Selnes Theater of Operations. All the rest humans wanted to escape from the north and stay as far away from demons as possible.

The Cross Commercial Alliance which had some relations with Zhang Tie previously was a hilarious example. This political alliance, which was much bigger than the Andaman Commercial Alliance which Blackhot City once belonged to, declared its collapse on the second day since the human's defense line in Selnes Theater of Operations was broken through. From then on, it didn't shoulder any responsibility as the central nation's alliance while all of its members were struggling to escape.

Although the demons army suffered a great loss in Nein City in the north border of Norman Empire, the refugee tide in the north of Blackson Humans Corridor didn't relieve; instead, more and more people seized this opportunity and tried their best to flood towards the south.

At this moment, the demonized puppets corps were marching into the north region of Blackson Humans Corridor constantly. The demonized puppets disasters that had raged in many regions a couple of years had not been completely cracked down yet. The regular super demon corps' trace was always mystical. Numerous refugees were pouring towards the south and gathering at the northern foot of Kalay Mountain Range. Everything was wavering like the weather...

The misty rain flew into Zhang Tie's raincoat collar icily. Zhang

Tie, who was walking in the airship base, tightened his raincoat collar and lowered the brim of his raincoat hat, covering the greater part of his face.

The airship base was almost surrounded by dense refugee tents. Even in the heavy rain, there were still a great number of people crowding at the entrance of the airship base and waiting for any possible chance to leave out of here.

After walking out of the gate of the airship base, Zhang Tie saw a lot of curious and perplexed faces.

"Are you kidding me! Who comes to Upton at this moment?"

"He might have just gotten off that airship!"

"What an idiot..."

"Huh, does he want to die? If he dared stay here at this moment, he must be a powerhouse. He might be a paladin coming from the north!"

"He might be a vicious businessman who just came here for the war profit!"

"Alas, it's such a bad weather today, I wonder when will the next airship arrive..."

Although they thought they were whispering, Zhang Tie, who had knight's consciousness, could still hear their talks clearly.

In the amazing eyes and discussions, Zhang Tie left the airship base.

Zhang Tie targeted Upton City. When he was in the airship, he had already figured out the route. Therefore, soon after he left the airship base he straightly went towards the downtown. From there to Upton City, the distance was about 7-8 miles.

When Zhang Tie passed through the refugee camp, 5-6 men in sloppy looks drilled out of the refugee camp, who after exchanging glances with each other, followed Zhang Tie to a distance of dozens

of meters.

Zhang Tie slightly frowned as he had not imagined that someone dared to follow him with malicious intentions in the cloudy, rainy day with a low visibility soon after he left the airship base.

Donder said that disasters and dilemmas were a weird mirror. In front of such a mirror, some would look as noble and sunny as an angel while some would turn as ugly and dirty as a hungry ghost. Donder reached a conclusion, "Although everyone was wearing the skin of a human, not everyone was a real human!"

'Is this humanity?' Zhang Tie revealed a sinister smile as if he had not noticed being followed. He just kept walking...

Chapter 685: A Partner Exercise in the Rain

The attack arrived without any warning. Those followers were like wild wolves hunting their prey in the rain. When Zhang Tie arrived in a remote region about 1 mile away from the airship base, he felt people darting towards him from his back.

The footsteps behind him sounded louder in the rain. At the same time, Zhang Tie heard panting breaths from behind. With neither battle call nor threat, Zhang Tie realized a pitch-dark dagger was drawn from one follower's sleeve and stabbed towards the back of his waist without making any sound.

The dagger didn't hit Zhang Tie. The man who darted towards Zhang Tie with a dagger in hand stopped as he lowered his head and saw that a long sword had penetrated his lower abdomen. He couldn't understand how this guy could have a longsword under his raincoat.

Zhang Tie just watched the man who looked grim and a bit scared with a glassy-eyed look. "As you want to stab me on my waist, I will also stab you with a sword on your lower abdomen. It's a fair deal."

That man let out a miserable shriek.

After hearing their partner's miserable shriek, the other murderers rushed forward and stabbed towards Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie drew his longsword out of that man's body and started his counter-attack.

Zhang Tie's counter-attack was considerable. If the murderer stabbed towards his neck, he would stab the man's neck with his longsword in advance. If the murderer attempted to stab his heart, he would stab that man's heart with his longsword in advance. If one of the murderers tried to stab his chest, he would stab that man's chest with his longsword ahead of that man. As the old saying went, an eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth.

Zhang Tie didn't show off his real battle force. As these murderers were at most LV 5, Zhang Tie just performed with strength a bit higher than theirs.

It was a very special cultivation for Zhang Tie. In the process, he could judge his opponents' intention, attacking angles, strength, speed and next move every time instead of simply killing them. Zhang Tie felt it a bit interesting in fighting them in this way as he could learn something from it. If he simply killed them all in a split second by releasing his sword qi, it would become meaningless.

Meanwhile, in this process, Zhang Tie was also setting a trap for his opponents unconsciously while hiding his real battle force. It was a very vicious pit. Evidently, Zhang Tie was able to kill battle demons below 3-star LV 14 battle demons, however, he only performed a bit better than his opponents. If his opponent was LV 5 warrior, Zhang Tie would perform as a bit more powerful than a LV 5 warrior. If his opponent was a LV 6 black spider, he would perform a little bit more powerful than a LV 6 black spider and the like. When he could take the preemptive move on the battlefield, Zhang Tie would always perform as a bit more powerful than his opponents which brought "a bit" of hope to his opponents. It was just like a gap of half level. If his opponents really thought that that was Zhang Tie's total battle force, they would jump into the trap, when they found that it became a bottomless hole.

Zhang Tie hid in the safest place of this bottomless cave and spared the most flexible room for him to exert his utmost effect. Meanwhile, he lowered the possible dangers to the minimal extent.

Even knights might be killed on the battlefield. Zhang Tie had even personally witnessed it happen. He even killed a knight himself. Therefore, even knights weren't guaranteed to be safe on the battlefield. The safest way and what counted most was to control the possible dangers that he might face and the level of his opponents while trying to create the opportunity for him to exert this ability to the fullest. This was what Zhang Tie had realized.

Although being low-key, it was also insidious.

Zhang Tie didn't realize that he had changed into a terrifying, insidious and cunning powerhouse from that poor, weak boy in Blackhot City.

Although he could solve the battle in less than 0.1 seconds, Zhang Tie did this exercise with them for over a minute before slaying all of them.

In the heavy rain, some of them were killed, some were heavily wounded while cramping their bodies who were not far from death. At the same time, some blood stains were scattering in the rainwater on the ground. Zhang Tie stepped on the LV 5 warrior's body and pointed his sword tip towards his throat.

That man was glaring at Zhang Tie with a twisted pale face while his dagger had dropped onto his side. He was pressing the vessel on his broken hand in order to stop himself from too much blood.

The raindrops constantly struck the man's face. With bloodshot eyes wide open, he glared at Zhang Tie viciously without blinking. However, for Zhang Tie who dared launch an attack towards an army of millions of demonized puppets from above the city wall of Mocco City, such behavior was extremely hilarious. This guy might not have seen real vicious behavior.

"What do you want to say now? I don't know you nor have I started any conflict with you. You don't even know how much money I have. Why do you want to kill me?" Zhang Tie watched that man while lowering his head.

"You.. you're dead... our boss will never... never let you go... you cannot leave Upton City... if you dare hurt me..." The man still threatened Zhang Tie at this moment.

"What a pity! If you could kill some demonized puppets on the battlefield before death, you might be worth your whole life. Remember to be a good man in your next life!"

"You..."

Zhang Tie just casually drew his sword over that man's neck, stopping the man's words.

After wiping the blood off his sword blade on the clothes of a guy who was lying on the ground half dead, Zhang Tie ignored those guys who were dying, lying on the ground and continued his walk towards Upton City.

'As the super demon corps are hiding, the north situation is so chaotic, Huaiyuan Palace must still be looking for me.' Zhang Tie didn't know what to do next, whether to continue to stay in the north for the iron-armored demon's fruit of source or just return to Ice and Snow Wilderness. 'I haven't received any news from Ice and Snow Wilderness for a long time. Besides the many people to be concerned about, there's also my solemn promise as a man.'

After Zhang Tie left here a few minutes, a shadow flashed over there and checked those corpse before flashing away in the rain.

Chapter 686: Pub

Upton City was also covered by the misty heavy rain. Only after half an hour of walk, Zhang Tie had already seen this city.

It was a commercial city with no city walls or any other city defense facilities. Due to the prosperous trade between the south and north of Blackson Humans Corridor, this city gradually expanded in the past 200 years. As the capital city and the most important base of the Free Commercial Federation, this city had already expanded into a big city covering more than 100 sq km.

This city was much more prosperous than Blackhot City.

The human tide that surged towards the south made Upton City unprecedented, abnormally prosperous.

Both sides of the urban streets served as a shelter and were covered with portable tents or blankets which gathered numerous refugees. Beside those refugees were the ad signboards of apartments, hotels and inns.

...

"No. 76, Leavins Avenue, apartment of 2 bedrooms, 1 dining hall for rent; water and central heating available; 10 gold coins per month..."

...

"Warm hotel; clean and comfortable; 600 silver coins per day. (Note: breakfast not served!)"

...

"Blackhorse Hotel; suite; 3 gold coins per night..."

...

"Wall Building, 4F stairwell for rent; 10 sq m; 2 gold coins per month..."

In Zhang Tie's eyes, such rents were nothing different than a robbery as they were out of average families' bearing capacity. However, it was normal in Upton City at this moment.

Besides, there were many liars in Upton City. The moment Zhang Tie entered Upton City had he met 3 liars using the same tricks. They had common ground, namely, their clothes were as tidy and high-end as possible; they kept talking; they had the same "business". As long as they were paid, they would help you contact with and "book" the seats of airships leaving Upton City.

"Sir, our Silverboat Airship Corporation is definitely a powerful enterprise. You might have already met liars. However, believe me, we're definitely not like them. We have our own airships; we are running many airlines from Upton City to the south. With 10 silver coins, we can show you our airships. You can decide whether to book a seat or not after looking at the airships..." A 50-year old man followed Zhang Tie with an umbrella in hand as he kept persuading Zhang Tie. In order to make it more reliable, he even took out some photos and materials from his old suitcase with a solemn look.

"Can you get a seat for me?" Zhang Tie stopped as he watched that man.

"Of course, sir. As a personnel of Silverboat Airship Corporation, this is definitely a piece of cake for me!" That guy answered after a pause.

"Hurry up, book a seat for yourself then!"

"Why?"

"If you don't leave Upton City as soon as possible, you might have a danger!"

"Ah? Sir, no kidding, how could I have a danger?" That guy forced a smile.

Zhang Tie didn't say anything; instead, he just raised his jaw

towards the distance. That guy looked at the direction along Zhang Tie's eyes and saw some furious men who were pointing at him and striding towards him with water pipe joints and clubs in hand.

When he turned around, he exposed his face to those people.

"Catch him, catch him, catch that damned liar..."

"Pay me back..."

Those men shouted as they rushed towards here. The man changed his face instantly. In the next split second, he dropped the umbrella and escaped away...

Those guys passed by Zhang Tie and chased after that liar. They soon disappeared in the rain curtain.

At the sight of that umbrella on the ground, a 10-year old boy instantly drilled out of a nearby alley and grabbed that umbrella. Closely after that, he turned around and intended to run away.

"Wait for a second!" Zhang Tie stopped that little boy.

"I picked up this umbrella. It belongs to me, not you..." That little boy instantly hid that umbrella behind his back with a vigilant look.

"I know, you picked it up. I just want to ask you something!" Zhang Tie looked kind.

"Sorry, I don't know anything!" That little boy shook his head in an experienced way. Closely after that, he intended to retreat into the alley.

Zhang Tie took out a silver coin, stopping the little boy at once. The little boy hesitated while he watched that silver coin with gleaming eyes.

"You should know something now."

"What do you want to know, sir?"

"Take me to the most informed place in Upton City; then, this

silver coin belongs to you!"

The little boy rolled his eyes before saying, "2 silver coins, sir. If you can pay me 2, I will take you there!"

"Fine, let's go!" Zhang Tie nodded.

"Sir, can you pay me this silver coin first as the down payment? I cannot escape from you after all!" The little boy said after rolling his eyes.

'What a capital city of Free Commercial Federation! Even a kid knows how to make money.' Zhang Tie smiled as he tossed that silver coin to that little boy.

After taking that silver coin, the little guy threw a glance at it before quickly putting it in his pocket. Closely after that, he let out a sigh.

"Sir, follow me!"

...

20 minutes later, the rain got lighter. After walking about 2 miles they arrived at the destination.

"Is that here?" Zhang Tie watched a nearby building.

"Yup. This building is the headquarter of the Mercenary Trade Union in Upton, the best partner of Armes, the mercenary empire and Free Commercial Federation. Many mercenaries take tasks here. That pub on the side of the Mercenary Trade Union is the most informed place in Upton. Besides those mercenaries, many people would like to drink here and ask for information at the same time!"

Zhang Tie smiled as he took out a gold coin from his pocket and tossed into that little boy's hand, "Take it and keep the change!"

"Ah, thank you, sir. You're the best person I've ever seen!" The little boy gazed at that gold coin with an unbelievable look. Closely after that, he bowed towards Zhang Tie. Being afraid of Zhang

Tie's regret, soon after he finished his words had he disappeared in the street on one side.

Zhang Tie smiled as he walked towards that pub beside the Mercenary Trade Union.

That little guy was right. There were indeed many passers-by here. All of them were taking weapons like sabers and longswords, which felt aggressive. On the opposite of the pub were a weapon store, a protective equipments store and a big grocery store. On the side of the pub was an alluring street for many men.

Soon after the heavy rain stopped, many make-up women had appeared on both sides of the street. They were wearing a coat, exposing a part of white legs below knees with a stick of cigarette or a bag in hand. Zhang Tie had seen such kinds of women in the streets near the railway station of Blackhot City before. They reminded Zhang Tie of Ms. Daina. Therefore, Zhang Tie knew what their job was only with a glance.

When many tough men passed by that street, they would whisper to one of those women for a short while. After that, they would walk into a pub on one side while putting their arms around women's waists.

Mercenaries who licked blood on their blades and Orioles who stood on roadsides were always perfectly matched.

Zhang Tie didn't go to the headquarter of the Mercenary Trade Union of Upton City as only mercenaries who had been officially registered were qualified to enter it. He went straightly to the entrance of the pub.

The name of the pub was called "Gold Coins Pub", which sounded really suitable to mercenaries. It looked nice and magnificent. Zhang Tie thought it might be a nongovernmental foreign exchange window for Mercenary Trade Union. Many messages that were not convenient to be disseminated in the Mercenary Trade Union would be exchanged there.

Besides mercenaries who wore evident emblems of mercenary groups on their chest, many people accessing to the pub had unknown backgrounds. Some looked like pioneers who wore cloaks and used pioneering swords; some looked like paladins who wore feathered hats and used shields; some others looked like free mercenaries who wore white gloves and used crossbows. However, for Zhang Tie, as he could even change his look at his will, he didn't care about the symbols. Therefore, for experienced ones, it was very childish to judge a person's status based on his look.

Zhang Tie looked both like a paladin and a pioneer.

After walking into the pub, Zhang Tie took off his raincoat and hung it on a rack on the left of the pub. Closely after that, he walked inside.

There were so many people in the pub, making it very noisy and fervent. The pub was filled with a special smell of mixed alcohols and smoke. Thankfully, it was not chaotic. A half-naked stripper was twisting her butts while hugging a steel pipe on the stage in the middle of the pub under the pink fluorescent lamplight. Those maids who exposed their thighs and cleavage were walking in the pub with glasses in hand. They would usually tease the customers here now and then.

Zhang Tie looked around and found that all the tables had been occupied, except the loop of chairs around that stage. He then walked over there and took a seat beside the stage...

Chapter 687: New Trouble

The moment Zhang Tie sat down had a seductive maid come to Zhang Tie's front while twisting her butts. At the same time, she lowered her body and exposed her breasts to Zhang Tie's eyes, "Sir, what can I do for you?"

Even though Zhang Tie's look had been extremely average while holding an extremely common pioneering sword, he still felt warm about the maid's adroit and enthusiastic smile. If he were an innocent guy, he might have thought that this girl fell in love with him.

"Brandy!"

"Wait for a second, please!"

The maid twisted her waist away. After a short while, she served a bottle of Brandy and a glass on the table.

Zhang Tie kept drinking casually as he seemed to watch that stripper on the stage. Actually, he was listening to the discussions of those surrounding customers. As a person who had knight's consciousness, Zhang Tie could hear all the talks in the pub.

A table of mercenaries was discussing the riot and its bloody suppression that happened in Kalur Harbor 2 days ago. After the suppression, according to the traces in Kalur Harbor, they found that someone might have pushed the riot of the refugees in Kalur Harbor from the back; many moles mixed in the refugees and finally pushed the event to a dilemma. After the suppression, many "refugees" who looked eye-catching in the riot disappeared. The garrisons of Kalur Harbor had started to investigate suspects...

That table of pioneers behind Zhang Tie was discussing the battle situation in the north. Although the super demon corps had disappeared for 2 months, many people were still concerning their whereabouts...

"Have you heard that the fleets of Eastern Continents have already gone ashore in some Hua countries in the south and are transporting away a great number of Hua people..."

Zhang Tie was attracted by this news from a customer at 4 o'clock direction over 20 m away from Zhang Tie.

"I also heard about it. However, I'm not sure about that. It was said that each ship dispatched from Eastern Continent weighed above 1 million tons. Each of them could hold over 200,000 Hua people at once. Such huge ships have anchored in over 10 harbors of Hua countries in the south. Some harbors could not even hold such huge ships. Therefore, they could only anchor in the near sea. As a result, ferries were required to carry people and supplies to the huge ships. Do such huge ships really exist? It's unimaginable."

"Taixia is a wonderful country. When I finish this task and make a bucket of money, I will go to Taixia. I wonder how this holy war would proceed. Even those richest people are moving to Taixia Country. What about you?"

"Hmm, count me in!"

"Count me in, I really want to take a look at the 1 million-ton huge ships in Taixia!"

...

After hearing this news, Zhang Tie's heart pounded. It was out of his imagination that Taixia Country in Eastern Continent had dispatched fleets to help Hua people evacuate from Blackson Humans Corridor during the period that he cultivated in the misty sea. This was the first time for Taixia to intervene with the battle situation in Blackson Humans Corridor. This symbolic move actually indicated that Taixa Country didn't think highly about the future of Blackson Humans Corridor.

The arrival of Taixia fleets was both good or bad for many people in Blackson Humans Corridor. On one hand, the evacuation of Hua

people would intensify the turmoil in Blackson Humans Corridor and enable more people to move southwards and seek for the opportunity to leave Blackson Humans Corridor. In a short-term, it was not good; however, after more Hua people were evacuated, more space of survival could be left to those refugees who moved southwards, which was conducive to relieve the stress of population in southern cities of Blackson Humans Corridor. In a long-term, this could avoid more people from becoming demonized puppets while preserving humans' battle force.

Zhang Tie remembered that almost all the cities in Huaiyuan Palace were close to the sea. The Hua people in downtown could definitely evacuate firstly. But Zhang Tie started to imagine what kind of people would be left in the end.

However, only after imagining about it half a minute had Zhang Tie been shocked by another news from another table. Several days ago, Huaiyuan Palace sold the entire Taian City to Norman Empire's imperial household.

'Sold a city?' Zhang Tie was stunned for quite a while. Taian City was the northernmost key military town in Huaiyuan Prefecture which had high and thick city walls, vast and fertile land, sparse population and was close to Yuanjiang River which was a natural chasm. It was the portal of the entire Huaiyuan Prefecture. It was really a big deal to sell it to Norman Empire's imperial household. It was a charming decision for both seller and buyer. Zhang Tie didn't know how much had Norman Empire's imperial household paid for that; he knew it ought to be a very terrifyingly high price.

Taian City had changed its name to Hope City and became a southern base of Norman Empire's imperial household in Blackson Humans Corridor. A great number of people arrived here by airships from Norman Empire every day.

Recalling that Jinyun Country's airship fleet started to help Norman Empire evacuate its people after leaving Selnes Theater of Operations, Zhang Tie knew that there should be a hidden trade

and plot which could only be known by someone at present when the decision was made.

In the pub, Zhang Tie had heard the name Lin Changjiang many times. The Marshall of Norman Empire who had severely damaged the army of demonized puppets had become well-known across Blackson Humans Corridor and became the idol of many people. Even though those recalcitrant mercenaries and paladins showed their admiration when they mentioned this name.

Of course, the one who could kill the most demonized puppets in the holy war was a human hero, just like Lin Changjiang.

Many mercenaries were talking about their tasks. The commonest task was to clear the disaster of demonized puppets in the north. Bigger mercenary groups would accept bigger tasks; while smaller mercenary groups would accept small and sparse ones. They were paid a lot for these tasks. According to the current "market price", a commonest demonized puppet's head would worth one gold coin. For a troop of over 100 demonized puppets, each demonized puppet would worth 2 gold coins as some of them might be above LV 6. The price would be tripled for a troop of over 500 demonized puppets. The price of a troop of over 10,000 demonized puppets would be at least 100,000 gold coins, which could only be accepted by large-scale mercenary groups.

In recent years, the mercenary groups in Blackson Humans Corridor had made a lot of money by clearing demonized puppets. They also made great meritorious deeds for humans. As a result, many mercenary groups of Armes, the empire of mercenaries had expanded.

The holy war had just come to a start; however, powerful forces had gradually grown more important in many places such as the Iron-blood Battle Team of Norman Empire and the mercenary groups in Armes. As a result, warriors' positions surged rapidly. For many commoners, this holy war might be a disaster; however, for warriors and cultivators, this might be the beginning of their

heyday. Through the war, the previous orders would collapse while new orders would be established through naked fists, sabers and swords.

After each holy war, the social status of warriors and cultivators would rise in the human society. Zhang Tie wondered how the new social society would become, after this holy war.

Watching Zhang Tie drinking alone on the chair beside the stage, the stripper gradually drew closer to him. After Zhang Tie drunk up a glass of Brandy, the stripper's "white rabbits" almost touched his face.

The pair of "white rabbits" and a piece of underwear which was woven by fine metal chains loomed in front of Zhang Tie's eyes. The pair of "white rabbits", the waist and the butts constantly shook in front of Zhang Tie while she raided Zhang Tie with her breasts and butts.

Zhang Tie's face blushed slightly. Although he was not a newbie anymore, it was his first time to be teased by a woman while all the onlookers were tough men in such a half-public scene.

Seeing Zhang Tie becoming bashful, all the onlookers burst out into laughter. It was a way to entertain themselves by seeing a newbie embarrassed.

Zhang Tie soon recovered his composure. When the stripper shook her "white rabbits" in front of him, Zhang Tie noticed her fine sweat drops under the shiny lamplight. It was actually very painstaking to do such a dance. Zhang Tie noticed that the stripper was not elder than 30 years old; she just had a hot figure and a mature makeup.

Actually, women who made money by doing labor works were very pitiful.

Zhang Tie let out a sigh slightly as he took out a gold coin and placed it into the metal net in between her "white rabbits". He tried

to not touch her body; instead, he just smiled as he whispered, "Thanks for your hard work."

The woman seemed to pause her movement. Then, she threw a deep glance at Zhang Tie before smiling at him. After that, she turned around and didn't tease him anymore.

Zhang Tie received a lot of information from their talks and discussions. When Zhang Tie was going to leave, 3 people walked in the pub. After looking around the pub, they went straightly towards Zhang Tie aggressively.

"You killed my subordinates?" One of them walked to Zhang Tie's front as he pressed on Zhang Tie's table forcefully. At the same time, he glared at Zhang Tie in a commanding way...

At the sight of this man's gesture, everybody moved their eyes to Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie sighed while shaking his head, "Oh my god! Even dung beetles have an organization!"

After a dead silence, the whole pub was filled with laughter...

Chapter 688: Mad Dog

After hearing Zhang Tie's ridicule, a killing qi flashed through that man's eyes. He raised his hand to stop the other two people on his side from moving. Closely after that, he narrowed his eyes and watched Zhang Tie with a sneer. It seemed that he wanted to keep Zhang Tie's look in his mind.

"Do you know who I am?" That man asked icily.

Zhang Tie raised his head as he faintly looked at this man. In Zhang Tie's eyes, this man was over 50 years old with a tough figure and a fat face. He was even a bit bare-headed. The moment Zhang Tie saw him had he realized that this guy was tricky. However, Zhang Tie had been immune to tricky figures of this kind after staying in Selnes Theater of Operations for a year, during which period, he had already chopped off numerous heads of demons and demonized puppets and killed a great handful of b*stards of Three-eye Association.

Zhang Tie just watched that man like watching a lump of sh*t, "Your subordinates were just sc*mbags who stabbed innocent people and plundered them from their backs. Needless to say, you're also a sc*mbag. Therefore, I don't care about your name!"

"Well, well, hope you can keep your words in mind. Do you think you can stay in this pub for the rest of your life? You'd better not leave this pub." After throwing a glare at Zhang Tie, that man looked around other people in this pub, especially that bartender who was wiping glasses behind the counter. Out of some concern, he finally gritted his teeth before waving his hand and leading his two subordinates away.

After they left, a half-drunk tough man with whiskers whose face had turned wholly red came to Zhang Tie's side. Closely after that, he called a maid, "One more glass for this brother, my treat!" After saying that, the tough man threw himself onto Zhang Tie's side

and thumbed up towards Zhang Tie, "Well done, brother. I've long hated Rein the b*stard. You should take care of yourself as you dared make him embarrassed in the public. That villain could do whatever he wants!"

"That guy is called Rein?"

"Hmm. That guy is a mad, greedy dog; even his teeth were covered with poison. You'd better not leave out of here until night. The moment you leave the pub should you run away and leave Upton City as soon as possible!"

"Does this mad dog have a sharp master?"

After hearing Zhang Tie's question, a light flashed by the eyes of that slightly drunk tough man, "Yeah, the one who could control a mad dog must be more terrifying than that mad dog. There's an old Hua saying, 'A dog threatens people on the strength of his master's power!' Am I clear?"

At this moment, the maid served another glass of Brandy. The tough man then stood up and returned to his own table.

Zhang Tie smiled as he raised that glass towards the tough man's table. He didn't care who was that man behind Rein, neither did he prepare to stay long in Upton City. When he listened to their talks, Zhang Tie had already made a determination, 'I will go back to Ice and Snow Wilderness first. As to the iron-armored demons' fruit of source, I will deal with it later. Unless the holy war comes to an end right now, I will have more chances to meet iron-armored demons. I will get that iron-armored demons' fruit of source sooner or later. It's unnecessary for me to play hide-and-seek with that super demon corps at this moment. It's more efficient to go back to the misty sea to cultivate in seclusion than wandering in Blackson Humans Corridor aimlessly.'

'I could not change the battle situation facing Blackson Humans Corridor anymore. However, I can still determine and do many meaningful things in Ice and Snow Wilderness. Although I could

not change everyone's fate; I can change someone's fate at least. In such a large-scale war, each one only needs to do a good job of his own.'

After Rein arrived, the atmosphere in the pub slightly changed. Zhang Tie found many people were watching him with a sympathetic look, 'It seems that Rein and his master have a very terrifying power and energy in Upton City.'

Zhang Tie had determined to leave Upton City as soon as possible the moment he left the pub, 'It's unnecessary to wrestle with a mad dog and the power behind a mad dog alone. It will waste my time and push me to a dangerous situation.'

Pitifully, although Zhang Tie had a good plan, what happened next was out of his control. The alleged fate and changes always led him to an unprecedented road.

Less than 10 minutes after Rein left the pub, when Zhang Tie had just slowly drunk up a glass of Brandy, a 14 or so teenager appeared in front of Zhang Tie while he placed a box in front of Zhang Tie with shaking hands, "Hi...some...someone asked me to give it to you..."

Before Zhang Tie said anything, the teenager had turned around and ran away.

Zhang Tie became stupefied for a second before slightly changing his face. Although that box was tightly sealed, Zhang Tie could still smell the faint bloody smell that drifted from inside the box.

Zhang Tie opened the box and saw a bloody, coarse and young hand. It was coarse because of the heavy stress from daily life; it was young because of its owner's age. The hand was still clutching a locomotive gold coin. Zhang Tie was very familiar with that hand and that gold coin. The gold coin that Zhang Tie had just gifted to a boy a while ago was issued by the former Andaman Alliance. That hand belonged to the same boy who had just caught Zhang Tie's silver coin and gold coin adroitly a short while ago. The owner of

the hand even said that Zhang Tie was the best person that he had seen...

With a faint pain in heart, Zhang Tie closed his eyes as he took a deep breath. He had seen many scenes which were even more miserable than this hand; however, because of this hand, Zhang Tie's killing qi spread in his heart like the wildfire that blew over the mountain in the autumn.

Zhang Tie felt that this hand belonged to himself, the teenager who worked in the grocery store of Blackhot City and worked as a human flesh bag in the Iron-thorn Fighting Club who struggled to make every single cent...

Donder was right. Not everyone was human. Besides human, not even animals could treat their same kind using the same cruel means in the mother nature.

After opening his eyes once again, Zhang Tie closed the box and finished all the Brandy in the bottle. After that, he dropped a gold coin and walked out of the pub resolutely with the long sword in hand.

All the people in the pub saw Zhang Tie off with various looks, many of them were curious about the item in the box.

...

At this moment, it was already dark outside the pub. The air in Upton City was bloody wet. As the rain stopped, more people appeared on the streets while the roadside lamps were lit. Some restaurants were nearby the pub, which had a booming business.

The moment Zhang Tie strode out of the pub had 7-8 policemen swarmed up from outside. A police car which escorted prisoners parked beside the pub. Instead of breaking into the pub to arrest him, those policemen just waited for Zhang Tie to come out.

Those policemen were holding alloy shackles and weapons that resisted arrest. Their heads looked gloomy with 2 silver flowers on

the shoulder strap of their police uniform. Seeing the policemen catching people here, the nearby commoners hurriedly ran away.

"Stop moving, you're under arrest as you've violated the laws of Free Commercial Federation!"

Zhang Tie stopped as he watched those policemen with a glassy-eyed look, "Why?"

"Why? Someone saw you kill some refugees outside Upton City. We doubt that you're a mole of demons. Therefore, you should follow us back to the police station for our investigation!" The head policeman labeled Zhang Tie.

"Did Rein call you to arrest me here?" Zhang Tie asked calmly.

After hearing this, those policemen slightly changed their looks while they sneered like looking at an idiot.

"So what? Do you think that you can leave Upton City now? If you dare resist arrest, we can kill you here straightly!" The head policeman lowered his voice as his battle qi totem rolled up in the shape of a huge centipede. Given his look, he was fully confident to take down Zhang Tie. Seeing Zhang Tie standing still, the head policeman waved his hand as he roared, "Put him..."

At this moment, a long sword was stabbed into his head while the bloody sword tip came out of the back of his head. The head policeman gazed at Zhang Tie with widely opened eyes. Before he figured out what happened, his battle-qi totem had already dispersed...

The other policemen were stunned as they had never imagined that Zhang Tie dared resist arrest in the public. Additionally, Zhang Tie's battle force was completely out of their expectation, "Didn't they say this guy was only between LV 5 and LV 6? What the hell?"

When Zhang Tie launched the attack, he didn't spare any time to these policemen to react. With one sword light flying off, the heads

of all the other policemen that surrounded him had been sent flying off. In a split second, 7 headless corpses fell on the ground outside the pub which were sprouting fresh blood...

"Ah, policemen were killed..." Some orioles and passers-by were so scared that they screamed loudly.

It had not happened in Upton City for many years that policemen were killed in the public. The whole street was in a chaos...

...

When the chaos started outside, a maid unveiled that paper box on Zhang Tie's table out of curiosity as she shrieked too...

...

In the chaos, Zhang Tie disappeared in the nearby alley while the entire Upton City became chaotic from then on...

...

Chapter 689: Fifteen Seconds

In the dark, narrow alley, Zhang Tie could still smell a remaining bloody smell like that in the paper box within the distance that could not be sensed by commoners. Based on his powerful knight's consciousness, Zhang Tie flashed in the alley in pursuit of the source of that bloody smell.

At this moment, Zhang Tie was a bit regretful. If he knew Rein, the b*stard, could lose his temper on someone innocent, Zhang Tie had already chopped off his head in the pub.

'Now that the b*stard could have police in Upton City deal with this case, he must have a powerful reliance.'

Whatever, Rein had been a dead man in Zhang Tie's heart. If anyone who dared block in front of Zhang Tie, Zhang Tie would kill him together with Rein the mad dog.

With a killing qi surging in his eyes, Zhang Tie had already made the determination.

...

Half an hour later, Zhang Tie had arrived at a hidden corner of a slum, where he saw a puddle of fresh blood and a piece of broken waterproof coir raincoat, 'Those people must have chopped off that boy's arm at this place.' Zhang Tie let out a slight sigh as he didn't see that boy's corpse. The bloody smell grew heavier here. After observing the blood stains for a short while, Zhang Tie moved along the trace and another sort of bloody smell...

After 15 minutes, Zhang Tie saw that little boy in a corner of a dump in a low slum about 1 mile away from where he met that little boy in the east.

That little boy had been wet all over at this moment, who was crouching still under a small tree beside a dump.

Zhang Tie ran over there and squatted down in front of that little

boy. After that, he turned over that little boy.

With eyes tightly closed, that little boy was biting a rusted iron wire. His face and lips turned pale while he also had some wounds on his face.

After checking his breathing situation and pulses, Zhang Tie found that the little boy's heart was still beating faintly. If he didn't find him, this boy could not survive tonight. He then put his hand on the little boy's chest and filled two vials of all-purpose medicament into his stomach.

The boy's right hand had been chopped off while his clothes had been covered with blood stains. An iron wire was tightened above the place where his arm was broken, which almost cut into his flesh. Thankfully, his vessels were tightened; therefore, his blood was stopped. One end of the iron wire was in the little boy's mouth while the other end was circled on his left hand.

At the sight of this scene, Zhang Tie seemed to watch a little boy stumbling towards this dump with the instinct of seeking for survival, who then found a rusted iron wire from the litter and came to a hidden place under the tree before finally wrapping his wound using one end of the iron wire while biting the other end of the iron wire.

This was the crudest method to stop bleeding and might be the only way for the little boy to save himself at that moment.

Being inflicted by great pains, the little boy was like a deserted puppy. The moment he wrapped his wound had he been in a deep coma...

Zhang Tie made the little boy lean against his legs while he took off the iron wire from the little boy's mouth and arm and used professional medicine to deal with his wound.

Benefited from the all-purpose medicament, the little boy slowly woke up as he opened his eyes.

"They...they asked me where...where you were...you...you're a good person...I...didn't tell them..."

After hearing the little boy's first words, Zhang Tie's eyes were filled with tears.

"Do you have any family member?" Zhang Tie asked him with a lower voice.

"None...my papa and mama had died one year ago...on the way towards Upton City with me. We met a demon disaster!" Speaking of his family members, the little boy dropped off his tears, "They said they were going to take me...to the south...but they died on the way...mama...told me to survive on...as a good person...you tell me...whether I am a good person..."

"You're a good person!" Zhang Tie dropped off his tears...

The little boy revealed a satisfied and faint smile, "Will...will I die?...whether can...can I see my papa and mama....after death?"

"You won't!"

"You liar...I know...I feel...sleepy...it's said that people would...die as long as they fell asleep in this case."

"I'm telling the truth. Trust me, just have a good sleep. When you wake up, you'll find that you're in a new place!"

"Is that...paradise?"

"Yes, everybody is good there, nobody would harm you anymore!"

"Ah, can my arm grow...grow out in paradise...I...I don't want my papa and mama...to see that I...don't have an arm...if not...they...will feel sad about that!"

"Trust me, your arm will grow out!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, the little boy gradually closed his eyes and fell asleep again.

Feeling that nobody was near them, Zhang Tie put his hand on the little boy's forehead and teleported him into Castle of Black Iron at once...

...

Since Castle of Black Iron accomplished its expansion last time, the residents in the town had been more pious about their God. This small Shrine in Castle of Black Iron was always covered with prayers.

Tonight, a big event was happening in the town. In order to satisfy the demand of the residents, through a negotiation joined by all the residents in the town, they decided to make God's statues in this Shrine so that each one could take a God's statue back home...

This was a sacred and solemn rite. Each detail had passed the discussions of the noblest and knowledgeable persons in the town, including the raw materials of the statue, the manufacturing process and how to welcome the God's statue to each believer's home. Not a single loophole could be found.

Without any sigh, that sleeping little boy straightly appeared at the foot of the God's status in the Shrine, which scared all those at present a lot...

"Ah, our God brought another poor kid to the paradise!" Someone exclaimed.

All those at present swarmed up and carried the little boy away from the immortal altar carefully.

"Hurry up, carry this little boy to the infirmary; prepare a braiser, scissors, hot water and some cotton clothes..." An experienced senior instantly guided the others...

...

10 minutes after teleporting that little boy, Zhang Tie was blocked in a slum of Upton City by a person in black clothes who

was holding an odd-looking iron claw. When Zhang Tie wanted to pass by the alley, that person appeared at the entrance of the alley abruptly like a black ghost while glaring at Zhang Tie with a killing qi.

Given his qi, which was much more powerful than those b*stards that Zhang Tie met before, Zhang Tie realized that this one was at least a LV 10 strong fighter.

Zhang Tie stood still in the alley and gazed at this person.

Given Rein's qi, Zhang Tie knew that he was a LV 9 fighter; therefore, this person was definitely not a subordinate of Rein. A LV 9 mad dog could never have a LV 10 strong fighter follow his order. However, given this man's naked killing intent, Zhang Tie realized that evidently this one was dispatched by that one on Rein's back, 'It seems that the death of the policemen outside of the pub has already startled the one behind Rein. In order to appease the trouble, that person on Rein's back dispatched a powerhouse and aimed to kill me, the "insurgent", as fast as possible. Meanwhile, it could shock the onlookers——What a vicious guy!'

At this moment, Zhang Tie heard another sound of slight footsteps from his back while another person appeared on the other end of the alley over 20 m away from Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie didn't look back. He had also sensed the qi of the other killer behind him——another LV 10 strong fighter. He could even sense that the second killer was holding a long sword like him; however, his long sword felt much more advanced than that of his.

'What a pity!' Zhang Tie slightly shook his head, 'It's better for such elites to kill some more demons on the battlefield than to die here in such a chaotic world.' However, Zhang Tie knew that people were different from each other. Due to desires and greed, people with the same talent would choose completely different roads in many times. Even knights had different choices. Some would fight to the death for humans on the battlefield while some

would choose to surrender to Three-eye Association.

"If you leave Upton City and swear to never come back, I will treat that you two have never been here!" Zhang Tie said calmly.

After a few seconds in silence, Zhang Tie received two sneers.

"This guy is humorous!" The one in front of Zhang Tie opened his mouth.

"Maybe this is a trick. Cunning fish always use such a swashbuckling trick!"

"You or me?"

"You. Such a fish would take you at most half a minute. Don't waste time. We have to take his head to the Gold Coin Pub!" The other one behind Zhang Tie replied.

"At most 15 seconds..." That killer in front of Zhang Tie argued when he walked towards Zhang Tie with his weird iron claw.

Zhang Tie became silent as he drew out his sword and walked towards that killer...

Chapter 690: Teeth for Teeth

In an extremely luxurious room, somewhere in Upton City...

"Pah..." A heavy slap fell on Rein's face, sending Rein flying off. He fell on the brilliant, thick carpet 2 m away.

The one who slapped him was an expressionless man who wore a black half-body metal armor and a face mask. Additionally, that man had a pair of huge swords hanging around his waist. After slapping Rein, that man stood still like a machine.

After falling on the floor, Rein didn't say anything; instead, he picked himself up from the ground and returned to his original position. At the same time, he slightly quivered all over, even he did not dare to wipe off the blood stains from his mouth corners. After a tooth was slapped off, Rein straightly swallowed it silently while lowering his head.

That machine-like man raised his hand and prepared to slap Rein once again...

"Enough, Douglas..." A sound drifted from behind the masked man. After hearing this sound, the masked man lowered his hand and silently retreated to one side.

A person in a brilliant blue robe at his 20s was leaning against a gilding soft bed while some beauties with half-exposed breasts were kneeling on his side. Some of them were peeling off fruits for this man; some were responsible for putting fruit into this man's mouth; some were massaging his legs.

The man, lying on the soft bed, looked very handsome. However, the long, narrow eyes looked crafty while the pale lips as thin as blades looked a bit cruel and grim.

The young man watched Rein with his narrow eyes; nobody knew what he was thinking about; however, Rein's body quivered more heavily.

Being covered by that young man's powerful qi and sharp eyes, Rein was as docile as a guide dog; he was too scared to look at that man's eyes as he lowered his head towards the ground.

After a long while, that man opened his mouth calmly.

"Angus Clan cannot determine everything in Upton City. With 8 policemen being killed, you want me to help you clean your butt? Tell me, how do I punish you?"

"I...I'd like to accept any...any punishment!" Rein stammered. Only Rein knew how cruel and terrifying was this young man in front of him.

"Any punishment?" That young man slightly sneered as he suddenly transferred to another topic, "How about the two bloody slaves businessmen that came to Upton City last week? Have you completed what I've told you to do?"

"Ah, I've already put them into the bag and poured them together with concrete into the foundation of the wall of the refugee camp in the east of Upton City!" Rein seized every chance to indicate that he was "still useful", "I invited the directors of Belle Business Group, Haun Business Group and Golden Rose Business Group to visit it at present. I'm sure that they have known that some businesses could not be touched by others in Upton City!"

"Hmm, not bad!" That young man lying on the soft bed took a grape. When he chewed it, he issued the order, "If so, from tomorrow on, we can raise the price of the food in the surrounding refugee camps by another 30%. We have to get the last copper coin from those refugees who prepared to escape to the south. As to those who have no money, have them sign the contract on selling themselves as slaves voluntarily. After that, move them away as soon as possible so that new refugees could occupy their positions. In this way, we will save the money for building new refugee camps. Am I clear?"

"Clear!" Rein replied as he recovered his composure a bit. As long

as this man felt that he was still useful, it would not be difficult to deal with this event.

"Have you figured out that man's background?"

"He's Peter, who has just come to Upton by an airship from the north! He's a paladin, also a pioneer who might prepare to make the war profit in the north. Accidentally, he saved those passengers on the airship when that airship made a forced landing in the wild. After that, he escorted them all the way here. After refusing their employment, he left the airship base. My men in the refugee camp found that he was not poor and thought that they could rip him off. However..." Rein explained rapidly so as to fix his mistake. At this moment, that young man slightly waved his hand to stop him.

"As you were always diligent in previous years. I will not claim responsibilities from you this time. Remember to not make the same mistake in front of me for the second time!"

"Yes, sir. I promise I'll be careful next time!" Rein lowered his head as he let out a sigh inside, 'Thank God, I finally survived it.'

"You're too impatient. You should show yourself after figuring out the opponent's background. You even made this event known across the city. It seems that you've been used to be privileged in Upton these years and have lost the least alert. After this event comes to an end, you'll better go to Black Prison of Upton City to practice yourself. There's a vacancy over there. I've just taken it. Don't come out of there until you become steady!"

"Young master, what about Peter then..." Rein asked carefully.

"I've already dispatched Aral and the other one to kill him..."

After hearing that young man's reply, Rein hurriedly revealed a relieved look as he flattered, "It will be okay. Aral is proficient in tracing. Peter is at most LV 9, who could not escape far away!"

"I've got a visitor. You can leave now. Be alert these days. If

there's any tricky figure in Upton these days, let me know first."

"Yes, sir!" Rein lowered his head as he left this room by moving backward.

Until he moved out of the room had Rein found that his back had been wet all over.

When Rein left the rear door of the manor, he glanced at the direction of the manor and found a black sedan outside the gate. Two people in capes with half face covered in the shadow got off the vehicle while the young man, who was leaning on the soft bed just now came out to greet them...

Rein dared not stay longer as he hurriedly left.

At this moment, neither Rein nor that young man who was greeting his "guests" outside the gate of the manor cared about the case of "Peter" any longer as "Peter" had been dead in their eyes. They had met too many similar "tricky" events these years. They dealt with each event in this way. Therefore, they didn't think that there was anything special with this case...

...

In the narrow, deep and dark alley, the battle came to an end in 15 seconds...

Zhang Tie was safe and sound. By contrast, the two LV 10 strong fighters who blocked him and declared to end the battle in 15 seconds had a miserable outcome. The one holding a sword was penetrated through his throat and heart by Zhang Tie. He was watching Zhang Tie with an unimaginable look before dying. He fell down softly as he couldn't figure out how could this person between LV 8 and LV 9 could suddenly release such a powerful sword qi, 'f*ck...'

That killer swore before dying. Actually, he might not know whom to swear at this moment.

The other killer's neck was pinched by Zhang Tie while he

struggled like a weak, suffocating mandarin duck. Being forced against the wall, he was slowly lifted by Zhang Tie's hand.

For Zhang Tie, LV 10 strong fighters were not much stronger than those policemen whom he had killed just now.

Zhang Tie watched this killer in his grip as he triggered his "Soul Capture Skill", a mysterious method from Bloody Soul Temple of Taixia Country, at once. In a split second, Zhang Tie's eyes looked like two mysterious rotating mires as they sucked in the LV 10 fighter's consciousness right away. The fighter gradually stopped his struggle while his painful look gradually turned into a stoned smile

Zhang Tie loosened his grip while that killer stood in front of Zhang Tie like a puppet with a silly and weird smile.

"What's your name?" Zhang Tie asked calmly.

"Aral!"

"Did Rein dispatch you here?"

"Young master dispatched me here!"

"Whose's your young master?"

"Leeb Angus!"

"What's his status?"

"The son of the president of Free Commercial Federation, the first cis-position of Angus Clan in the future!"

Zhang Tie was shocked as he finally understood the status of Rein's reliance. With such a powerful reliance, no wonder Rein dared be so aggressive in Upton City. 'The power of Angus Clan could at least rank top 3 in the entire Free Commercial Federation. However, now that the opponent has meant to kill me, I could only execute teeth for teeth. As they want to kill me, they have to be prepared to be killed.'

"Where's Leeb?" Zhang Tie asked with a killing qi.

"Right in the Stars Manor. He's waiting for your head!"

"Where's Stars Manor?"

"No. 16 Avenue Wealth, Upper East City, Upton!"

"Are there any powerhouses over there?"

"Young master has a bodyguard, a LV 13 5-star battle general!"

"What's the battle force of your young master?"

"LV 11!"

"Where's Rein? Where would he always be in the evening?"

"He's just got on with a mistress recently in the Upton City. He would always stay with that mistress at night."

"Tell me his address..."

After asking some questions rapidly, Zhang Tie had a general judgment on his opponent. He didn't move at once; instead, he just watched Aral, "Bring me all of your good items and those of your partner!"

Zhang Tie had formed a good habit to collect booties after a battle since he joined Iron-blood Camp.

Aral then undid his storage bag and necklace foolishly before walking to his partner who had been killed by Zhang Tie and picking that guy's storage bag and longsword. After that, he handed all of them to Zhang Tie together with his odd-looking iron claw.

After weighing them for a second, Zhang Tie threw all of them to Castle of Black Iron, "Okay, you can commit a suicide now. Hurry up!"

Aral then nodded with a stupid smile. After that, he smacked onto his forehead, making his head flat, spurting out his brain. Closely after that, he sat in the alley.

This was Zhang Tie's first time to apply the mysterious method

"Soul Capture Skill" in an alive person. Watching that guy commit a suicide so straightly, Zhang Tie felt his heart pounding, 'How terrifying is this "Soul Capture Skill"!'. Before leaving Upton City, Zhang Tie didn't want to expose the two corpses to the public in case of arising the opponent's alert. Therefore, he threw the two corpses into the Abyss of Chaos. Closely after that, he disappeared in the dark as fast as the wind once again...

If it was before, Zhang Tie would not casually expose the existence of Castle of Black Iron like this time; however, after having the knight's consciousness, his sensing and perceptive ability had already improved to a very terrifying, high level. He could clearly know whether someone was in the surroundings or peeping at him from afar. Therefore, Zhang Tie became more confident when he used the function of Castle of Black Iron.

The 2 dead guys would never know that even the "rendezvous" place was chosen by Zhang Tie. When Zhang Tie was going to catch two lackeys, they presented themselves to him voluntarily; of course, Zhang Tie would never treat them politely...

...

After leaving the manor, Rein returned to the apartment of his mistress. At this moment, all the policemen in Upton City had mobilized to seek for that "killer".

All the frustrations, pains and fears that he suffered today finally converted to his driving force to ride on his mistress.

Being driven by a certain fierce emotion and his mistress' adroit skills, Rein's first time arrived very fast. After the fierce spurt, Rein laid on that woman's body as he felt empty-minded. Until then did Rein figure out the dangers.

'It's time to come to an end. As I've known too much. As long as I lose my value or that man thinks it's more beneficial for me to disappear than exist, it will be my doomsday.' Rein figured out his current situation at once, 'As it's chaotic everywhere, as long as I

find a chance, I might be able to leave Upton City and that man. As long as I leave out of here, based on the wealth of over 100,000 gold coins that I've accumulated these years, I could go straightly to the Eastern Continent or Western Continent or find a strange place to restart my life. Whatever, it's safer than risking my life all day long in Upton City.'

'It might be that man's way to control me in the black prison of Upton City. If I believe in his words, I might be killed in the black prison of Upton City sooner or later. That man might have already intended to kill me today; however, considering that if he killed me straightly, he might let down many of his followers; therefore, he postponed the plan in the excuse of the vacancy in the black prison. Based on my understanding, that man has never spared any second chance to anyone these years.'

The more Rein thought, the more chilly did he feel. More and more whims flashed in his mind...

Suddenly, he felt that the hand of the woman, who was teasing him underneath, became stiff. At the same time, the woman instantly changed his blushed face to a pale look as she looked at his back with a scared expression. Right then, Rein felt a killing qi from his spine.

Before that woman shrieked, Rein had already covered her mouth and broken her neck with a "cracking" sound. That woman had never imagined that she could be killed by a man who was making love with her just now.

It was like a trivial thing for Rein to kill a woman. He didn't look back; instead, he just said calmly, "My friend. All of my money was in the cabinet at the end of my bed. There were over 1,000 gold coins over there. Just take all of them away. I don't want to know who you are. Just forget about what happened tonight. This thing is a bit shameful for me. I won't mention it to anyone else. As you can find me here, it means that you know my reliance. If something happens to me, that man would feel unhappy; then, he

won't let you go!"

"I've not imagined that you could be so decisive and tricky, Rein. It seems that all those who said you were a mad dog were cheated by your performance. As long as I give you some more time, you might become a big figure!"

After hearing this voice, Rein became stiff all over. At this moment, he would not feel accidental to hear any other voices except for this. In Rein's imagination, this man would have already been killed or escaped away like a strayed dog. He had not imagined this person could appear on his back at this moment.

Rein slowly turned around as he saw the same person that he met in the pub. What made Rein more amazed was that how could this person enter it when the door of the bedroom had been locked from inside until then.

"How...how did you know my residence? How did you come in?" Rein stammered as he crunched backward on the bed.

"Do I need to explain it to you?" Zhang Tie sneered.

"Go die!" A delicate crossbow suddenly appeared in Rein's hand as he pressed the switch.

The sword light flashed...

In a split second, the bolt was broken into pieces while Rein's limbs were separated from his body. The sword light even slightly touched Rein's throat and shattered Rein's vocal cord...

Due to the extreme pain, Rein rolled from the bed onto the floor. Rein wanted to shout loudly; however, he could not utter any sound at this moment. He opened his mouth only to hear hoarse sobs like broken bellows...

A lot of fresh blood flew out of his broken limbs rapidly, staining a wide area.

Rein watched Zhang Tie with a pleading look, expecting for a

quick end.

"Have you thought about being revenged so fast when you chopped off the boy's hand and sent it to me?"

Zhang Tie just watched Rein rolling and twitching in the blood pond. Rein drained off his blood in the shortest period and finally died with widely opened eyes...

...

After a few minutes, a black beetle flew out of the chimney of that room. After making a circle above there, he flew towards the east of Upton City...

One must be thorough in exterminating an evil!

Chapter 691: A Conspiracy

In the deep night, Zhang Tie passed through the streets in Upton City and flew towards the south of the city...

Below Zhang Tie were numerous houses in tranquility. Many residents had gone to bed at this moment. Lamplights escaped from some houses' windows. Perhaps, only policemen across the city were still working so late. No matter which city or country, what made policemen most excited was undoubtedly the murder of their colleagues.

Zhang Tie didn't have any prejudice against the police. Neither did he believe that all the policemen across Upton City were badass and lackeys of evil forces. However, some badass and lackeys among the police might be more vicious than real villains, 'Now that those sc*mbags encountered me, I have to feel sorry for them.'

With one more fruit of brilliance on the small tree, Zhang Tie felt pleased for the first time since he came to Upton City. The new fruit of brilliance told Zhang Tie that all those that he killed were guilty. It was Zhang Tie's accidental achievement in Upton City.

Benefited from fruits of brilliance, Zhang Tie's spiritual energy grew much faster than that of his battle force. At this moment, Zhang Tie's spiritual energy was definitely more than that of common knights. Zhang Tie didn't know what would happen if he constantly accumulated his powerful spiritual energy. Based on the current situation, Zhang Tie knew it had great benefits. With powerful knight's consciousness, it would be as smooth as a fish in the water when he cultivated mysterious methods such as "Soul Capture Skill". Additionally, he could light his surging points in a higher efficiency. These benefits were dreamed by some people as they formed important parts of Zhang Tie's battle force. Therefore, Zhang Tie had an anxious expectation about his spiritual energy for the future.

'After killing that d**chebag called Leeb Angus, I will move 1,000 miles away and live with another look. No matter how influential is Angus Clan in the Free Commercial Federation, they will never harm me.' Zhang Tie made a decision inside as he considered his body-changing bloodline as his biggest advantage.

Actually, Zhang Tie felt that he was very adaptable to be a paladin. He could exterminate evil forces everywhere. Soon after he launched a strike would he escape 1,000 miles away. Besides, he had fruits to take. If not in the holy war, it was really nice to have such a life. In usual days, he could be a rich guy who had a castle, some manors and a big farm. He could marry all the favorite women and have a lot of babies. Occasionally, he could come out to be a paladin so as to relax himself. How immortal days...

Pitifully, it was just a dream within 100 years for him.

Although Zhang Tie had not come to Upton City before, now that he knew the destination was in the east, it was not difficult for him to find the No. 16, Wealth Avenue in this city. Because there were a lot of guide-boards on the roadsides.

...

In an eastern street of Upton City, two policemen were on duty at a cross and checking passers-by who were still wondering outside at this moment. Due to the dark, they were holding a fluorescent lamp and watching the desolate road with widely opened eyes as they stomped their feet.

"It's said that those policemen who were killed were called there by Rein." one of the two policemen whispered when there was nobody in the road.

"F*ck, Rein's subordinates in the refugee camp had a wicked idea; however, that guy was tricky who killed them all straightly. After knowing that he was in Gold Coin Pub, Rein wanted some policemen who colluded with him to trouble that guy. However, it was out of their imagination that the guy straightly killed all the

policemen outside the pub. Those guys must have received too many rewards from Rein and done too many evil deeds. They deserved to die!"

"Hush, be careful, don't forget about Rein's reliance. Do you want to lose this job?" another policeman persuaded as he looked around.

"That's better. I prefer to take my wife to the south in case of worrying about the arrival of demons one day..." The policeman lowered his voice although he stuck to his stance.

"The guy called Peter might have already escaped out of Upton City. It's said that he's a LV 8 powerhouse. How could he still stay in the city now? Whenever similar events happened, we, the most bottom people, would be extremely fatigued to find any result. If that guy really appeared in front of us at this moment, we might have no chance to blow our whistle!"

"Forgot about that. We have to pretend to be serious!" The other policeman yawned as he put his hands back to his sleeves. When he casually watched a roadside signboard, he saw a black beetle flying towards him from afar which rightly suspended in front of that signboard. After looking at the sign board seriously for a short while, it flew towards the direction pointed by the signboard.

'F*ck, even an insect could identify the signboard. I must have a blurred vision...'

...

After a few seconds, Zhang Tie saw the No. 16 manor-typed villa in Wealth Avenue.

It was a big garden outside the villa. Due to the high courtyard walls, people outside the manor could only see the luxuriant crowns inside the courtyard. After throwing a glance at that black marble doorplate which was marked as "No. 16 Wealth Avenue", Zhang Tie flew in from the high wall.

It was strictly defended here. Even in the deep night, Zhang Tie could still see two teams of guards patrolling outside the manor. However, in the incarnation of an insect, Zhang Tie straightly ignored them and flew over their heads.

It was a luxurious villa which occupied a wide area of the land. There were a fountain and a statue outside the gate of the villa. It was pitch-dark inside the villa while each window was covered with a thick deep-color curtain. All the doors were closed. After flying around the villa for a loop, Zhang Tie finally decided to fly inside from the chimney of the fireplace.

The chimney was like a pitch-dark tunnel for Zhang Tie. In order to avoid people from climbing in, a firm metal filter was fixed in the chimney. However, the metal filter could never stop Zhang Tie from coming in as the meshes were huge enough for a black beetle.

It only took Zhang Tie 5-6 seconds to descend silently below the fireplace from the highest point of the chimney.

The fireplace was set in a guesthouse on the 1st floor of the villa. Two purple crystal columns, each of which was taller than 1 m, displayed the extravagance here. A pile of well-split pine woods, tongs and pine oil were put on a silver rack beside the fireplace. Thankfully, it wasn't in the winter; it would've been far more difficult for him to get down through the chimney if the fireplace had been lit.

There was nobody in the guesthouse. Zhang Tie just flew out of here in a low-key manner alongside the ceiling.

There were a lot of rooms on the 1st floor. However, there were very few people in the entire building. Zhang Tie could only hear the breathing sound from a room in the remote corner, which belonged to servants.

Zhang Tie straightly flew to the 2nd floor from the hall on the 1st floor which hung crystal ceiling lamps.

Almost all the rooms on the 2nd floor were black, except for one, from the bottom of the door, Zhang Tie saw a faint light escaping out.

Zhang Tie hurriedly flew over there and landed outside the room. There was a gap of less than 1 cm below that door, which was available for Zhang Tie to drill inside in the incarnation of a flat beetle.

After drilling into the room, Zhang Tie felt bright at once while all the furniture looked lofty. There was a thick red carpet on the floor. The moment Zhang Tie entered the room and touched the carpet had he turned red all over.

At this moment, the insect's qi could almost be ignored; especially when Zhang Tie walked on the thick carpet, causing no sound at all.

This was the outer room of the study. A man in a half-body metal armor and a face mask was sitting on a chair near the door on Zhang Tie's side, exposing his mouth and jaw.

This man reminded Zhang Tie of Leeb's bodyguard.

It seemed that the bodyguard of Leeb was guarding outside the study. The door of the study was right behind him.

This guy didn't find Zhang Tie who drilled in the room through the gap below the door at all; instead, he was still drinking leisurely.

Previously, Zhang Tie wanted to show his original body at once and kill this guy; closely after that, he would flash into the room to kill Leeb. However, watching the closed door, a whim occurred to Zhang Tie's mind. He didn't show his original body. He rapidly detoured from the bodyguard's back along the wall and came to the door of the study. After that, he silently drilled into the study like before.

It was a bit dark inside the study. It didn't even have a window. If

not the bookshelves, it was more like a backroom.

"You mean no force in Upton City could prevent us now?"

A voice drifted from the sofa in the middle of the room while being surrounded by the bookshelves. The moment he heard the voice had Zhang Tie felt his heart racing. He was familiar with that voice. After following the middle corps of demons to sweep over the northern border of Symbian Republic for so many days, Zhang Tie had heard that voice many times. The voice came from a young elite of Arthur Clan of Three-eye Association in the middle corps of demons who worked together with Senel Clan. With a super powerful memory, Zhang Tie would never mistake it...

'How could Arthur Clan's member stay in Upton?'

Zhang Tie sensed a conspiracy instinctively...

Chapter 692: A Dangerous Situation

"At this moment, Upton City indeed has no ability to resist us!" Another voice sounded. Zhang Tie then silently moved to the back of a bookshelf less than 5 m away from them and listened to it quietly. "But I don't understand why the Demon General has such a sudden plan. This plan is out of the imagination of our Angus Clan. We can barely make any preparations. In this plan, we will suffer a huge loss!"

"No war would proceed according to one party's will or plan!" That member of Arthur Clan opened his mouth. Zhang Tie remembered that he was called Tharant, also a LV 12 great battle master, "The Demon General has not predicted that our demonized puppets corps would suffer a great setback in Norman Empire. Actually, many human countries in Blackson Humans Corridor have very great battle forces.

Although the Demon General's super demon corps could destroy all the targets in front of us, we would also pay a great price for this. Additionally, it would waste a lot of our time. Whereas, time counts the most at this moment. Numerous people would climb over Kalay Mountain Range and escape to the south everyday. This indicates potential dangers and less source of demonized puppets for us. In order to keep them in the north and completely destroy the north human countries' will to resist us, The Demon General decides to implement frog leaping strategy: Sweep over the human bases in the north of Kalay Mountain Range first so as to close the door towards the north of Blackson Humans Corridor.

By doing this, we will gain a great number of demonized puppets in the future and lay a solid foundation for our ruling in the north of Blackson Humans Corridor. In 1-2 years, after we complete the integration of resources in the north, we will march southwards and rule the entire Blackson Humans Corridor.

"When will the Demon General's super demon corps arrive at

Upton City?"

"After 3 days..."

"Ah? In such a short time..." Another person sighed, who was Leeb for sure, the one whom Zhang Tie was going to kill.

"Only in this way could it make all parties unable to respond to it. Although your Angus Clan would suffer a loss in Upton City, you would also have some benefits. You can pretend to escape to the south to gather with your father and nobody will doubt that your Angus Clan belongs to Three-eye Association anymore. Your clan will play a bigger role in the future! Additionally, you also know that the Demon General is generous and discriminating in his rewards and punishments. Compared to any reward from the Demon General, your Angus Clan's loss in Upton City would be nothing serious at all."

"What about Norman Empire and those humans countries which still resists us in the north?"

"This time, we've already made the maximal mobilization in the north. In half a year, there will be 20 million demonized puppets marching southwards. No matter what preparations have Norman Empire and the other human countries made, they would finally be conquered by the demonized puppets corps. There is no 2nd Imperial Dam in the north of Blackson Humans Corridor!"

"Does My father know that?"

"Yes, he knows. As we know each other, your father suggested me to coordinate with you on this action as the liaison of Three-eye Association in Upton City. We need to coordinate with the Demon General to take down Upton City at the minimal price. In order to implement this plan, the Demon General gifted me a double-headed parent demonized worm!"

"What? A double-headed parent demonized worm?" Leeb looked a bit amazed.

"Yes, the Demon General expects to convert the millions of refugees outside Upton City into demonized puppets as soon as possible. When his super demon corps arrive at Upton City, they could complete the encirclement with the demonized puppets corps towards the entire Upton City and turn it into a dead city in the shortest period. After that, Those demonized puppets would sweep over all the human bases in the north of Kalay Mountain Range so as to completely freeze the portal of Kalay Mountain Range. Only in this way, could we register a big blow to the northern humans and relieve the loss that we encountered in Norman Empire!"

"No problem. The food and drinks of more than 3 million refugees outside Upton City are all under my control. As long as we have a double-headed parent worm, I will have those pariahs eat its eggs in 1 day. However, it's a bit pitiful to spend a rare double-headed parent worm on those pariahs!"

"If we can take down the north of Blackson Humans Corridor this time, it's worthwhile for us to use a double-headed parent worm!"

...

After hearing this, Zhang Tie felt chilly inside. He finally knew the whereabouts of the super demon corps which had disappeared two months ago. It turned out that the Demon General was carrying out such a terrifying plan—frog leaping strategy; move 10,000 miles away to destroy Upton City and completely close the door towards the south. If this plan succeeded, Upton would become a dead city while the entire north region of Blackson Humans Corridor would collapse. By then, the depressed morale and hope of northern soldiers and civilians would collapse. If that really happened, Zhang Tie didn't know how chaotic would the entire north region of Blackson Humans Corridor be. However, this was rightly what the demons desired for.

Zhang Tie was also shocked a bit by that double-headed parent worm. He knew what was a double-headed parent worm, a very

rare parent worm. Being different from a parent worm of the common demonized puppets, such a parent worm had two heads. If someone took its eggs or chopped off one of its heads, the eggs in that person's body would complete their hatch after being activated like that of a common parent worm; however, due to the existence of the other head of the double-headed parent worm, the hatched eggs were still under control.

From a perspective, a double-headed parent worm was a perfect puppet worm. However, it was too rare; as a mutated species, such a double-headed parent worm was rare even in the 2nd holy war.

Hearing the details of this action in the study, Zhang Tie felt utterly confused and disconcerted, 'What to do?'

Facing such a deliberate, large-scale and terrifying plan made by demons and Three-eye Association, Zhang Tie realized that he alone was too weak...

Chapter 693: A Quick Battle

Zhang Tie felt that the God played a joke with him. When he wanted to find the super demon corps, that super demon corps disappeared; however, when he prepared to return to Ice and Snow Wilderness, he was involved with a terrifying plot set by the demons and Three-eye Association.

Hearing the details of the action in the study, Zhang Tie became flurried. 'What to do? Can I prevent them? Various thoughts occurred to Zhang Tie's mind.'

All the thoughts finally led to a firm belief——Kill!

'No matter what happens later, at least I should kill all the b*stards at present and prevent them from converting those refugees in Upton City into demonized puppets.'

With this thought, Zhang Tie, in the incarnation of the beetle, entered Castle of Black Iron. After 10 seconds, Zhang Tie appeared behind the bookshelves silently while concealing his qi like a shadow with the autumn-frost gold sword in the right hand and some palm bolts in the left hand.

However, the 3 people in the study didn't find that someone appeared in the study.

...

"Just stay here these days. It's very safe here. Nobody else can come here. I will arrange things outside. Just give me the double-headed parent worm's eggs. I will have people provide free porridge to the refugees tomorrow. I'm sure those refugees would take all the eggs of the double-headed parent worm pleasantly!" Leeb said.

"Alright. We will stay here a couple of days first. We will not go out until the Demon General's super demon corps arrive at Upton City." Tharant, a member of Arthur Clan said, "I was told that

there were a lot of refugees here. You must have enjoyed a lot of fresh beauties here these couple of years!"

"Hahaha, as many women as possible..."

They then burst out laughing in the study...

...

Zhang Tie slowly walked out of the bookshelves and saw Leeb, Tharant and a powerhouse on Tharant's side, who was also LV 13...

Sitting on the opposite of the sofa, Tharant caught sight of Zhang Tie firstly with a dumbfounded look. He wondered how the study suddenly had one more person, 'Is that another powerhouse on Leeb's side?'

Leeb also felt amazed as he turned around to check whether that bodyguard outside the door had come in...

Only that powerhouse of Arthur Clan touched his weapons at his waist the moment he saw Zhang Tie.

Of course, Zhang Tie would spare no time to them.

'Go die!'

Benefited from the senior rapid moving skill, Kuafu bloodline and the nimbleness and high speed which he gained after promoting to LV 12, Zhang Tie released the most powerful and most suitable movement in "Meteor Shower Sword"—Milky Way Sword Cage.

In a split second, a terrifying, brilliant sword qi river poured down from the sky and covered all the 3 people sitting on the sofa.

There was a terrifying chill in the terrifying sword qi cage which almost froze the 3 people; meanwhile, the LV 2 cold injury effect of autumn-frost gold sword exploded at once.

This was definitely the most powerful movement that Zhang Tie could execute today.

In front of his overwhelming battle force, all the plots, dignity and wealth were like b*llshit.

It was just a matter of life or death under the attack of the sword, regardless of gender, wealth or dignity.

No matter how reconciled and amazed was Leeb of Angus Clan, no matter how much he expected to survive on, the awe-inspiring man, as the weakest one among the 3 people had lost his head before he turned around...

Actually, Leeb was not weak at his age. As a LV 11 battle master, he was already excellent. Pitifully, he met Zhang Tie, whose battle force could match a LV 14 battle demon. It was acceptable for a LV 11 guy to suffer a strike of a powerful rune weapon from a LV 14 battle demon without any preparation.

The second one being killed by Zhang Tie's autumn-frost gold sword was that young elite Tharant of Auther Clan. At this moment, Tharant, as a LV 12 great battle master, responded a bit faster than Leeb; however, it was useless in front of Zhang Tie's sword...

The terrifying chill released by the autumn-frost gold sword made him stiff a bit unavoidably when he wanted to resist. As a result, the moment he drew out his long sword had Zhang Tie's sword qi poured down from his head like the dripping ice water, striking him more than 20 times at once.

The one who blocked Zhang Tie's strike hastily was that LV 13 powerhouse of Arthur Clan. Although he blocked this strike, he still got a strike on his left shoulder; meanwhile, he uttered a muffled harrumph...

In less than 1 second, 2 of the 3 people in the study had been killed. At this moment, Zhang Tie finally sensed the cold sense and heroic emotion of Elder Muray when he intruded in the camp of the demonized puppets and killed the head of Senel Clan with one movement.

After hearing the noise in the room, the bodyguard outside the study instantly broke in.

When the door was broken, Zhang Tie launched the most brilliant move of "Meteor Shower Sword"—sparkling fireflies towards the injured LV 13 powerhouse of Arthur Clan...

In a split second, numerous sword qi flew towards that person like fireflies and a meteor shower...

At the critical moment, that person shouted loudly as he waved his longsword to resist Zhang Tie's strike...

Zhang Tie had not imagined that this man of Arthur Clan was also a great swordsman. That guy also had not imagined that Zhang Tie's trump card was in his another hand.

After mastering the skill of mental arithmetic by abacus, Zhang Tie's battle skill had long become unpredictable. Nobody else could distract their mind in such a fierce battle; however, it was as easy as breathing for Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie's palm bolts had long upgraded into more terrifying sword bolts...

Being covered by that movement "fireflies", the small palm bolt passed the gap of the powerhouse's two sword qi curtains and penetrated through his heart, leaving an unimaginable look on his face...

It was like how one found the opponent still had bullets in his pistol when they fought by a bayonet. As was expected, that guy fell down in a reconciled way. Of course, this was not a fight by a bayonet, but a fight on the battle skills...

When the bookshelf on his back was shattered, the bodyguard who was drinking outside launched an attack towards Zhang Tie.

—"Arrogant moons"...

Two ox-horn sized iron-blood battle qi flew out of the autumn-

frost gold sword like two crescent moons and charged towards that bodyguard.

At the same time, Zhang Tie shot out another 2 palm bolts...

Closely after that, Zhang Tie threw out his autumn-frost gold sword like throwing a javelin...

Although that guy was aggressive, Zhang Tie was more aggressive...

As a powerhouse, that guy blocked away Zhang Tie's palm bolts at once. After that, he broke Zhang Tie's iron-blood sword qi of "arrogant moons in the air" as he instantly dodged away from another sword qi. However, he failed to dodge away from Zhang Tie's autumn-frost gold sword, which flew too fast to be blocked.

As a result, the sharp autumn-frost gold sword penetrated through that bodyguard's half-body metal armor like breaking a piece of paper, causing him to spurt out a mouth of fresh blood.

Before the fresh blood sprayed on the ground, Zhang Tie had already appeared in front of him like a lightning bolt and struck him with a fierce iron-blood punch, splitting that guy's half-body metal armor into pieces together with his body at once...

Panting, Zhang Tie stood still while supporting his sword on the floor. He then looked around the study and found it was messy all over——shattered desks, sofa, bookshelves and 4 corpse's parts.

Although it was a transient battle, it was extremely fierce. In over 10 seconds, Zhang Tie had already exerted his full efforts to kill all the 4 people.

After hearing such a loud noise, the other people in this villa were shocked while dense footsteps drifted from the aisle outside the room. They soon arrived at the door.

"Stay out there. Nobody is allowed in without my consent..." Zhang Tie shouted in the tone of the [dead] Leeb. It was the simplest imitating ability. As long as Zhang Tie had heard some

voice, he could imitate it vividly.

Narrowing his eyes, Zhang Tie watched the door. As long as the door was pushed open from the outside, he would only kill all of them outside the door. At this moment, a whim occurred to Zhang Tie's mind. He wanted to have a try whether it would succeed or not.

Zhang Tie uttered while all the footsteps on the aisle stopped. It seemed that Leeb was too brutal to his subordinates that his subordinates dared not disobey his order at all.

"Young master, are you okay?" A voice sounded from the outside in a timid way.

"It's okay. I will come out soon. Nobody is allowed in without my consent. All of you could leave now, except for the steward!"

"Yes, sir!"

"The dense footsteps started to leave orderly, except one who was standing reverently outside the room..."

Zhang Tie let out a sigh at once...

...

Chapter 694: The Soul-Reading Incarnation

The room was messy after the battle. After throwing the autumn-frost gold sword into Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie had started to clean the battlefield. Only after 2 minutes, he had already collected all the valuables of the 4 corpses and thrown them into Castle of Black Iron without authentication.

After that, Zhang Tie looked around and caught sight of a leather trunk as large as a luggage carrier on the side of the sofa where the LV 13 powerhouse had just sat.

Zhang Tie walked over there and lifted that trunk. He found it was heavy. Therefore, he unzipped the trunk as he saw a safe-like black rectangular metal container inside it. There was a locked lid on the metal container. At the sight of it, Zhang Tie remembered the weird key that he had gotten from Tharant's corpse. Therefore, he found out that key once again...

With a "click" sound, the metal container was unlocked. Zhang Tie then opened its lid.

The greater part of that pitch-dark metal container was filled with glutinous liquid, among which was a creeping purple black two-headed mollusk which was as long as one's forearm.

At the sight of this animal, Zhang Tie drew in a mouth of breath, 'A double-head parent worm!'

Zhang Tie had never imagined such a [weird] look of the parent worm of demonized puppets. Such an animal which could easily exterminate hundreds of thousands of people was as weak as an odd-looking sea cucumber. Even a cat or a dog could kill it, not to mention people.

Its tail was still secreting a mucus. At the sight of it, Zhang Tie realized that it was not a common mucus; but the eggs of the parent worm; a single drop of mucus contained numerous eggs of

the parent worm. If people took them, they would cause a chaos in the world.

After thinking for a short while, Zhang Tie straightly threw this container along with that double-headed parent worm into Castle of Black Iron.

"Heller, it's yours!"

"Copy that!" Heller briefed.

Zhang Tie didn't know how could he use it for the time being; however, he believed that it would help him one day. Therefore, he just handed it to Heller.

After that, Zhang Tie picked up Leeb's head from the ground and glanced at it for a couple of seconds before touching his [own] forehead onto the icy forehead [of Leeb]; at the same time, he activated the soul-reading skill of bloody soul temple of Taixia Country.

For bloody soul temple, there were a lot of methods to open one's mouth, even if he was dead. As long as the person had not died longer than a few hours, the bloody soul temple of Taixia Country could always discover many secrets from the corpse. Perhaps, for bloody soul temple of Taixia Country, humans, even corpses didn't have any secret at all.

For many commoners, if one's head was separated from his neck, he had already died, at least physically. However, for bloody soul temple of Taixia Country, the person had not died; even if his head had been chopped off. Only when his brain had died was he dead for sure.

As Leeb had just lost his head for a couple of minutes, of course, his brain had not died yet.

The soul-reading skill was too weird. When the cultivator applied it, he should touch his forehead with that of the dead one. It looked a bit grim and terrifying which wouldn't be mastered by

good people. If there was an audience, Zhang Tie would never exhibit this secret method. However, he was alone here; therefore, he wouldn't care too much about that.

The soul-reading skill could also be implemented on a living person; however, the result was that the living person would become an idiot or a lunatic. Such a soul-reading skill was very harmful to the living person's brain. Additionally, it posed an extremely high requirement on the cultivator's spiritual energy.

At this moment, Zhang Tie's mass spiritual energy flowed out of his forehead and injected into Leeb's head like a fine, invisible mercury. It surrounded Leeb's brain completely. After that, the spiritual energy stabbed in some special locations of Leeb's brain in the form of sharp, fine needles.

Closing his eyes, Zhang Tie uttered some weird, obscure syllables. Closely after that, Zhang Tie started to trace Leeb's memory instantly from the perspective of Leeb. The scenes flashed across Zhang Tie's mind like slides. Without the super spiritual energy as a buffering and the carrier, Zhang Tie might have already become an idiot. Now, what Leeb had experienced were showing in Zhang Tie's mind clearly like that Zhang Tie himself had already experienced.

According to the rules of memory, the more recent it was, the more detailed and colorful the memory would be; by contrast, the older it was, the less detailed and colorful the memory would be; the more important it was, the clearer the memory would be while the people and scenes would be more impulsive to Leeb's spirit; by contrast, the more average it was, the lighter the memory would be...

In such scenes, Zhang Tie "saw" many things in Leeb's life, including influential people, women, sex, wealth, fresh blood, murder, conspiracy, terrifying punishment, pleasure, cruelty and various commoners who feared and flattered him, Angus Clan and its secrets, strikes on opponents in Free Commercial

Federation...all the memories, experiences and secrets had been displayed by Zhang Tie's powerful spiritual energy at an extremely fast speed like a free magazine.

Only after 10 minutes, Zhang Tie had already traced back to the period before the holy war.

If Zhang Tie wished, he could keep tracing like this. However, Zhang Tie stopped as the memory before the holy war was not too valuable for him.

Zhang Tie closed his eyes silently and sorted those important contents in Leeb's memory for a couple of minutes; after that, he threw Leeb's head into the Abyss of Chaos.

After that, Zhang Tie did the same to Tharant. He saw the whole process of this action, including more details. He saw the overwhelming flood in Nein City. In a special tent, Zhang Tie saw Tharant standing behind some rows of people and lowering his body towards a demon with a crocodile tail who was wearing a pitch-dark full-body armor and a bending helmet and saying, "Demon General..."

...

Zhang Tie exited from Tharant's memory. After being silent for a few minutes, he moved once again. He put off all the clothes and shoes of Leeb before throwing Leeb's corpse into the Abyss of Chaos. After that, he put off his own clothes and slowly changed his frame and the color of his hair according to that of Leeb...

...

After a few minutes, an alive Leeb reappeared in this study.

Although feeling a bit disgusting and uncomfortable, Zhang Tie still rapidly put on Leeb's clothes. After putting on Leeb's clothes, he seriously cut his own hair using his hand according to the hairstyle of Leeb. Then, he made his hair messy so as to look very embarrassed just like a survivor of a battle. Finally, he checked his

current look from the shiny desktop. Even Zhang Tie could not distinguish whether that was him or Leeb. After lightly coughing a couple of times, Zhang Tie returned to a sofa outside the study as he leaned against the sofa in a fatigued look. He then called in the steward using Leeb's tone.

The moment the steward opened the door and caught sight of the scene in the room had he been stunned. Before he exclaimed, he noticed Zhang Tie's grim look as he quivered a bit all over. Closely after that, he swallowed back his words as he lowered his head silently.

Zhang Tie was very satisfied with this effect. Thankfully, this was not Leeb's first time to kill people in the villa. On two occasions, he even suddenly changed his face and killed his guests at the table. Therefore, the steward had been immune to this scene.

This steward had no special background or status. He was just an arduous man. Leeb chose him as the steward because he had two advantages, high-efficient and secretive, which made Leeb very reassured.

"There's no guest in the villa tonight, Rex has been dispatched out, am I clear?" After briefing Leeb's memory, Zhang Tie almost mastered his daily behaviors. Therefore, being benefited by his face-changing bloodline, Zhang Tie was completely an alive Leeb from the look, tone, expressions and movements. Even those on Leeb's side could not identify that he was the wrong one.

The bodyguard being killed by Zhang Tie was Rex.

"Yes, sir!" The steward lowered his head.

"Clean this place and send someone to inform Sieg; I will see him tomorrow morning..."

...

Chapter 695: Contacting Family Members

Zhang Tie then left the study with a glassy-eyed look and returned to Leeb's bedroom.

Leeb's bedroom was 300 sq m large which looked like a lobby. Although it was so late, those women in the bedroom dared not go to bed; instead, they all dressed themselves according to Leeb's choice and waited for his arrival.

After "briefing" Leeb's memory, Zhang Tie clearly knew that this guy was a super d*ck. Even Zhang Tie, who was lascivious when he was staying with those girls of Rose Association, was dwarfed in front of him.

Leeb liked all sorts of women and was proficient in the means to play with women. Additionally, he had some odd special hobbies. He always performed seductive or perverted roleplay in the various scenes. Although those hobbies were excessive in commoners' eyes, they were "very normal" in Leeb's eyes. Among his special hobbies, the most abnormal one, the one that all the women on his side were afraid of, was that this guy liked to kill these women with maltreatment in an extremely perverted way when he got excited.

Since more and more refugees moved to Upton City, there were always fresh beauties on Leeb's side. Most of these women were daughters from average families who escaped to Upton City. As they could not bear the high living cost in Upton City, many people were sold to Leeb as slaves. A small part of them was robbed by Leeb's subordinates in a tough way so as to flatter him. However, no matter what kind of women they were, they would not have a good outcome. Those lucky enough would be sold or gifted to others after Leeb got bored of them while those unlucky ones would be killed with maltreatment.

In the recent years, many batches of women had been changed on

Leeb's side. Even Leeb couldn't remember how many batches of women had he changed. Leeb had many residences in Upton City, each of which had many such women.

At this moment, there were 7 women in the room, with special make-up, each of them was very seductive. If not having "experienced such battles so many times", Zhang Tie might have been conquered by such an alluring scene.

At the sight of Leeb coming back, all the women revealed big smiles. However, Zhang Tie could sense the fear deep in their mind.

At this moment, Zhang Tie's hair was messy while his clothes were tainted with Leeb's blood when Zhang Tie chopped off his head. He looked pretty grim. However, those women who lived under Leeb's authority didn't dare ask what happened. Zhang Tie just threw a glance at them like how Leeb always did, causing some of the 7 women to quiver all over with pale faces.

"Go out!" Zhang Tie issued his order like how Leeb always treated these women.

Those women did not dare to ask why, they quickly lowered their heads and put on their capes and left Leeb's bedroom one after another. As Leeb's emotions changed so fast, these women finally let out a sigh after knowing that they didn't need to accompany this vicious king.

After these women left, Zhang Tie also let out a sigh. He then came to the bathroom being enshrouded with hot steam and put off Leeb's disgusting clothes quickly. Closely after that, he stepped into the bathing pool which was filled with the live hot spring water being led from the underground; additionally, the water was covered with pedals. After soaking himself in the comfortable hot spring water, covering his neck, Zhang Tie felt completely relaxed.

Although Leeb the d**chebag deserved death, Zhang Tie had to admit that he was really good at enjoyment. All the things in the

bathroom would cost at least 10,000 gold coins. Whether the warm spring water being led from the underground or the ivory bed being carved by an ivory of a huge mutated elephant which could never be afforded by commoners.

In such a relaxed state, Zhang Tie entered meditation while closing his eyes.

At this moment, one line that Zhang Tie once read from a book which carried the greatest philosophical meaning loomed in Zhang Tie's mind—The rule of the God is to decrease the surplus to complement the deficiency while the rule of humans is to decrease the deficiency to serve the surplus.

When the moons became full, they would eclipse; conversely, the stronger and richer the humans were, the stronger and richer they would be; the weaker and poorer the humans were, the weaker and poorer they would be. For humans, as long as one peak or low ebb was reached, an inertia would come into being and push them forward and consolidate your current life state.

The reason why Zhang Tie came to such a realization was that he discovered that he had gained another unique ability after achieving a certain qualitative leapfrog since the combination of Castle of Black Iron and the "Great Wilderness Sutra". This unique ability combined the body-changing bloodline, imitating bloodline and the secret methods of bloody soul temple. With this unique ability, he could completely imitate everybody else while gaining great achievements and opportunities. Benefited from this, Zhang Tie would grow stronger and stronger.

It was like playing cards. Zhang Tie felt that he had more and more good cards in his hands at this moment. When those good cards freely combined with each other, they would form an increasingly greater destructive force. Zhang Tie felt that he had more and more methods to play cards in a more relaxed way.

Closely after killing 4 powerhouses of the clans of Three-eye

Association whose level varied from LV 11 to LV 13, Zhang Tie felt that he was indeed different than before. 'If I was like a hard-working laborer before, I am now a vicious capitalist who have completed the preliminary and the most difficult capital accumulation on the road of cultivation. In the future, I can accomplish greater capital accumulation at the speed that is dozens or hundreds of times faster than that of others.'

When a person accomplished his capital accumulation to a certain degree, he would realize a qualitative leapfrog and enter the track of individual development expansion which was featured by "the more powerful a person was, the more powerful he would be."

At this moment, the anxiety and concerns he had after knowing that the super demon corps would destroy the Upton City also eased a lot in such a relaxed state. Zhang Tie considered it silently, 'Certainly, it was a great crisis for the humans in Upton City, even for the entire north region of Blackson Humans Corridor; however, a huge opportunity is carried in such a great crisis; namely, I know the trace and plan of the looming super demon corps. If I could take good advantage of this opportunity, I might cause a great blow to the super demon corps in 3 days.'

As Zhang Tie had not taken a bath for many days, he just took a cool bath in the bathroom as he improved his plan in mind.

After taking the bath, Zhang Tie walked out of the bathing pool. In the bathroom, he injected Iron-blood battle qi into his two fingers and started to make a final remedy of his hairstyle using his fingers as scissors.

Zhang Tie could imitate everything but the hairstyle. Although he could change the color and texture of his hair and enable his hair to continue to grow very long in a short time, he could not shorten his hair by using the body-changing bloodline. Therefore, the hairstyle might be the only loophole when he imitated a person. Thankfully, there were only a few hairstyles for men.

Additionally, Zhang Tie's hairstyle was similar to that of Leeb. Therefore, after making his hairstyle messy in the study, he was not identified by those women. At this moment, in order to fix the only loophole, Zhang Tie further improved his hairstyle according to that of Leeb in his memory.

At this moment, Zhang Tie was amused as he found that he could be a qualified barber with the knight's consciousness. When he cut his hair, Zhang Tie found that he could position each hair precisely. Even though in front of a mirror, he could still complete it smoothly. If he really needed money urgently in the future, he could open a barber's shop.

After finishing his hairdressing, Zhang Tie watched that handsome and evil face in the mirror as he made a series of grimaces. Finally, he even stretched out his two fingers and made a "victory" pose which was non-mainstream in Black Iron Age.

After cleaning the water on his body, Zhang Tie walked out of the bathroom naked. He then came to Leeb's costume room.

Although being a man, Leeb's costume room was even more exaggerating than that of any women. The room covered over 200 sq m, which was divided into 4 layers. It included clothes, hats, shoes and socks and male ornaments. There were more than 70 top quality watches on the hand modules. Four drawers were filled with decorative finger rings and sleeve buttons, each sort of which contained at least 100 types and colors. All of them were top items made of best materials with the best craftsmanship.

Since he was born, Leeb had been living a noble life. In Upton City, more than 10 senior tailors were serving him. Leeb would retain those watches and ornaments; however, he would never wear the same clothes or shoes for the second time. If he liked one style, he would have people make dozens of the same style. When he tried all of them, he would have people send him new ones.

Looking around this costume room, Zhang Tie couldn't help but

imagine about moving all of them into Castle of Black Iron, if he did that, he would not worry about having any clothes to wear in the next decades.

'Hmm, that's feasible. Leeb's frame was almost like that of mine. We even share the same shoe size. In Donder's words, even locust's legs had flesh. So many items in this room would be worth at least 100,000 gold coins...'

'But not right now. I will consider it in a couple of days.' Zhang Tie thought.

Zhang Tie then quickly put on a set of clothes. Watching himself in the mirror, Zhang Tie had to admit that he was the very Leeb.

After leaving the costume room, Zhang Tie came to the bedroom. Standing in front of a wall painting, Zhang Tie pressed a part on it. Closely after that, the wall painting slid off slowly, exposing a safe which was connected to the wall.

Zhang Tie rapidly rotated the button on the safe in the anti-clockwise and clockwise manner. Closely after that, he opened the safe by pulling its handle, causing a light "click" sound.

There were stacks of wholly-new gold checks, some contracts of Leed's real estates, his shares of the business groups in Upton City and some other valuable items.

If the status of Angus Clan as a clan of Three-eye Association was exposed after 3 days, those contracts would become waste papers. However, if he turned these contracts into cash at this moment, Zhang Tie would arouse their doubts even if he could cause those unlucky guys lose all of their capital. Therefore, he didn't move those contracts; instead, he just moved all the gold checks and valuable items into Castle of Black Iron.

Two-thirds of those gold checks were issued by Golden Roc Bank, one-third of them were issued by the Continental United Bank. The latter one looked strange as Zhang Tie had never seen it

before. After picking a gold check and looking at it, Zhang Tie found that the alleged Continental United Bank came from the Western Continent.

These gold checks were worth about 5-6 million gold coins in total.

Zhang Tie felt pretty cool about plundering clans of Three-eye Association while each of his pores was singing.

Leeb had a private castle in the south of Upton City, which contained a lot of valuable items. Being not in a hurry to take those items, Zhang Tie intended to sweep over this villa first.

After sweeping Leeb's bedroom, Zhang Tie took a round in the room before taking out that remote-sensing crystal that he used to contact with his elder brother.

...

"Elder brother, are you there?" Zhang Tie sent a message.

In less than 2 minutes, Zhang Tie received a message from Zhang Yang.

"All the family members were worried about you these days as we didn't receive your message!"

"I'm fine. I'm still jubilant. Tell dad, mom and my wives to not worry about me. I have a very important thing to tell Huaiyuan Palace, can you contact them now?"

After over 10 seconds of silence, Zhang Tie received another message.

"6th granduncle is in our home..."

Chapter 696: Being Almighty

As Zhang Tie's 6th granduncle was in their home, it would be more convenient for Zhang Tie to pass the message. As an elder of Huaiyuan Palace, Zhang Tie's 6th granduncle had the right to make decisions about major events in Huaiyuan Palace. If this information was passed to Huaiyuan Palace through the mouth of Zhang Tie's 6th granduncle, it would be more reliable.

'Our 6th granduncle came to our home to meet your 3 sons.' Zhang Yang briefed the reason.

As Zhang Tie was not in Taixia Country, he didn't know that his 3 sons had caused a sensation over there. During the months when he cultivated in seclusion in the Misty Ocean, Zhang's threshold has almost been broken by those who came to propose baby marriage with gifts. Because of the 3 babies, Zhang family became very popular in Fuhai City while Beverly, Linda and Fiona were instantly accepted by the Hua mainstream society in Fuhai City and entered the circle of celebrities and quality ladies in Fuhai City.

It was very difficult for common foreign girls like Beverly, Linda and Fiona to gain the acceptance of the local Hua mainstream society in Taixia. Without 3 generations' efforts, without innocent backgrounds, good education or sufficient wealth, foreign common girls could barely enter the mainstream society of Taixia Country. It was not because that Hua people in Taixia Country were biased about them, but the great civilization and confidence that Hua people displayed in this age were at the peak of the whole world. Hua people were the leader and pillar of this world. Without 3 generations' efforts, common foreign immigrants could barely form that spiritual and civil gene accepted by Hua society.

After Zhang Tie's 6th granduncle arrived, he instantly expressed Huaiyuan Palace's attitude to Zhang family and made Zhang family feel truly flattered.

With a knight at home, Zhang Tie family became tranquil at once.

On the 3rd day since he came to Zhang Tie's house had Zhang Tie's 6th granduncle declared to instruct the 3 babies in the future with the consent of Zhang Tie's parents and 3 wives.

It was a special honor and benefit to have one clan elder instruct his 3 babies. In Huaiyuan Palace, even the clan head's bloodline might not enjoy such a special treatment. Zhang Tie's 6th granduncle's decision indicated that Zhang Tie's 3 babies would definitely have unusual achievements in the future as long as they were not stupid.

...

Since their 6th granduncle arrived at their house, Zhang Yang had been pretending that he could not contact Zhang Tie as this was the secret between him and Zhang Tie. Additionally, Zhang Yang was also afraid that Huaiyuan Palace would issue some orders or requirements to Zhang Tie through him. Otherwise, he would feel embarrassed to transmit the message to Zhang Tie. Therefore, he straightly lied to his 6th granduncle. However, after receiving Zhang Tie's message, he could only knock at his 6th granduncle's door as he realized the importance of this affair.

The time of Taixia was several hours earlier than that of Waii Sub-continent. At this moment, the sun had not yet risen in Taixia; however, Zhang's 6th granduncle had already got up and was meditating with crossed legs in his bedroom.

The moment Zhang Yang opened the door and saw his 6th granduncle's genial face had he revealed a big smile, "6th granduncle...erm...are you convenient now?"

"Zhang Yang, what's up. Come on in!" Zhang Yang's 6th granduncle replied with a smile.

Zhang Yang then entered the bedroom.

"Erm...6th granduncle...Zhang Tie has something to report to you."

"Say it...argh...what? Zhang Tie has something to report to me?" Zhang Yang's 6th granduncle's eyes instantly shined like fluorescent lamps in the highlighted crystal lens of cars.

"Hmm, erm...no, actually, I can work out remote-sensing communication with him using twin crystals!" Zhang Yang explained in an embarrassed way. Meanwhile, he took out that mini remote-sensing crystal.

Zhang Yang's 6th granduncle then looked straight into Zhang Yang's eyes, making Zhang Yang keep smirking in front of this noble old man.

Zhang Yang's 6th granduncle took a deep breath as he watched Zhang Yang's remote-sensing crystal; at the same time, he isolated the entire room with his battle qi. Nobody else could eavesdrop the talk inside the room...

"Ask him where is he now?"

...

After a few minutes, Zhang Tie received Zhang Yang's message.

"6th granduncle asks where are you?"

"I'm still in the north of Blackson Humans Corridor. As I'm in a special situation, I cannot tell you about my concrete location! I've got an important thing to report to Huaiyuan Palace!"

"What's that?"

"3 days later, that super demon corps would raid Upton City under the leadership of that Demon General!" Zhang Tie briefed the key information.

After 5-6 minutes, Zhang Tie received a reply.

"Repeat what you said just now!"

"After 3 days, that super demon corps will raid Upton City under the leadership of that Demon General!"

"How did you know that?"

"It's a long story. But my message is reliable for sure. As it would pose a great influence on the overall situation across Waii Sub-continent and the interests of Huaiyuan Palace, I had to report it to Huaiyuan Palace!"

"6th granduncle said if your message is true, you will make a meritorious deed for Huaiyuan Palace. If not, it would also be a severe outcome..."

"If my intelligence is false, I would like to accept any punishment of Huaiyuan Palace. I won't joke with Huaiyuan Palace by such a major event!"

After a few minutes, Zhang Tie received another message.

"6th granduncle wants to confirm your status!"

Zhang Tie understood 6th granduncle's request, as this message was of great significance, even 6th granduncle had to be meticulous about it. Even though Zhang Yang had already confirmed about his status, their 6th granduncle wanted to confirm it once again.

"You can let him ask me some questions that are exclusive to him and I."

"Where did you see him for the first time? What was the first sentence that you told him? Where did you see him last time? What was the last sentence that he told you?"

After receiving the 4 questions, Zhang Tie answered.

"I met our 6th granduncle in the ancestral bloodline palace of the Clansmen Pavilion for the first time; the first sentence that I told him was "6th granduncle, here's Zhang Tie on behalf of Zhang Ping, my father"; the last time when I saw 6th granduncle was in

the prison of Clansmen Pavilion; the last sentence that 6th granduncle told me was "Watch out later on, don't do evil things in the name of Huaiyuan Palace; otherwise, you have to face home punishments!"

After another 2 minutes, Zhang Tie received the reply.

"Our 6th granduncle warns you to not take action casually. You have to prioritize your own safety!"

"I will. I will contact you 3 days later!"

After sending this message, Zhang Tie cut off the link between his spiritual energy and the remote-sensing crystal and teleported that remote-sensing crystal into Castle of Black Iron.

At this moment, in Zhang Tie's eyes, among all the familiar people and powers that Zhang Tie knew, only Huaiyuan Palace was qualified to coordinate with the other parties in 3 days and give the super demon corps a surprise outside the Upton City. Even if Huaiyuan Palace didn't take any action, they would notify Norman Empire with this key message.

If the super demon corps really cut off the portal towards the south, Huaiyuan Palace would definitely suffer a loss. However, as this action was concerned with the survival of the countries in the north of Blackson Humans Corridor, based on the current relationship between Norman Empire and Huaiyuan Palace, even though Huaiyuan Palace was not sure about the reliability of this message, Norman Empire would never take it lightly.

If it was a common demon corps that was going to rush towards Upton City, Zhang Tie might want to do something using the double-headed parent worm in his hand. However, he could not have any chance to do that to the super demon corps at all. The only channel that the parent worm's eggs entered the bodies of the super demon corps was water; however, that super demon corps had very strict regulations on drinking the water. All the fighters only drunk flowing water that had passed the test. 'Even though I

know which river would the super demon corps drink in, the parent worm's eggs would not contaminate the whole river at once.'

Zhang Tie felt that he had already pushed down the key domino. 'As to what will happen 3 days later, it depends. It would require at least 5 knights to resist that super demon corps. It's silly to resist such a destructive power by myself alone.'

'Facing such a critical situation, I can only do my own job well. The opportunity that I can see will not be invisible to those human elites.'

Zhang Tie didn't expose the intelligence that Angus Clan was a clan of Three-eye Association temporarily. If he exposed it to Huaiyuan Palace. Once the alliance launched an attack towards Angus Clan, they might kill the fake Leeb disguised by Zhang Tie. If so, he would not even have a chance to cry for being wronged. After all, Angus Clan would still be here in 3 days.

Having not imagined that the most important battle on resisting that super demon corps would break out outside Upton City since he left the Selnes Theater of Operations under his guidance, Zhang Tie felt a bit bizarre as if he was still fighting in Selnes Theater of Operations.

After doing all this, Zhang Tie entered a meditation so as to recover the physical and spiritual energy that he consumed this day.

...

After dawn, the guy called Sieg came for Zhang Tie according to the living habit of Leeb.

As a subordinate of Leeb, this guy was responsible for the materials supply in the refugee camp. Being accompanied by Rein, who was responsible for the forces of Angus Clan, they were Leeb's important lackeys to control the Angus Clan's business of the

refugee camp outside Upton City.

"Ah? Provide free porridge? Young master, you mean you want to provide free porridge to the refugees? Additionally, you want to ensure that each refugee could have it?" Sieg was stunned.

Zhang Tie didn't explain it at all. Instead, he just threw an icy and impatient glance at Sieg. Sieg instantly realized that he had asked too much as he hurriedly slapped his own face twice while oozing cold sweat all over, "Yes sir...yes sir...yes sir, I will go arrange it right now. I will start to provide free porridge to the refugees from today and ensure that all the refugees could have it!"

Zhang Tie waved his hand like chasing a fly while Sieg hurriedly left the room.

...

As an old saying went, "If one wanted to disguise something, he had to disguise well until the end." According to Leeb's original arrangement, with this opportunity to provide free porridge, he would feed the refugees with all the parent worm's eggs. However, Zhang Tie didn't add the parent worm's eggs in the porridge. He only needed to let others know that Angus Clan was doing public welfare in the refugee camp.

After issuing the order, Zhang Tie found a hidden place and took out that remote-sensing crystal that he got from Tharant, the dead young elite of Arthur Clan. He then sent a series of complex ID code through that crystal based on the memory of Tharant. After that, he added a line in the secret words as they've already appointed with each other——Upton City's fruit is getting ripe.

In this event, Zhang Tie played 3 roles at the same time. Zhang Tie felt being almighty at this moment.

Chapter 697: Pre-war Preparation (I)

Closely after Leeb's order, all the refugee camps in Upton City had started to erect big pots and provide free cooked porridge to the refugees. There were over 600 big pots across the city, in front of each of them were long lines of refugees who were queuing up for free food.

Zhang Tie's order didn't arouse any people's doubt about his motive. Celebrities like Leeb would always look very brilliant even though they were extremely bad. Leeb would attend philanthropic activities such as charity auctions and funding orphanages several times a year. This was the game rule in their circle.

This philanthropic activity was also regarded as Leeb's intention to offset the negative influence and gossips about him caused by that murderer "Peter" who killed people outside the Gold Coin Pub two days ago.

The corpses of Rein and his mistress were found by Rein's subordinate. Of course, this was owed to "Peter".

"Peter" seemed to have escaped out of Upton City last night. Leeb dispatched a powerhouse to chase after him, but there was still no message until now.

All the people who cared about this event were waiting for that powerhouse dispatched by Leeb to bring back Peter's head. However, nobody knew that Peter had already become Leeb.

Right in the same morning, Zhang Tie had his steward silently send away all the women that Leeb arranged in Upton City.

Leeb wouldn't explain what he did to others. Being afraid of his changing characters and grim means, his subordinates dared never ask why. Those women who met Zhang Tie last night also became one of the luckiest batches among all women of Leeb's. Zhang Tie had the steward give 1,000 gold coins to each of those women

before burning all of their contracts in front of those women. After that, he had the steward arrange that day's airship to dispatch all the women to the south and set them free.

Although it was pretty difficult for others to get even one seat in the airship, it was just as easy as moving his lips for Leeb.

Because of the event that happened in the villa last night, the steward dared not ask about it too much. He just felt that there ought to be some unknown reason between the two events.

...

"Young master, I've sent those women away!" The steward came to Zhang Tie's room to notice Zhang Tie after finishing his job.

In front of Leeb, the steward even dared not raise his head and look straight at Leeb's eyes.

"Very good!" Zhang Tie nodded with a smile. At the same time, his eyes became as deep as black holes. Even his voice sounded irresistible, "Raise your head and look at my eyes!"

After receiving the order, the steward raised his head and watched Zhang Tie's eyes. Closely after that, he was mired in Zhang Tie's deep eyes. After over 10 seconds, Zhang Tie moved his eyes away from that steward. However, the steward found that he was still gazing at the young master. He then became so scared that he hurriedly lowered his head while oozing cold sweat over his forehead. At the same time, he was curious inside, 'How could I become so audacious? How dared I gaze at young master? If I stirred up him, my life would be in danger...'

The steward quivered all over. Even the steward himself had not realized that he became instantly more scared about "Leeb" after only 10 more seconds.

"I want to go back to Hunting Castle. Arrange it!"

"Yes, sir!"

...

Seeing the steward off, Zhang Tie revealed a sneer. Just now, he was using a secret method of bloody soul temple to clean the steward's memory on what he saw last night in the study room. Besides, he planted a soul seed in the steward's consciousness, which had already sprouted in his consciousness silently.

'After 2 days, the steward will disband all the servants and guards in this villa in the name of Leeb. After that, he will silently escape to the south to be a recluse. Of course, all this is not out of one's order for that steward; instead, it's because that the steward awakens his awareness. After 2 days, this steward will realize that he will not be under the control of Leeb any longer, he will feel being very dangerous on Leeb's side; he will feel that he will not accomplish the orders of Leeb. In order to protect himself, he will pluck up his "courage" to escape away from this evil king and the Free Commercial Federation and find a new place where the memory on Leeb's side will be regarded as a nightmare in his life. He will never remind it to others any longer; after that, he will start a new life.'

This indicated the terror of the "soul capture skill", which could unconsciously change one's awareness and behaviors.

As a steward of Leeb, Zhang Tie could almost confirm it that if Upton City was collapsed by that super demon corps 3 days later, the status of Angus Clan as a member of Three-eye Association would be exposed. As a result, the steward would definitely be caught by others and be asked about everything he knew about Leeb. 'However, the memory on how he contacted me last night would be the only possible loophole which might expose my real status. As long as the steward could describe the looks of the two members of Arthur Clan and exposed that "Leeb" killed the two people, it would definitely arouse others' doubt.'

Commoners might not be able to find any loophole through the steward's descriptions; however, many professional ones could

recover the original looks of the two members of Arthur Clan based on the steward's description. After that, they could easily confirm the two people's status based on their looks. As long as they confirm that the two members of Arthur Clan belonged to Three-eye Association, the biggest problem would come——why would Leeb of Angus Clan, a member of Three-eye Association kill the two liaisons of Arthur Clan, another member of Three-eye Association? Such a conflict was forbidden in Three-eye Association. Almost nobody dared disobey it. What was the reason behind it?

'It's already very weird for me to obtain the intelligence that the demons would raid Upton City 3 days later. How could I obtain such a bizarre intelligence?' Zhang Tie was afraid that the elders of Huaiyuan Palace would link this event to him.

'Even though elders of Huaiyuan Palace don't think so, as long as this intelligence is known by the moles of Three-eye Association, it would be more boring——after the liaisons of Arthur Clan were killed, how did I know the information mastered by the liaisons of Arthur Clan? How did I know the ID code of their remote-sensing crystal and send back the false intelligence?'

'After combining the two questions, my status and many secrets would be exposed.'

This was the only loophole that Zhang Tie left in Upton City.

The simplest way to fix this loophole was to kill that steward.

However, Zhang Tie didn't want to do that. Because he knew that the steward was just an innocent commoner who worked for Leeb. He felt pitiful about that person.

Under the request of Leeb, the most "excessive" thing that this steward had done for Leeb was to deal with corpses using a corrosive liquid. Perhaps, it was not morally accepted; however, very few commoners dared say no in front of such a terrifying coercion.

'If I was still that common teenager in Blackhot City, if I had not joined the holy war, if the new head dispatched to Blackhot City from Norman Empire was like Leeb, would I dare to oppose him?'

Zhang Tie's answer was negative.

'If I couldn't do it, I should not ask others to do it.' Therefore, Zhang Tie didn't fix this loophole in the simplest method; instead, he kept the steward alive with another method.

Many people in this villa didn't know that their fates had changed greatly only after a whim occurred to Zhang Tie.

After cleaning the only possible trace in Upton City, Zhang Tie left the No. 16 manor in Wealth Avenue by a car for the Hunting Castle in the south of Upton City.

...

The Hunting Castle that Angus Clan built near the Kalay Mountain Range in the south of Upton City symbolized the wealth and social status of the clan. As there were a lot of wild and magical beasts in Kalay Mountain range, the peripheral of the mountain, where low-level magical beasts would always appear, became the sacred hunting region. The Hunting Castle of Angus Clan was rightly for the purpose of hunting. Besides, Angus Clan even trained a great batch of wild hunters so as to accompany Young Master Leeb to hunt in the mountain.

Of course, this was just the impression of Hunting Castle in the eyes of outsiders. In Zhang Tie's eyes, the Hunting Castle was actually a secret base of Three-eye Association in Upton City. Those wild hunters that Angus Clan trained in Hunting Castle could actually form a powerful maneuver force of Three-eye Association in the Free Commercial Federation. Being different from those servants and guards of Leeb in the No. 16 manor in Wealth Avenue, each person in this Hunting Castle clearly knew about their status and the status of Angus Clan. These people were unswerving allegiance to Three-eye Association.

Hunting Castle was where Leeb hunted for low-level wild and magical beasts and where he cultivated.

The Hunting Castle was more than 50 miles away from Upton City, which was right at the foot of a mountain. There was only one rough road from Upton City to the Hunting Castle. Only one part of the rough road was accessible. The road came to an end when there was still over 10 miles left for the Hunting Castle. There was already a team of cavalries on magical horses waiting there for him at the foot of the mountain slope near the end of the road.

Only Angus Clan's cars came here all the way along the rough road across Upton City. With a telescope in the Hunting Castle, people would easily observe the trace of the cars. Therefore, each time Leeb came here, those wild hunters in the Hunting Castle would come here to welcome him.

Watching so many b*stards of Three-eye Association, Zhang Tie felt like seeing fruits of brilliance hanging on the small tree...

Chapter 698: Pre-war Preparation (II)

More than 20 wild hunters came to welcome Zhang Tie. All of them were wearing clothes and hats made of animal hides. Many of them were carrying crossbows and bolts on their back.

This was a great force. Of course, there were more wild hunters in the Hunting Castle, 287 people in total, about half of which were LV 5 warriors, while the other half varied from LV 6 to LV 9. The head of these wild hunters was a LV 11 battle master called Hany. Such a combined force definitely ranked high among all the countries in Blackson Humans Corridor.

In usual time, these people were wild hunters. However, when needed, they were maneuver force of Three-eye Association. These people had already robbed business groups many times nearby the Gusbay Trail of Kalay Mountain Range. Each time, nobody in the business groups survived. Leeb even joined one case. Besides, some murders in Free Commercial Federation were also involved with these people. Angus Clan even used these people to clear many opponents and disobeyed ones.

"Young Master, please mount the horse!" A tall person with a tattoo in his face invited Zhang Tie as he led a magical horse here.

"Hany, what's up in Hunting Castle these days?" Zhang Tie asked as he mounted on the magical horse adroitly. As Zhang Tie had already unveiled the 4th floor of All-spirits Pagoda, he was very sensitive to the senses of all the animals below LV 4 and was able to communicate with them. When that magical horse found a stranger was moving closer to him, it threw a glance at Zhang Tie. However, it instantly recovered its composure when Zhang Tie touched its neck with his hand. Besides, it intimately rubbed Zhang Tie's arm with its head.

"With your blessings, everything is well!" Hany answered respectfully.

"We've not hunted for a long time. I'm sure those preys have been impatient. We need to have a big party this time!"

After hearing this pun, Hany's eyes gleamed as he licked his lips. Meanwhile, all the others burst out laughing.

Before Zhang Tie's cars left, Zhang Tie told them to come here to pick him up 4 days later. Actually, they would have been disbanded by the steward after 2 days.

"Gya 1 ..." Zhang Tie clutched the belly of the magical horse by his legs, making it rush towards the Hunting Castle, followed by others hurriedly.

...

The magical horse moved very fast. In only a couple of minutes, Zhang Tie had already caught sight of the Hunting Castle of Angus Clan, which was a quality castle. As it was featured by hunting, it had a stronger defensive ability and aggressiveness. Its castle wall was higher with more collective firepower than that of common castles. Additionally, its location was steeper. Furthermore, there seemed to be a live spring in the Hunting Castle. On the back of the Hunting Castle, a snowwhite waterfall was descending from the rock of the cliff and falling into the valley below 100 m.

Zhang Tie kept galloping his magical horse. Noticing Zhang Tie's arrival, the suspension bridge outside the Hunting Castle had long been put down. Therefore, Zhang Tie directly rushed in. Imitating what Leeb always did, he didn't jump off his magical horse until he arrived at the stairs outside the lobby of the Hunting Castle. After throwing the rein to a person, Zhang Tie straightly walked upstairs and entered the lobby.

Those who welcomed Zhang Tie also followed him in the Hunting Castle. Besides Hany, who followed Zhang Tie in the lobby, all the others went to do their own jobs.

...

"Young master, are we going to set off soon?" Hany instantly asked the moment he entered the lobby.

"Tell everybody to prepare for it these couple of days. There's a big action after 3 days!" Zhang Tie issued the order routinely. Even if the real Leeb arrived here, he would also say this. According to Leeb's plan, when the super demon corps were close to Upton City after 3 days, he would have these people disguise themselves and plunder some business groups in the downtown. After that, he would pretend to escape away from Upton City by an airship in the Hunting Castle together with these people and the items plundered by them. After arriving at the south of Blackson Humans Corridor, he would continue to be the young master while hiding his real status.

"Ah? What's our target?" Hany asked anxiously.

"You don't need to know that for the time being!" Zhang Tie waved his hand impatiently as he added with a grim look while narrowing his eyes, "Tell them to stay here these couple of days and ensure that there's no tricky person near the Hunting Castle. Additionally, have them check the functions of the airship and maintain it in the optimal state. I want it to fly off as soon as possible when in need!"

"Yes, sir!"

"As I will also prepare for the action, I will cultivate in the backroom these couple of days. When Aral comes back, tell him to take a rest in the castle for a couple of days and don't disturb me!"

"Yes, sir!"

"Alright, you can leave now."

Hany then moved out of the lobby.

...

Until Hany left did Zhang Tie start to glance seriously at this lobby. Watching the expensive crystal generators in four corners,

the bear hides on the floor and the beasts' heads which had been made into specimens hanging on the walls, Zhang Tie swore inside, 'What a f*cking luxurious life...'

Various animals, which had been captured by these people from Kalay Mountain Range were bred in a place of the Hunting Castle. Now that these people disguised as wild hunters, they had to hunt something when they went out like real wild hunters do. They could use some living animals to tell others that they were not bad wild hunters; additionally, they could eat these animals when they wanted.

After the space in Castle of Black Iron was upgraded, Zhang Tie had been intending to move some more animals into Castle of Black Iron to make it more vigorous. Meanwhile, he could have some more incarnations in different emergencies. This time, he could make his dream come true.

'But this is not the right time to do it. I will do it before leaving.'

Zhang Tie wanted to make a good preparation for the coming battle in the Hunting Castle. No matter what strategies would Huaiyuan Palace adopt after 3 days, now that he could capture the shadow of that super demon corps in Upton City, Zhang Tie intended to kill a batch of iron-armored demons so as to take one more fruit of source of iron-armored demons.

'Besides LV 9 iron-armored demons, there are also numerous demon powerhouses in that super demon corps such as at least 5 knights, a lot of battle spirits and battle demons. It's very necessary for me to further improve my battle force while risking some dangers. Coincidentally, I've just killed so many assh*les these days. I must have new fruits of brilliance and judgment. It is a good opportunity to digest it.

...

After a few minutes, Zhang Tie entered Leeb's backroom in the Hunting Castle.

There were two tunnels underground in the backroom, one led to Leeb's bedroom, the other led to a secret emergency escaping tunnel, which was only known by Leeb in the Hunting Castle.

Zhang Tie entered the backroom from Leeb's bedroom. Besides millions of gold coins, Zhang Tie saw many practical items that he could use to cultivate, such as various medicaments, over 100 vials of all-purpose medicament and some quality armors and weapons that Leeb collected.

Without even identifying them, Zhang Tie straightly swept all the items from the backroom and moved them into Castle of Black Iron.

Closely after that, Zhang Tie contacted Leeb's father who was in the south of Blackson Humans Corridor using the remote-sensing crystal in the backroom. He used Leeb's tone to communicate with his father and "performed" how Leeb used to do.

After doing this, Zhang Tie entered Castle of Black Iron...

There were 3 ripe fruits on the small tree, one leakless fruit, one fruit of brilliance and a fruit of judgment, which contained a medium "cracking" rune...

Watching the 3 fruits, Zhang Tie grinned.

...

Two days had passed, during which period, besides cultivation, Zhang Tie also studied the map of the north of Upton City. He even silently left the Hunting Castle in his incarnation and checked the terrain carefully in the north of Upton City. If the super demon corps marched towards here, they would definitely come from the north, west-north and east-north. The farther it was away from Upton City, the more difficult it would be to precisely locate the traces of the super demon corps. Finally, Zhang Tie reached a conclusion, 'Huaiyuan Palace could only ambush within a fan region about 150-300 miles away from Upton City in the north. As

to the concrete location, it depended on the direction the super demon corps came from.'

Actually, Zhang Tie was a bit indecisive these two days. Because he failed to find any abnormal situation outside Upton City even though he had circled many times outside there in the incarnation of the thunder hawk. In this case, there were only two possibilities, his intelligence didn't arouse the attention of any influential figure; the humans' preparation outside Upton City was out of his imagination. Zhang Tie expected that it was the second one. If it was the first one, it would be a great trouble.

...

On the second evening, Zhang Tie came out of the backroom after making his preparations well.

The moment Zhang Tie walked out of the backroom had he issued his order, "Re-group all the members of the Hunting Castle in the lobby. I will invite all of you; meanwhile, I have something 'important' to proclaim..."

Chapter 699: The Arrival of the Super Demon Corps

On the evening of August 31st, all the 287 wild hunters gathered in the lobby of the Hunting Castle...

There were only burning torches that used beast's oil instead of fluorescent lamps in the lobby, under the reflection of which, all those in the lobby looked red.

After Zhang Tie proclaimed that the super demon corps was going to raid Upton City tomorrow, everyone in the lobby exclaimed.

What an amazing news!

Zhang then told them about their jobs for tomorrow according to the arrangement of the real Leeb. After the exclamation, all of the wild hunters started to pant as they shot out bloody eye light.

Some barrels of liquor was served. After casually moving his hands over those barrels, Zhang Tie took a barrel and made a glass of liquor for himself; closely after that, the barrel was passed to all the rest.

After a short while, everyone in the lobby lifted their glasses.

"After tomorrow, half of the land of Blackson Humans Corridor would belong to our Three-eye Association. All of you at present would be the rulers of this land in the future. You will have countless money and beauties. Let's cheer for the triumph tomorrow!"

Watching Zhang Tie finishing his liquor, all the others lifted their glasses and finished them up with a great passion.

After seeing all of them drinking off the liquor, Zhang Tie let out a sigh, 'How terrifying it is for me to combine the body-changing bloodline, secret methods of bloody soul temple and Castle of Black

Iron! With them, I can easily do many things that can never be imagined.'

"Young master, why do you sigh?' Hany asked Zhang Tie with a brilliant look as he was sitting right below Zhang Tie's side.

"Alas, why did you choose to be the lackeys of demons and Three-eye Association? Remember to be a good person in your afterlife, if there's a chance!" Zhang Tie said sincerely as he watched Hany.

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, everybody became stunned...

"Young master, you..." Hany's face immediately turned as black as charcoal. Before finishing his words, he had already fallen on the ground in front of Zhang Tie stiffly.

Almost at the same time, with consecutive noises, everybody in the lobby fell down like an ear of wheat, except for Zhang Tie. All of them looked as pitch dark as charcoal.

As a result, the noisy lobby instantly became quiet. Only Zhang Tie was still sitting in the original seat. Hearing the rattling sound of the burning torch that had been immersed in beasts' oil and seeing the flames swaying in the air, Zhang Tie felt an icy and terrifying qi spreading in the lobby.

Zhang Tie was also shocked, 'This kind of poison is sometimes more destructive than any other force.'

Zhang Tie sprayed a poison named Poison of Black Sand in the liquor just now. Zhang Tie got it when he raided Zhen Clan Mansion in Huaiyuan Palace. Such a simple and efficient way occurred to his mind when he thought about how to cope with those b*stards of Three-eye Association in the Hunting Castle these couple of days.

Thankfully, all the guys were used to drinking alcohol before they were dispatched out to do tasks by Leeb. Therefore, Zhang Tie believed that they would not doubt him if he poisoned them with liquor. Additionally, Zhang Tie found another powerful function

of Castle of Black Iron, namely, nobody would find him spraying the poison of black sand into the barrel in front of them. Because nobody else could add the rank poison into the barrel only by touching the barrel.

As of now, all the forces of Angus Clan in the north of Kalay Mountain Range had been easily swept over by Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie sat there and watched those corpses for a short while. After then, he picked himself up and took a round in the lobby. After throwing all the corpses in the Abyss of Chaos, Zhang Tie opened the gate of the lobby and walked out. Standing on the stairs outside the lobby, Zhang Tie looked up at the brilliant stars.

It was almost midnight. Being blown by the cold night wind, Zhang Tie finally let out a deep sigh as he recovered his composure from the complex feelings when he killed 287 people at the same time. This was Zhang Tie's first time to kill people with poison. Compared to punches and blades, it brought Zhang Tie a new feeling. Pitifully, there were too few people at present. If there were hundreds more of them, Zhang Tie might even have tried the effect of the eggs of the double-headed parent worm.

'All these b*stards of Three-eye Association deserved death. I just fought poison with poison.' Zhang Tie comforted himself.

No matter how many murders had happened on the land and how many pains had it carried; no matter how many species had thought that they could be the owner of the land, the stars in the sky had remained unchanged since the ancient times. Looking up at the brilliant stars, Zhang Tie felt a great, firm power from them.

The Hunting Castle became quiet at once as Zhang Tie could only hear the twitters of the insects in the mountain and the rustles of the tree leaves outside the Hunting Castle...

Zhang Tie left the lobby and strode towards the stable of animals. It was beside a small garden in the east of the Hunting Castle.

There were various animals, birds and beasts in iron cages, big or small. All of them could be seen in Kalay Mountain Range such as tigers, leopards, brown bears, mutated pangolins, huge wolves, lizards, some snakes with bizarre colors and some birds in different sizes. The most special one was an ant's nest in a huge metal can, while the ants inside were a bit larger than common ants. However, they were shining looming luster all over...

When Zhang Tie was thinking about moving all the animals into Castle of Black Iron, he was suddenly puzzled by a question. Patting his head, he asked himself, 'It's easy for those omnivorous or vegetarian animals to survive in Castle of Black Iron, what about carnivores like tigers and leopards? What do they eat? To the final analysis, it seems that Castle of Black Iron has not established a complete ecological system yet. After so many years of collection, the plants inside have been very plentiful; however, it still lacked animals. Besides numerous bees and earthworms, Zhang Tie could almost count all the animals using his 10 fingers, 'I'd better not lock these carnivores in the cages and have people feed them everyday inside Castle of Black Iron. Otherwise, Castle of Black Iron would become a zoo.'

After thinking for a short while, Zhang straightly moved all the vegetarian and omnivorous animals into Castle of Black Iron including that ants' nest. As to the other carnivores, he just set them free from the cages.

At this moment, Zhang Tie had been an eligible descendant of the Great Wilderness School. Those carnivores behaved in a docile way in front of Zhang Tie. After sensing some special qi from Zhang Tie, the huge wolf was even a bit scared of Zhang Tie.

In the dark, Zhang Tie led these animals out of the Hunting Castle and set them free in the wild. After that, Zhang Tie came back to the Hunting Castle and moved all the valuable items into Castle of Black Iron, including over 100 barrels of liquor in the cellar, over 10,000 secret books in the study, numerous grains and

seeds in the warehouse, crates of tools and some senior metal and wood processing platforms.

Leeb also had an extremely luxurious costume room here, where there were hundreds of wholly-new hunting costumes, warrior's costumes, leather boots, gloves and waistbands. All of them were of top quality. Zhang Tie then straightly moved all of them into Castle of Black Iron. 'Just take them as customized ones. From now on, I don't need to buy clothes anymore. Actually, I couldn't buy such high-end costumes from anywhere.'

'Ahem..ahem...I have a family now, I have 3 babies to feed. Just save some money.' Zhang Tie thought stingily as he had completely forgotten that he had gained over an enormous wealth with the unit of 100 million in Tokei City.

After sweeping over all the valuable items in the Hunting Castle, Zhang Tie set free all the living beings. After producing such a scene that was usually portrayed in detective novels, Zhang Tie incarnated into a black beetle and left out of here.

One hour later, Zhang Tie reappeared in the pitch-dark No. 16 manor in Wealth Avenue. At this moment, nobody in Upton City had found that everyone in this manor had disappeared. The steward might have disbanded all the members here almost 10 hours ago. After that, the steward himself escaped successfully. The steward would be proud of the courage and awareness that he plucked up today for the rest of his life as long as he's alive.

Being afraid of getting murdered by Leeb, the steward dared not take away any item from here when he left, except for his personal savings.

In this manor, Zhang Tie also moved those costumes that he saw in the costume room two days ago into Castle of Black Iron.

As men's costumes remained unchanged for hundreds of years, Zhang Tie knew that he didn't need to buy any costume for the rest of his life.

After clearing the last benefit of Angus Clan, Zhang Tie incarnated into a thunder hawk and flew towards the north...

After flying over 200 miles towards the north of Upton City, Zhang Tie landed on a twig of a huge tree near the peak as he started to look at the front, left and right with his sharp eyes.

There was a possibility of 33% for the super demon corps to pass by the road beneath this peak. If not, they would rush towards Upton City from the other two directions less than 50 miles away from this road. Therefore, it was easy for him to detect the trace of the super demon corps.

Zhang Tie then waited for the arrival of the super demon corps silently...

After 4-5 hours, the super demon corps finally arrived at the dawn of September 1st.

Precisely, Zhang Tie didn't see the super demon corps; instead, he saw a familiar bright bolt-shaped light pillar targeting the heaven. It reminded Zhang Tie of the same ground-breaking bolt that Elder Muray shot towards the sky in front of him...

Closely after that bolt-shaped light pillar, Zhang Tie saw almost 10 powerful battle-qi totems rising up, which almost scared him to death...

'F*ck, 10 knights! 10 human knights! What a scene...'

Zhang Tie instantly showed his original look. Being blessed by his Kuafu Bloodline and senior rapid moving skill, Zhang Tie strode off the peak only by a couple of steps and rushed towards the far straightly.

When he came out of Castle of Black Iron, he was still "Leeb"; however, after striding off the peak by 3 steps as fast as a lightning bolt, he had already recovered his original look. At this critical moment, Zhang Tie dared never join the battle in the look of a stranger. As there were so many human knights over there, if any

of them recognized that he was a member of Three-eye Association or demons, they might launch a strike towards him when they passed by him; it would a tragedy if that really happened. By comparison, in the orthodox look of Hua people, he would be safer...

Chapter 700: A Head-on Strike

Nobody had imagined that the fiercest collision between humans forces and the super demon corps would break out on the wilderness over 200 miles away from Upton in the north after the demonized puppets corps broke Humans' defense line in Selnes Theater of Operations.

At this moment, Zhang Tie was rushing towards the battlefield as fast as a lightning bolt. With the effect of Kuafu Bloodline, Zhang Tie felt that the entire land became a huge spring. Each time he landed on the ground would he spring up and fly over 100 m ahead. He kept springing up and rushing forward in this way like a meteor chasing after the moon.

With the effect of the senior rapid moving skill, Zhang Tie's Kuafu Bloodline raised its speed by 3 times, enabling Zhang Tie to almost match a knight in speed.

In only a couple of minutes, Zhang Tie was just 30 miles away from the battlefield.

Right then, a large number of fury-level airships dived towards the place where the battle-qi totems rose from behind the clouds like sharks that were chasing after their prey.

Within Zhang Tie's vision, those airships started to drop a large number of black spots towards the battlefield like spraying beans.

Zhang Tie knew that most of the black spots should be combustible gel bombs, while the others might be...

Right then, some ground-breaking sounds drifted from afar, which were caused by more than one alchemist's bombs. Closely after that, Zhang Tie saw the fiery flames over dozens of miles away which almost tainted the whole sky.

'How fierce!' Zhang Tie had never imagined that Huaiyuan Palace could launch such a head-on blow towards the super demon corps

at the beginning.

At this moment, all the people inside Upton City had been awakened by the loud sounds. All the garrisons in the airship bases outside Upton City were looking up at the sky with surprising looks as the whole sky had been covered with huge battle airships.

It seemed that all the huge battle airships were hiding in the mountain near Kalay Mountain Range. At this moment, they all rose up and rushed towards the north at the fastest speed while being covered with a killing qi.

Over 3,000 airships almost covered the whole sky, making onlookers' hearts pound.

"My God, what's happening?" all the soldiers in an airship base outside Upton City were looking up at the sky with surprising looks. Even those refugees in the constant refugee camps outside Upton City had walked out of their tents and watched the terrifying airship troop rushing towards the north with dumbfounded looks.

A major general of an airship base hurriedly rushed out from his dorm, improperly dressed, into the highest watchtower of the base. He then grabbed the telescope from the watchtower and targeted those airships.

"Ah? They are from Jinyun Country and Qilan Country in the south. What's happening?"

Nobody could answer him. When a whim occurred to his mind, the military commissioner instantly turned the telescope towards the north...

Through the telescope, that military commissioner only saw obscure shadows at the beginning. After focusing on the targets, he could almost see those shadows clearly in the north dawn...

The major general's face instantly turned pale as he saw over 10 battle-qi totems rising over 200 miles away from Upton City in the

north. He knew what did it mean...

"Ring the battle alert. The super demon corps is attacking us..." The major general roared, which could almost be heard across the airship base. The entire Upton City then became chaotic...

According to the plan of Three-eye Association and demons, at this moment, Leeb had already chopped off one of the double-headed parent worm's head and turned millions of refugees outside Upton City into demonized puppets, causing the entire Upton City into a hell. However, because of Zhang Tie's deed, although many people were growing flurried, none of them turned into a demonized puppet.

While running, a whim occurred to Zhang Tie's mind. He then rapidly took out the remote-sensing crystal that he used to communicate with his elder brother. Benefited from the skill "mental arithmetic by abacus", he sent a key message to his elder brother.

——Elder brother, are you there?

——Yes, I am!

Given the rapid response, it seemed that his elder brother and 6th granduncle had been waiting for his message.

——Angus Clan of Free Commercial Federation belong to Three-eye Association, never let them go!

Zhang Tie knew that this message would be sent back to Huaiyuan Palace at the fastest speed. After confirming that his earlier message was accurate, this message almost sent Angus Clan to the gallows. It was forgivable that humans could not punish those humans clans of Three-eye Association; however, if they could not even catch the exposed humans clans of Three-eye Association in the territory of humans, they didn't need to fight demons anymore.

After sending out this message, Zhang Tie put away his remote-

sensing crystal as he accelerated towards the battlefield.

...

The battle had started in the fiercest state from the sky to the ground. The human elites that ambushed here didn't spare any time for demons to respond. The fiercest collision occurred at the beginning.

In the sky, Elder Muray from Huaiyuan Palace was coordinating with the airship troop as he was shooting out bolts towards wing demons. Each of his bolts was effective within 2,000 m.

After the wing demons' threat was cleared, the airship troop that flashed out of the clouds immediately dropped batches of combustible gel bombs towards the super demon corps like how hens laid eggs, causing hot fiery nets rising to the sky on the battlefield.

No matter how rapid the super demon corps responded to the strike, they were a troop of 100,000 demon fighters. They occupied almost 1-2 sq km on the ground. Given such a great density, even if they were dead rats, they could also be hit by the combustible gel bombs, not to mention that each combustible gel bomb would cause a fire sea within 100 sq m. Even stones could be burned, not to mention living beings. What was more was that some of the ammo were terrifying alchemist's bombs.

The first round of strike of the airship troop was the most effective as the formation of the super demon corps had not been fully dispersed. As a result, the first round of strike burned over 5,000 super demons into ruins or exploded them into pieces; meanwhile, almost the same number of super demons were injured. This was the most brilliant achievement that the human airship troop had made across Blackson Humans Corridor since the beginning of the holy war.

The 4 human knights encountered 4 demon knights, 3 human knights circled the Demon General, 2 human knights were making

a massacre in the super demon corps horizontally and vertically. The ground-breaking clashes and booms could be heard dozens of miles away.

The battle range of knights was quite wide. Between the sky and the ground, they could move miles in a split second and clash with each other dozens even hundreds of times. Besides the 3 human knights who circled around the Demon General, the 4 human knights who fought the 4 demon knights had been dozens of miles away from the main battlefield and dispersed in four directions only after a couple of minutes.

Together with the dispersing knights were the super demon corps. After suffering a severe loss from the first round of attack of human airship troop, this super demon corps had dispersed at a terrifying speed while displaying a terrifying battle force. As a result, the human airship troop made a poor achievement in the second round of attack.

After realizing that they had fallen into the delicate trap of humans, the super demon corps had already started to evacuate rapidly towards northeast before greater batches of human airships arrived from afar. At this moment, it was blowing northeast wind in the sky. Being resisted by the wind, the airship troop slowed down. As a result, they could only watch the super demon corps escape farther and farther away...

Even moving against the wind, the airships could also fly over 140 miles per hour. However, the airships could still not catch up with that super demon corps. What a terrifying super demon corps!

After Elder Muray issued an order to the airship troop, he had been chasing after the rest wing demons. It was a rare chance to give a severe blow to the airforce of the demons.

During the evacuation, 8 battle-spirit demons blocked 2 human knights. As a result, the 2 human knights' destruction to the super

demon corps sharply reduced...

...

"Lin Changjiang..." The Demon General in a pitch-dark fully-body armor roared as he glared at that man with its eyes which were as fierce as that of ghosts after the 4 meteors separated from a collision.

On the opposite of the Demon General, that man was at his 50s. With a faint purple face, sword-sized eyebrows and snowwhite whiskers, he looked pretty dignified. Plus, a pair of heroic, shiny crane-like eyes, he could leave a deep impression on people at the first sight of him...

Two more human knights were standing in the air behind the Demon General, one was the Lan elder that Zhang Tie had met in the Crystal Battle Fortress, while the other was from Norman Empire who broke out and left Mocco City when it was collapsed by demonized puppets...

Table of Contents

[Castle of Black Iron](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 601: Knights' World](#)

[Chapter 602: The Man-Powered Plane](#)

[Chapter 603: Five-Element Ground-look Sutra](#)

[Chapter 604: Falling into the Lion's Den](#)

[Chapter 605: The Eagle Broke Its Wing](#)

[Chapter 606: A Terrifying Trap](#)

[Chapter 607: Allure](#)

[Chapter 608: Order of Three-eye Association](#)

[Chapter 609: The Trick of Senel Clan](#)

[Chapter 610: Being Framed](#)

[Chapter 611: Tenacious Bones](#)

[Chapter 612: Soul-based Animal Controlling Skill](#)

[Chapter 613: Escape](#)

[Chapter 614: My Immortal Territory](#)

[Chapter 615: Introspection](#)

[Chapter 616: Cultivation under the Small Tree](#)

[Chapter 617: The Power of a Strong Fighter](#)

[Chapter 618: Being Dauntless and Progressive](#)

[Chapter 619: A Powerful Ability](#)

[Chapter 620: Being a Thunder Hawk](#)

[Chapter 621: A Great Decline](#)

[Chapter 622: A Thorough Cleanup](#)

[Chapter 623: Zhang Tie's Creed](#)

[Chapter 624: A Great Achievement](#)

[Chapter 625: Like a Ghost Region](#)

[Chapter 626: What a Massacre!](#)

[Chapter 627: An Encounter](#)

[Chapter 628: The Critical Situation](#)

[Chapter 629: The Strength of Steel](#)

[Chapter 630: Yingzhou State of Taixia Country](#)

[Chapter 631: Airboat of Noble Clans](#)

[Chapter 632: The Birth of Immortal Bloodline \(I\)](#)

[Chapter 633: The Birth of Immortal Bloodline \(II\)](#)
[Chapter 634: Arousing A Shock](#)
[Chapter 635: Feeling Sad](#)
[Chapter 636: A Bloody Battle on the City Wall](#)
[Chapter 637: A Conspiracy](#)
[Chapter 638: The Plan](#)
[Chapter 639: A Needle in the Ocean](#)
[Chapter 640: An Incarnation of Demonized Puppet](#)
[Chapter 641: An Exotic Beetle](#)
[Chapter 642: Message and Farewell](#)
[Chapter 643: The Final Moment](#)
[Chapter 644: The Bravest Man](#)
[Chapter 645: A Fierce Battle](#)
[Chapter 646: Angling](#)
[Chapter 647: Re-encounter](#)
[Chapter 648: A Narrow Escape](#)
[Chapter 649: Watching the Battle as a Beetle](#)
[Chapter 650: A Resolute Attack](#)
[Chapter 651: Reap the Booties](#)
[Chapter 652: Fruit of Bloodline](#)
[Chapter 653: A Surging Comprehensive Force](#)
[Chapter 654: Knight's Consciousness](#)
[Chapter 655: Treasury](#)
[Chapter 656: Kuafu Bloodline](#)
[Chapter 657: A Dead City](#)
[Chapter 658: A Reality Show](#)
[Chapter 659: Chopping a Powerful Enemy](#)
[Chapter 660: Escaped by a Trick](#)
[Chapter 661: The Dark Parliament](#)
[Chapter 662: The News](#)
[Chapter 663: Separation](#)
[Chapter 664: Moving Southwards](#)
[Chapter 665: A Super Lurker](#)
[Chapter 666: A Fish in Troubled Waters](#)
[Chapter 667: Waiting for the Opportunity](#)
[Chapter 668: Towards South](#)
[Chapter 669: Stancy City](#)
[Chapter 670: An Encounter](#)
[Chapter 671: The Unrivalled Power of Elder Muray](#)

[Chapter 672: A 1,000-Mile Misty Ocean](#)
[Chapter 673: A Hidden Cultivation in the Misty Ocean](#)
[Chapter 674: Benefits](#)
[Chapter 675: A Remarkable Progress](#)
[Chapter 676: My Secret Knowledge Pavilion](#)
[Chapter 677: Painstaking Exercise](#)
[Chapter 678: Great Battle Master](#)
[Chapter 679: The First Victory](#)
[Chapter 680: New Look \(I\)](#)
[Chapter 681: New Look \(II\)](#)
[Chapter 682: The Phenomena in a Chaotic World](#)
[Chapter 683: Situation in Blackson Humans Corridor \(I\)](#)
[Chapter 684: Situation in Blackson Humans Corridor \(II\)](#)
[Chapter 685: A Partner Exercise in the Rain](#)
[Chapter 686: Pub](#)
[Chapter 687: New Trouble](#)
[Chapter 688: Mad Dog](#)
[Chapter 689: Fifteen Seconds](#)
[Chapter 690: Teeth for Teeth](#)
[Chapter 691: A Conspiracy](#)
[Chapter 692: A Dangerous Situation](#)
[Chapter 693: A Quick Battle](#)
[Chapter 694: The Soul-Reading Incarnation](#)
[Chapter 695: Contacting Family Members](#)
[Chapter 696: Being Almighty](#)
[Chapter 697: Pre-war Preparation \(I\)](#)
[Chapter 698: Pre-war Preparation \(II\)](#)
[Chapter 699: The Arrival of the Super Demon Corps](#)
[Chapter 700: A Head-on Strike](#)